

Е. В. Зверховская, Е. Ф. Косиченко

# ГРАММАТИКА АНГЛИЙСКОГО ЯЗЫКА

Теория • Практика

84 урока

Четкая и удобная форма представления материала

Обилие и разнообразие практических упражнений и тестов

Ключи к упражнениям

Возможность выборочного изучения тем

Применимость для аудиторных и индивидуальных занятий



Е. В. Зверховская, Е. Ф. Косиченко

# ГРАММАТИКА АНГЛИЙСКОГО ЯЗЫКА

---

Теория • Практика

2 издание

Рекомендовано  
Учебно-методическим объединением по образованию в области лингвистики  
Министерства образования и науки Российской Федерации  
в качестве учебного пособия для студентов,  
обучающихся по профилю «Теория и методика преподавания  
иностранных языков и культур»  
направления подготовки бакалавров  
035700.62 «Лингвистика»

БХВ-Петербург  
2014

УДК 373  
ББК 81.2 Англ  
З-43

З-43 Зверховская Е. В., Косиченко Е. Ф.

Грамматика английского языка: Теория. Практика. Учеб. пособие, 2-е изд., испр. — СПб.: БХВ-Петербург, 2014. — 304 с.

ISBN 978-5-9775-3303-4

Книга представляет собой справочник и одновременно учебное пособие, содержащее 84 тематических урока. Грамматические правила сопровождаются примерами и упражнениями на их отработку, а также комментариями. В конце каждой темы предлагается урок на повторение и закрепление изученного грамматического материала. Материал представлен наглядно — правила и упражнения расположены на страницах симметрично, отдельные темы изложены схематически или сведены в таблицу. Материал может изучаться последовательно или выборочно, и благодаря универсальности и наличию ключей к упражнениям может использоваться как для групповых, так и для индивидуальных занятий.

*Для студентов вузов, лицеев и колледжей, слушателей курсов,  
а также лиц, самостоятельно изучающих английский язык*

УДК 373  
ББК 81.2 Англ

Группа подготовки издания:

Главный редактор	Екатерина Кондукова
Зам. гл. редактора	Людмила Еремеевская
Зав. редакцией	Екатерина Капалыгина
Компьютерная верстка	Людмилы Гауль
Корректор	Елена Толстякова
Дизайн обложки	Марины Дамбиевой

РЕЦЕНЗЕНТ:

Л. Н. Репникова, канд. пед. наук, доцент кафедры II иностранного языка педагогических факультетов МГЛУ

Подписано в печать 31.03.14.  
Формат 60x90<sup>1</sup>/<sub>8</sub>. Печать офсетная. Усл. печ. л. 38.  
Тираж 1500 экз. Заказ №  
«БХВ-Петербург», 191036, Санкт-Петербург, Гончарная ул., 20  
Первая Академическая типография «Наука»  
199034, Санкт-Петербург, 9 линия, 12/28

ISBN 978-5-9775-3303-4

© Зверховская Е. В., Косиченко Е. Ф., 2014  
© ООО «БХВ-Петербург», 2014

# СОДЕРЖАНИЕ

## АРТИКЛИ

Unit 1. Употребление артиклей с исчисляемыми существительными (1) .....	8
Unit 2. Употребление артиклей с исчисляемыми существительными (2) .....	10
Unit 3. Употребление артиклей с неисчисляемыми существительными .....	12
Unit 4. Обобщающая функция определенного артикля .....	14
Unit 5. Употребление артиклей с именами собственными и географическими названиями .....	16
Unit 6. Употребление артиклей с названиями городских объектов, учреждений, газет, месяцев, дней недели, языков .....	18
Unit 7. Употребление артиклей в конструкции с предлогом <b>of</b> .....	20
Unit 8. Употребление артиклей с существительными, обозначающими часть суток, время года, прием пищи, названия веществ .....	22
Unit 9. Особенности употребления артиклей с существительными <b>sea, school, college, hospital, town</b> и др. ....	24
Unit 10. Повторение ( <i>Units 1–9</i> ) .....	26

## СУЩЕСТВИТЕЛЬНЫЕ

Unit 11. Множественное число исчисляемых существительных .....	30
Unit 12. Неисчисляемые существительные .....	32
Unit 13. Употребление слов <b>much, many, a lot of, (a) few, (a) little</b> с исчисляемыми и неисчисляемыми существительными .....	34
Unit 14. Употребление притяжательного падежа существительных .....	36
Unit 15. Повторение ( <i>Units 11–14</i> ) .....	38

## МЕСТОИМЕНЕНИЯ

Unit 16. Личные и притяжательные местоимения .....	42
Unit 17. Возвратные местоимения .....	44
Unit 18. Неопределенные местоимения <b>some, any, no</b> .....	46
Unit 19. Производные от <b>some, any, no, every</b> .....	48
Unit 20. Неопределенное местоимение <b>other</b> .....	50
Unit 21. Неопределенные местоимения <b>either, neither, both</b> и коррелятивные союзы <b>either ... or, neither ... nor, both ... and</b> .....	52
Unit 22. Повторение ( <i>Units 16–21</i> ) .....	54

## ПРИЛАГАТЕЛЬНЫЕ И НАРЕЧИЯ

Unit 23. Употребление прилагательных и наречий .....	58
Unit 24. Степени сравнения прилагательных и сравнительные конструкции .....	60
Unit 25. Двойные степени сравнения .....	64
Unit 26. Степени сравнения наречий .....	66
Unit 27. Повторение ( <i>Units 23–26</i> ) .....	68
Unit 28. Порядок слов в повествовательном предложении .....	70
Unit 29. <b>Have / have got</b> .....	74

## ВИДЫ ВОПРОСИТЕЛЬНЫХ ПРЕДЛОЖЕНИЙ

Unit 30. Вопросы, начинающиеся со вспомогательного глагола (общий вопрос, общий вопрос с отрицанием, альтернативный вопрос) .....	78
Unit 31. Разделительный вопрос .....	82
Unit 32. Специальный вопрос (1) .....	84
Unit 33. Специальный вопрос (2) .....	88
Unit 34. Косвенный вопрос .....	90
Unit 35. Вопрос «Как ты думаешь ...?» .....	92
Unit 36. Повторение ( <i>Units 30–35</i> ) .....	94
Unit 37. Конструкция <b>There is / There are</b> .....	96
Unit 38. Восклицательные предложения со словами <b>so / such; what / how</b> .....	98

## ВИДО-ВРЕМЕННЫЕ ФОРМЫ ГЛАГОЛА

Unit 39. <b>Present Indefinite (Simple)</b> .....	102
Unit 40. <b>Present Continuous (Progressive)</b> .....	104
Unit 41. <b>Present Indefinite</b> или <b>Present Continuous?</b> .....	106
Unit 42. <b>Future Indefinite (Simple)</b> .....	108

Unit 43. Формы выражения будущего действия .....	110
Unit 44. Past Indefinite (Simple) .....	112
Unit 45. Present Perfect (1) .....	114
Unit 46. Present Perfect (2) .....	118
Unit 47. Present Perfect Continuous (Progressive) .....	122
Unit 48. Present Perfect или Present Perfect Continuous? .....	124
Unit 49. Present Perfect (Present Perfect Continuous) или Past Indefinite? .....	126
Unit 50. Past Continuous (Progressive) .....	130
Unit 51. Past Indefinite или Past Continuous? .....	132
Unit 52. Past Perfect .....	134
Unit 53. Past Perfect, Past Indefinite или Past Continuous? .....	136
Unit 54. Past Perfect Continuous (Progressive) .....	140
Unit 55. Повторение (Units 39–54) .....	142

## ПЕРЕВОД ИЗ ПРЯМОЙ РЕЧИ В КОСВЕННУЮ И СОГЛАСОВАНИЕ ВРЕМЕН

Unit 56. Слова автора в настоящем времени .....	148
Unit 57. Слова автора в прошедшем времени .....	150
Unit 58. Правила согласования времен .....	154
Unit 59. Повторение (Units 56–58) .....	158

## ПАССИВНЫЙ ЗАЛОГ

Unit 60. Видо-временные формы глагола в пассивном залоге .....	162
Unit 61. Пассивные конструкции .....	164
Unit 62. Повторение (Units 60–61) .....	166

## СОСЛАГАТЕЛЬНОЕ НАКЛОНЕНИЕ

Unit 63. Придаточные нереального условия с союзом <i>if</i> .....	170
Unit 64. Придаточные дополнительные после <i>I wish</i> .....	174
Unit 65. Повторение (Units 63–64) .....	176

## МОДАЛЬНЫЕ ГЛАГОЛЫ

Unit 66. Can, could, be able to .....	180
Unit 67. Can('t) be doing, can('t) have done .....	182
Unit 68. Must, have to, be to .....	184
Unit 69. Must be doing, must have done .....	186
Unit 70. May, might .....	188
Unit 71. May (might) be doing, may (might) have done .....	190
Unit 72. Need, needn't, needn't have done .....	192
Unit 73. Should do, should have done .....	194
Unit 74. Повторение (Units 66–73) .....	196

## НЕЛИЧНЫЕ ФОРМЫ ГЛАГОЛА

Unit 75. Герундий (1) .....	200
Unit 76. Герундий (2) .....	202
Unit 77. Употребление инфинитива .....	206
Unit 78. Инфинитивные обороты .....	208
Unit 79. Инфинитив или герундий? .....	210
Unit 80. Причастие .....	212
Unit 81. Употребление причастия и инфинитива в конструкции <b>Complex Object</b> .....	214
Unit 82. Повторение (Units 75–81) .....	216

Unit 83. Слова «еще» и «уже» ( <i>still, yet, already</i> ) .....	218
Unit 84. Слово «тоже» ( <i>too, also, either</i> ) и краткие подтверждения типа <b>“So do I”, “Neither is he”</b> .....	220

КЛЮЧИ К УПРАЖНЕНИЯМ .....	224
---------------------------	-----

ПРИЛОЖЕНИЕ .....	300
------------------	-----

★ Образец

➤➤ Сравните

⚠ Внимание

Ⓜ Вспомогательный глагол

😊 Правильно

😞 Неправильно

Данное пособие составлено авторами, долгое время работавшими со студентами, изучающими английский язык как второй иностранный. Накопленный опыт помог нам понять основные трудности, возникающие у студентов на начальном и продвинутом этапах обучения.

При большом количестве пособий, существующих в настоящее время, авторам было довольно трудно выбрать оригинальную, но вместе с тем эффективную форму подачи материала. Поскольку нам всегда нравилось как оформление, так и подача материала в учебном пособии по грамматике Raymond Murphy *“English Grammar in Use”*, мы приняли попытку создать книгу, на наш взгляд, столь же удобную в пользовании, но с учетом трудностей русскоязычного учащегося.

При написании пособия авторы ставили перед собой задачу доступно и кратко изложить грамматику английского языка с целью систематизировать знания учащихся.

Теоретический материал изложен на русском языке, что, с нашей точки зрения, делает пособие удобным для начинающих, поскольку снимает языковые трудности при ознакомлении с темой и освоении основных правил образования и употребления грамматических явлений. Английское правописание приводится по британской версии языка.

Некоторые примеры, данные в теоретической части, сопровождаются переводом, с целью акцентирования наиболее сложных грамматических явлений для русскоязычных студентов.

В каждый урок (Unit) включены предложения на перевод с русского языка на английский. Этот тип работы является особенно важным как для закрепления грамматических явлений, так и для активизации лексики.

Лексическое наполнение упражнений ориентировано на учащегося, освоившего наиболее употребительную лексику английского языка.

Предлагаемое пособие не может быть использовано как базовое, но, надеемся, окажется полезным и интересным как дополнение к любому учебнику или курсу. Кроме того, совершенно очевидно, что, несмотря на множество различных пособий, и преподаватели, и учащиеся зачастую испытывают недостаток в упражнениях как тестового плана, так и переводных, а данное пособие может быть использовано и в аудитории, и дома при индивидуальной работе.

Пособие состоит из 84 уроков, объединенных тематически в отдельные разделы. Последний урок каждого раздела посвящен повторению, что помогает проконтролировать усвоенный материал.

Материал, выбранный авторами для отработки и закрепления, частично расположен по принципу нарастания трудностей. Такие крупные разделы, как времена, формы страдательного залога, артикли, с одной стороны, зависят друг от друга, но на продвинутом этапе обучения более сложные грамматические явления могут изучаться и независимо от более простых.

Материал других уроков не зависит от предыдущих, поэтому книга может использоваться и как справочник.

Предлагаемое пособие представляет собой как справочник по грамматике, так и сборник упражнений.

Надеемся, что данное пособие будет полезным учащимся школ, студентам колледжей, лицеев, ВУЗов, слушателям курсов, а также лицам, самостоятельно изучающим английский язык на разных этапах его освоения.

# ARTICLES

АРТИКЛИ



**1.** Артикль **a(an)** употребляется только с исчисляемыми существительными в единственном числе —

- если предмет или понятие упоминается впервые:

I want to give him **a book** as a present.

- если перед существительным в единственном числе стоит описательное определение:

I'm reading **an interesting book**.

- в следующих случаях:

<i>Единственное число — a / an</i>	<i>Множественное число — no article</i>
<u>I have</u> an apple.	<u>I have</u> apples.
<u>I see</u> a boy.	<u>I see</u> boys.
<u>I am</u> a student.	<u>We are</u> students.
<u>It's</u> a pen.	<u>They / these are</u> pens.
<u>This is</u> a cat and that is a dog.	<u>These are</u> cats and those are dogs.
<u>There is</u> a cup on the table.	<u>There are</u> cups on the table.



Артикль также **не** употребляется, если перед существительным стоит притяжательное или указательное местоимение, другое существительное в притяжательном падеже, количественное числительное, отрицание *no* или местоимение *both*.

Give me **your pen**, please.

I want to see **this book**. It's **Kate's bag**.

**Both students** were late.

There is **no water** in the bottle.

**2.** Определенный артикль **the** употребляется со всеми существительными, как в единственном, так и во множественном числе —

- при повторном упоминании предмета или понятия:

I have a dog. **The dog** is big.

He asked me several questions. **The questions** were difficult.

- при наличии ограничивающего определения:

I've found **the pen** *I lost yesterday*. (Ту самую ручку, которую потерял.)

I can't answer **the questions** *he asked me*. (Те вопросы, которые он задает.)

- если понятно, что речь идет о конкретном предмете или понятии:

**The flowers** are so bright and beautiful! (Например, про цветы, которые находятся в поле зрения.)

**The children** are so noisy. (Дети, которые играют.)

Вставьте **a / an** или **the**.

1.1

1. I'm looking for ..... job. I didn't like ..... job I had.
2. Kate is wearing ..... new dress today. .... dress is nice.
3. He has ..... nice house. There is ..... beautiful garden in front of ..... house.
4. This is ..... interesting book. .... book is ..... love story.
5. .... text he is translating is rather difficult.
6. Is ..... bag new? I like ..... bag.
7. He is ..... engineer. He says ..... profession is interesting.
8. There is ..... hotel not far from our house. .... hotel is very comfortable.
9. .... car is very expensive.
10. I'm doing ..... exercise. .... exercise isn't difficult.
11. They are building ..... international airport here.
12. Without any warning ..... computer went down.
13. .... child is reading ..... magazine. .... magazine has ..... bright cover.
14. Bill is ..... very good specialist. I'm sure he can answer ..... question.
15. They say ..... library that is being built here will be very large.

## Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.

1.2

**1** -----

1. These are ..... very nice shoes.
2. .... questions are very difficult.
3. .... stories I must read are long.
4. I need ..... comfortable chairs.
5. We are looking for ..... children. Have you seen them?
6. Why do you like ..... small flats?
7. Put ..... cups on the table.
8. Let's give them ..... cups and ..... saucers for their wedding.
9. They sell ..... bicycles here.
10. They are ..... very strange people.

**2** -----

1. Do you know where ..... my watch is?
2. .... Kate's husband is ..... doctor. They are all ..... doctors in ..... their family.
3. These are ..... very good examples. Study ..... examples.
4. .... papers you need are on the table.
5. He has ..... long name and I can never remember it.
6. There is ..... mistake in ..... sentence. Correct ..... mistake.
7. Can you tell me where ..... station is.
8. Who is ..... driver of this car? You can't park ..... cars here.
9. .... keys to ..... exercises you are doing now are on the next page.
10. Do you remember ..... name of ..... street where we bought this washing machine?
11. He says he needs ..... new glasses. But ..... glasses they sell here are very expensive.
12. Remember to take ..... jacket to the cleaner's.
13. They say ..... party was a success.
14. Let's take ..... photograph of Nick and July. They are ..... nice couple.
15. I'm going to ..... airport. .... plane leaves in two hours.
16. I liked ..... presents I received on my birthday.

1. Существительные, обозначающие определенные или единственные в своем роде предметы, а также предметы, чья уникальность обусловлена контекстом, как правило, употребляются с определенным артиклем.

the bedroom	the moon	the beginning	the top of	the station	the world
the door	the sky	the end	the bottom of	the bank	the north
the ceiling	the sea	the centre	the truth	the post office	the south
the floor	the ground	the middle	the army	the airport	the east
the garden	the country	the corner	the theatre	the west	

Go to **the bathroom**. I can see **the moon**. It's at **the beginning** of the page.

They are going to **the north** next autumn. He likes to go to **the theatre**.



Если перечисленные существительные и другие существительные этой группы лишь называют предмет или понятие, то артикли употребляются по общим правилам.



There is a garden in front of the house.

There is a door at the end of the hall.

There is a theatre in this town.

She likes having tea in the garden.

Please, open the door.

Let's go to the theatre.

2. Если перед существительными стоят уточняющие определения типа *right, left, upper, lower, central, necessary, coming, present, previous, following, only, very, main, usual, same* и другие, то, как правило, употребляется определенный артикль.

It's **the right way** to do this work.

**The main thing** is to be calm.

The book is on **the upper shelf**.

This is **the only way** to do it.

**BUT!** He is **an only child** in the family.

3. Обычно прилагательные **next** и **last** употребляются с определенным артиклем.

We can discuss it at **the next meeting**.

That was **the last page**.

**BUT!** Если **next** и **last** сочетаются с существительными, обозначающими время, то артикли не употребляются.

We met **last week**.

We'll go there **next year**.

Bring your brother **next time**.

## Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.

2.1

- 1** -----
1. He is ..... only person I know here. I saw him ..... last year.
  2. What did you discuss at ..... last meeting?
  3. She is such ..... nice woman!
  4. All ..... students must learn ..... following rules and observe them.
  5. I looked through ..... books on ..... upper shelf but didn't find ..... necessary one.
  6. Go straight ahead and then turn to ..... left.
  7. I didn't get ..... main idea of ..... story.
  8. It's ..... same question you asked me ..... last time.
  9. We'll speak about it ..... next time.
  10. They are such ..... clever students.
- 2** -----
1. I didn't understand ..... last word.
  2. You are ..... very man I'd like to speak to.
  3. What is there on ..... floor?
  4. Look out of ..... window!
  5. I see ..... post office. Let's go and buy some stamps.
  6. I'm going to ..... post office. I must buy ..... stamps.
  7. It's ..... interesting beginning for the article.
  8. .... end of ..... story is interesting.
  9. He will join ..... army this year.
  10. .... sun rises in ..... east and sets in ..... west.
- 3** -----
1. What do you call it in English? — ..... ceiling.
  2. There is ..... fly on ..... ceiling.
  3. Look at ..... sky. .... moon is full today.
  4. .... kitchen in my flat is too small. I'm looking for ..... flat with ..... larger kitchen.
  5. It's ..... lie and I want to know ..... truth.
  6. The Browns usually go to ..... south in summer.
  7. He grows ..... different flowers in ..... garden.
  8. He likes going to ..... country for the weekend.
  9. I'd like to go to ..... east and to ..... west. I'd like to see ..... world.
  10. .... children are waiting for you on ..... ground floor.
- 4** -----
1. — How can I get to ..... station? — You must turn to ..... right.
  2. He is such ..... honest child. He always tells ..... truth.
  3. I remember they went to ..... south ..... last year.
  4. .... main thing for you now is to do this part of work to ..... end.
  5. He joined ..... army ..... last year.
  6. He will show me ..... centre of ..... city ..... next week.
  7. He looked out of ..... window and saw ..... same man there again.
  8. There is ..... comfortable armchair in ..... corner of ..... room.
  9. Let's put ..... table in ..... middle of ..... kitchen.
  10. My desk is at ..... wall to ..... left of ..... window.
  11. Look for your papers on ..... lower shelf and ..... next time don't forget where you put ..... your things.

1. Следующие неисчисляемые существительные не имеют множественного числа и не употребляются с неопределенным артиклем.

anger	happiness	time	news	information
beauty	love	work	luck	nonsense
life	respect	weather	fun	permission
freedom	strength	money	nature	experience
space	health	progress	advice	knowledge
furniture	hair			

I wish you **happiness**. This is interesting **work**. I like rainy **weather**.

Указанные существительные могут употребляться с определенным артиклем, если есть ограничивающее определение или ограничение ситуацией.

**The weather** is fine *today*. **The work** *I'm doing* is very interesting. I don't have **the time** *for it*.



Некоторые из указанных существительных могут изменять значение, и тогда они становятся исчисляемыми.

It's **a wonderful work** of art. (произведение)

He told us about **an awful experience** in his life. (случай из жизни)



Слово *life* употребляется с **a**, если ему предшествует описательное определение.

I know he had **a difficult life**.

2. Существительные, обозначающие названия веществ, также НЕ употребляются с неопределенным артиклем.

water	bread	sand	stone	silk
meat	fish	fire	wood	wool
tea	soup	paper	glass	cotton

Give me some **water**, please. You must eat more **fish**.



Наличие описательного определения не влияет на употребление артиклей.

The dress is made of very good **silk**. I like hot **coffee**.

Определенный артикль употребляется, если речь идет об ограниченном количестве вещества.

**The water** *in the river* is cold. **The meat** *I've bought* is fresh.



Иногда эти существительные также изменяют свое значение и становятся исчисляемыми.

I want **a salad** and **a coffee**, please. (порция салата и чашка кофе)

Let's make **a fire**. (костер)

He threw **a stone** into the water. (камень)

3. Существительные, названия наук, виды искусства, предметы, изучаемые в учебных заведениях, НЕ употребляются с неопределенным артиклем.

He studies **law** at University. Susan is fond of French **poetry**.

I never enjoyed studying **history**.

**BUT!** I'm reading a book about **the history** of Scotland.

## Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.

3.1

- 1** -----
1. .... weather is fine today. Let's go for a walk. I enjoy walking in .... good weather.
  2. I can say I feel .... great respect for this man.
  3. Doesn't he understand that he is talking .... nonsense?
  4. This is .... very interesting news. I would say .... news is shocking.
  5. First of all you must think about .... health.
  6. .... advice he gave me was useful indeed. He is .... clever man and always gives .... good advice.
  7. What he needs now is .... luck and I'm sure he will achieve .... success.
  8. You've made .... great progress this year and got .... deep knowledge of the subject.
  9. It was .... fun to watch .... children playing.
  10. .... work must be done in time. It's .... urgent work.
- 2** -----
1. He needs .... experience to become .... good doctor.
  2. Tim is of course a man of .... great physical strength.
  3. .... information he has may be interesting to us.
  4. He is interested in .... life of .... great people.
  5. I think he had .... interesting life.
  6. Be careful not to break it. It's made of .... glass.
  7. .... doctors say he mustn't eat .... meat. They say .... meat can do him harm.
  8. The child ate .... soup very quickly. He always has .... soup for dinner.
  9. .... fish doesn't smell good. Don't eat it.
  10. He likes .... strong tea with .... sugar and .... lemon.
- 3** -----
1. Waiter! I'd like .... juice and .... ice-cream, please.
  2. Don't give her .... ice-cream. She has a cold.
  3. I don't want anything but .... plain water.
  4. Can I have .... bread and .... butter? — .... butter is in .... fridge and here is .... bread.
  5. There is .... fire over there. Some house is on .... fire.
  6. I don't think .... English grammar is very difficult.
  7. .... life is impossible without .... water and .... air.
  8. .... tourists made .... fire and cooked .... food.
  9. .... paper is rough. I need .... better paper.
  10. Only some animals are afraid of .... water but all animals are afraid of .... fire.
- 4** -----
1. She says there is nothing better than .... cold tea on .... hot day.
  2. He is interested in .... ancient history and knows much about .... life of people at that time.
  3. Mike says he doesn't like .... modern music but he always enjoys .... classical music.
  4. Is it easy to drive in .... thick fog?
  5. Which is cheaper, .... fuel or .... gas?
  6. Do you prefer clothes made of .... silk or .... cotton?
  7. Which do you like more .... apple juice or .... orange juice?
  8. Do you wear clothes made of .... leather?
  9. .... ink is black. You need .... blue ink.
  10. .... grass is wet. Never sit on .... wet grass.

1. Если существительное является собирательным образом, а не конкретным предметом, то оно употребляется с определенным артиклем. В этой функции определенный артикль употребляется с исчисляемыми существительными в единственном числе для обозначения класса предметов:

- животные

The **giraffe** is an animal with a long neck.

- растения

The **rose** is a beautiful flower.

- изобретения, машины

The **bus** is a means of transport.

He always listens to **the radio** in the morning.

- музыкальные инструменты

He plays **the piano** very well.



Слово *television* не употребляется с артиклем.

He liked watching television.

- группы людей или социальные классы

the aristocracy, the nobility, the public, the press, the clergy, the police

He belongs to **the nobility**.

He is afraid of **the police**.

- религиозные, партийные группы

the Anglicans, the Protestants, the Republicans, the Tories

He is sure **the Democrats** will come to power this year.



Существительные **man** и **woman** в обобщенном значении употребляются без артикля:

The dog is a friend of **man**.

2. Определенный артикль с обобщающим значением также употребляется:

- с некоторыми субстантивированными прилагательными

The **young** know better than **the old** nowadays.

- с прилагательными, обозначающими национальную принадлежность

The Germans, the Russians, the Brazilians, the French, etc.

Do you think **the English** are fond of their weather?

## Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.

4.1

1. Which of you can play ..... horn? — I can. Have you got ..... horn?
2. .... euro is ..... single European currency.
3. The ambulance came and took ..... injured to hospital.
4. .... Swiss speak four foreign languages.
5. .... violet is my wife's favourite flower. I always give her ..... violets.
6. .... telephone was invented by Bell. Nowadays almost all people have ..... telephones.
7. .... airplane is the most popular means of transport because ..... airplanes fly very quickly.
8. I want to buy ..... new computer. .... com puter I have is very slow.
9. Nowadays ..... life is impossible without ..... computer.
10. In English ..... verb usually follows ..... noun in ..... positive sentence.
11. .... governments of the world should take care of ..... sick and ..... poor.
12. .... man began to explore ..... space in the fifties of the 19<sup>th</sup> century.
13. He is ..... Frenchman and can tell ..... good wine from ..... bad wine. .... French are known for their wines.
14. .... Chinese invented ..... paper about a thousand years ago.

## Составьте предложения при помощи слов.

4.2

**1** -----

★ .....is the King of all animals. — *The lion* is the king of all animals.

1. .... needs very little water.
2. .... lives in African rivers.
3. .... lives in Australia only.
4. .... is very small.
5. .... lives with man.
6. .... gives milk.

lion
kangaroo
mouse
camel
crocodile
dog
cow

**2** -----

1. .... must go to hospital.
2. .... have little money.
3. .... have no job.
4. .... are people over seventy.
5. .... have no home.
6. .... are people about twenty years old.

unemployed
old
poor
homeless
sick
young

**3** -----

1. .... speak Portuguese.
2. .... speak French and English.
3. .... speak French.
4. .... speak English.
5. .... speak Mexican.
6. .... speak Chinese.

Canadians
Chinese
Mexicans
Australians
Brazilians
French



## 1. Употребление артиклей с именами собственными

Имена собственные обычно употребляются без артиклей.

I don't know **Charles Smith**.

**Little Bobby** is very funny.

Артикли также не употребляются перед существительными *mother, father, aunt, uncle, nurse, professor, captain, doctor* и другими, если за ними следует имя собственное.

Do you know **Doctor Brown**?

**Aunt Mary** is coming to stay with us for some time.

**BUT!** the *writer* **Dickens**  
the *painter* **Turner**

Определенный артикль употребляется перед именами собственными, обозначающими семью —

**The Browns** are our great friends. — Брауны — наши хорошие друзья.

и при наличии лимитирующего определения.

**The Jack** I told you about is waiting for you.

## 2. Употребление артиклей с географическими названиями

Без артикля употребляются названия:

- континентов  
Let's go to **South America** in June.
- стран  
He is going to **Germany**. **Italy** is a beautiful country.
- городов, штатов, провинций  
He lives in **Leeds**. He settled down in **Colorado**.

**BUT!** **The Hague**

- названия отдельных горных вершин и островов, полуостровов, озер  
(Mount) **Elbrus**, **Cyprus**, **Lake Ontario**  
**Everest** is the highest mountain in the world. **Corsica** and **Crete** are islands.

➤ Lake **Baikal** || **the Baikal**  
Alaska || **the Alaska Peninsula**

С определенным артиклем употребляются:

- страны, названия которых содержат существительные *republic, state, kingdom, etc.*  
**the Russian Federation**, **the United States of America (the USA)**

⚠ **the Netherlands, the Philippines**

- названия океанов, морей, проливов, каналов, рек  
**the Atlantic (Ocean)**, **the North Sea**, **the Panama Canal**, **the (River) Thames**,  
**the Strait of Magellan**
- названия пустынь  
**the Sahara**, **the Gobi (Desert)**
- названия горных цепей и групп островов  
**the Rocky Mountains**, **the Bermudas**  
**The Azores** are a group of islands. **The Alps** are a mountain range.

**Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.****5.1**

1. I met ..... George Swift as I was going down the street.
2. .... USA is situated in ..... North America and borders on ..... Mexico and ..... Canada.
3. .... Doctor Miles phoned you an hour ago.
4. We expect ..... Morgans for dinner.
5. He has a wonderful house in ..... Greece.
6. .... Dnieper is one of the longest rivers in ..... Russia.
7. The country is situated in ..... Western Europe.
8. If you want to get to ..... England from ..... France you must cross ..... English Channel.
9. They spent their vacation in ..... Alps.
10. .... Netherlands border on ..... Germany and ..... Belgium.
11. The climate in ..... Mexico is rather hot.
12. Is he ..... Bill you told me about?

**Выберите правильные ответы на вопросы и вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.****5.2**

Lake Baikal	North America	Everest	Asia
English Channel	Europe	Pacific Ocean	Germany
Mississippi	North Sea	Volga	Urals

1. What do you have to cross to travel from England to France? .....
2. Where is Belgium situated? .....
3. Which river flows through the USA? .....
4. Of which country is Berlin the capital? .....
5. Which sea separates England from Europe? .....
6. On which continent is Canada situated? .....
7. Which is the highest mountain in the world? .....
8. What ocean separates America from Asia? .....
9. Which is the longest river in Russia? .....
10. What lake is the deepest in Russia? .....
11. What mountains separate Europe from Asia? .....
12. Which is the largest continent of the world? .....

**Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.****5.3**

1. .... Detective Cooper says he saw you there yesterday. — Tell ..... detective I've never been there.
2. Have you ever climbed ..... Elbrus? — I've climbed ..... Andes.
3. .... United Kingdom consists of ..... England, ..... Scotland, ..... Wales, and ..... Northern Ireland.
4. .... British Prime Minister left for ..... Middle East early this morning.
5. If I had enough money I would go to ..... Canaries.
6. I've heard much about ..... General Miles. .... general is a well-known person.
7. When are ..... Greens moving to their new flat?
8. This story is written by ..... famous English writer W. S. Maugham.
9. .... Gibraltar separates ..... Europe from ..... Africa.
10. .... Newcastle is a large city in ..... north-east of ..... England.
11. You must see ..... doctor. .... Doctor Ballisat is ..... good doctor.
12. Do you have ..... aunt? — Yes, I do. .... Aunt Mary always visits us in June.

**1. Без артикля** употребляются:

- названия улиц, парков, площадей  
Fleet Street, Hyde Park, Trafalgar Square, Fifth Avenue



Кроме некоторых иностранных названий, которые традиционно употребляются с определенным артиклем.

the High Street, the Mall, the Main Street

- названия университетов, аэропортов, железнодорожных станций  
Oxford University, Moscow University (но: the University of Moscow), London Airport, Victoria Station
- названия зданий, если в названии здания присутствует имя собственное  
Buckingham Palace, Westminster Abbey, St. Paul's Cathedral

**BUT!** the White House, the Royal Palace (“white” and “royal” are not proper names).

- названия месяцев и дней недели  
January, Tuesday, next Tuesday, last March

**BUT!** the following Monday

- Названия языков употребляются без артиклей, если за ними не следует слово **language**:  
French

**BUT!** the French language

**2 С определенным артиклем** употребляются:

- названия театров, музеев, галерей, концертных залов, отелей, банков  
the Covent Garden (театр в Лондоне), the British Museum, the Tretyakov Gallery, the Albert Hall
- названия с предлогом **of**  
the Bank of England, the Houses of Parliament, the Tower of London
- названия газет и журналов  
The Times
- названия кораблей  
The Titanic

**Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.****6.1**

1. He used to sit in the chair and read ..... Evening Post.
2. We are to meet at ..... London Airport.
3. On ..... Sunday they usually went to ..... Green Park.
4. He walked slowly down ..... Madison Avenue past ..... Old Murray Hotel.
5. You can find him at ..... Grand Opera House almost every night.
6. He went to ..... Eton and ..... Oxford and is very proud of it.
7. The conversation was in ..... German. As I didn't know ..... German language I remained silent.
8. Every morning she read ..... Daily Morning and ..... Daily Express from cover to cover.
9. They are taking a voyage on board ..... Victoria.
10. .... Wellington is a hotel on ..... Broadway.
11. .... Regent's Park is now the home of ..... London Zoo.
12. .... Victoria and Albert is a museum where you can find things from almost every place and period.

**Выберите правильный вариант.****6.2**

1. *Savoy* / *The Savoy* is a luxury hotel in London.
2. He is coming on *Wednesday* / *the Wednesday* and we'll meet him at *Lincoln International Airport* / *the Lincoln International Airport*.
3. I know a house in *Talbot Square* / *the Talbot Square* you can rent.
4. *Capitol* / *the Capitol* is the largest and tallest among other buildings.
5. I've already been to *Tate Gallery* / *the Tate Gallery* twice.
6. *St. James's Park* / *The St. James's Park* overlooks *St. James's* / *the St. James's* Palace.
7. *Science Museum* / *The Science Museum* is always crowded and very noisy.
8. *Mansion House* / *The Mansion House* is the residence of the City's Lord Mayor.
9. *Today* / *The Today* is a popular newspaper.
10. *Statue of Liberty* / *The Statue of Liberty* was a gift of France to the USA.

**Ответьте на вопросы, используя слова и вставляя артикли, где это необходимо.****6.3**

Ritz	Independent	Fleet Street
Cambridge University	Albert Hall	Westminster Abbey
Victoria Station	Mall	Bank of England
British Museum	Tower of London	Houses of Parliament

1. Which paper appeared in the 1980s? .....
2. What is the seat of the British Parliament? .....
3. What is one of the most famous universities in the world? .....
4. What is one of the most comfortable hotels? .....
5. What is one of the largest banks in England? .....
6. What is the name of a large church in London? .....
7. What is a famous museum of antiquities and ethnography? .....
8. Which street leads to Buckingham Palace? .....
9. In what street are there many newspaper offices? .....
10. Where can you listen to classical music? .....
11. What do you call the fortress which is now a museum? .....
12. Where do trains arrive? .....

## UNIT 7 УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЕ АРТИКЛЕЙ В КОНСТРУКЦИИ С ПРЕДЛОГОМ OF

### 1. “the + of” употребляется, если

- существительное выражает принадлежность.  
the foot of the mountain  
the top of the page  
the son of a doctor  
the face of a man  
the edge of the table
- существительное является уточняющим.  
the city of Moscow  
the name of George  
the head of a country  
the colour of green

### 2. “a + of” употребляется, если существительное выражает:

- качество  
a feeling of relief  
a sense of humour
- количество или меру  
a lump of sugar  
a slice of bread  
a pound of sugar  
a distance of three miles  
a height of three metres  
a weight of three pounds
- состав или группу  
a group of people  
a team of football players  
a flock of birds  
a bunch of flowers  
a pile of papers  
a herd of deer
- материал, из которого сделан предмет  
a ring of gold  
a jacket of wool  
a box of wood  
a dress of silk
- содержимое  
a cup of tea  
a box of pencils  
a pot of coffee  
a glass of milk
- возраст  
a boy of five  
a man of about forty  
a lady of an old age
- размер  
a building of great size
- характеристику  
a question of life and death  
a man of intelligence  
a girl of great charm



Такие словосочетания, как «сын врача», «дочь рабочего», переводятся как **the son of a doctor, the daughter of a worker.**

## Заполните пропуски артиклями.

7.1

1. Can you explain ..... idea of the article?
2. I'm afraid it will be ..... waste of time.
3. Please get ..... scarf of wool for him.
4. She is ..... daughter of ..... sportsman.
5. The children had found ..... box of matches and were playing with it.
6. .... roof of the house is very old.
7. You'll have to pay ..... fine of fifty pounds.
8. You must speak to ..... owner of the company first.
9. I saw him speaking with ..... group of students yesterday.
10. The article deals with the latest discoveries in ..... field of medicine.

## Заполните пропуски артиклями.

7.2

1. He felt for the key in ..... pockets of the jacket, but found nothing.
2. The doctor says that ..... state of his health is poor.
3. Let's climb to ..... top of the hill.
4. I need ..... pound of sugar and ..... box of chocolates.
5. The country has ..... area of 96,000 sq. km.
6. .... price of fuel has grown recently.
7. I know he has just bought a car at ..... price of about 30 thousand dollars.
8. There is something wrong with ..... leg of the table.
9. He was ..... man of a medium height.
10. He liked ..... glass of beer on a hot day.

Ответьте на вопросы, составляя словосочетания *a ... of, the ... of* из следующих слов.

7.3

position, manager	book, interest	distance, twenty miles
daughter, scientist	girl, thirteen	man, culture
development, science	collar, shirt	glass, juice
face, man	bottom, page	dress, silk
front, house	sense, duty	result, exam

1. Is her father a teacher? — No, he isn't. He is .....
2. Did you walk long? — Yes, we did. By the evening we had covered .....
3. Are you thirsty? — I'm. I could do with .....
4. Is he well-educated? — I'm sure of that. He is .....
5. I advise you to read the novel. It's certainly .....
6. Does she have children? — Yes, she does. She has .....
7. Change your clothes at once. .... is dirty.
8. Does she work? Yes, she does. She was offered ..... not long ago.
9. The child is very responsible and has .....
10. He is busy preparing a talk on .....
11. Turn over the page and you'll find the word at .....
12. What did she wear at the party? — .....
13. .... sitting over there seems familiar to me.
14. I must buy some paint. I want to paint .....
15. The students were waiting for .....

**1. Употребление артиклей с существительными, обозначающими времена года (*winter, spring, summer, autumn*)**

без артикля	a / an	the
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>в безличных предложениях It was summer.</li> <li>со словами <b>late / early</b> It was late / early autumn.</li> <li>с предлогом <b>in</b> I'm going to skate a lot in winter.</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>при наличии описательного определения It was <b>a cold winter</b>. It was <b>a terrible summer</b>.</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>после предлогов <b>through, during, for</b> Where are you going <b>for the summer</b>?</li> </ul>

**2. Употребление артиклей с существительными, обозначающими части суток (*day, morning, afternoon, evening, night, dawn*)**

без артикля	a / an	the
<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>в безличных предложениях It was evening when he finally phoned.</li> <li>с прилагательными <i>early, late</i> It was <b>late afternoon</b>. It was <b>early morning</b>.</li> <li>с определениями <i>yesterday, tomorrow</i> I met him <b>yesterday afternoon</b>.</li> <li>после предлогов <i>at, by, about, past, before, after, towards, till, until</i> We'll start <b>before dawn</b>.</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>При наличии описательного определения It was <b>a cold morning</b>. I met him on <b>a hot summer day</b>.</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>После предлогов <b>in, through, during</b> He was here in <b>the morning</b>. She worked during <b>the day</b>.</li> </ul>



**At night / at dawn** — We decided to leave at dawn.

**3. Существительные *breakfast, lunch, tea, dinner, supper*, как правило, употребляются без артикля.**

без артикля	a / an	the
<p>Let's have lunch. She cooks dinner every day. Who makes breakfast in your family? Let's meet after lunch.</p>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>при наличии описательного определения I always have <b>a light supper</b>. It was <b>a very tasty dinner</b>.</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>при наличии лимитирующего определения <b>The dinner she made</b> was tasty.</li> </ul>

**4. Употребление артиклей с существительными — названиями веществ**

без артикля	a / an	the
<p>Life is impossible without water. Don't swim in cold water. I like strong tea.</p>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>если эти существительные изменяют свое значение и становятся исчисляемыми I want <b>a coffee</b> and <b>an ice-cream</b>.</li> </ul>	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>если речь идет об ограниченном количестве вещества Drink <b>the milk</b>. <b>The water</b> is cold.</li> </ul>

**Закончите вопросы, используя слова в скобках.  
Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.**

8.1

1. What did you do (*yesterday, evening*)? .....
2. What are you going to do (*tomorrow, afternoon*)? .....
3. What did you do on (*Monday, morning*)? .....
4. Will you stay at home on (*Sunday, evening*)? .....
5. What do you usually have (*for, breakfast*)? .....
6. Do you usually have (*light, or, heavy, breakfast*)? .....
7. Do you always (*make, dinner*) yourself? .....
8. Do you think it's bad to have (*late, supper*)? .....
9. Did you get up early (*in, morning*)? .....
10. Did you go to bed late (*last, night*)? .....
11. Do you often ask your friends (*to, dinner*)? .....
12. Are you going to the country (*for, summer*)? .....
13. Is (*late, spring*) beautiful? .....
14. Do you know people who hate (*autumn*)? .....
15. Do you go in for sports (*in, winter*)? .....
16. Did you skate (*last, winter*)? .....

**Выберите правильный вариант.**

8.2

1. Do you sometimes sleep during (*day / the day*)?
2. She always took her children to the sea-side for (*summer / the summer*).
3. Nature is wonderful (*in spring / in the spring*).
4. It was (*late afternoon / the late afternoon*).
5. It was (*cold evening / a cold evening*).
6. It's necessary to have (*heavy / a heavy*) breakfast.
7. (*Dinner / The dinner*) she made was wonderful.
8. He appeared (*before midday / before the midday*).
9. He spent (*evening / the evening*) with his parents.
10. She phoned several times (*during morning / during the morning*)?
11. (*Lunch / The lunch*) was awful. I didn't expect it to be so bad.
12. They danced all through (*night / the night*).
13. I remember it was (*rainy summer / a rainy summer*).
14. (*Late summer / The late summer*) is usually rainy here.

**Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.**

8.3

1. It was ..... sunny morning and the family decided to have ..... breakfast in the garden.
2. I'm not hungry. I'll have ..... light lunch.
3. It was ..... cold November evening. The ground was covered with snow.
4. Let's meet on ..... Tuesday afternoon. I can invite you to ..... dinner.
5. How did you spend ..... day?
6. He worked from ..... early morning every day and had a rest in ..... evening.
7. She worked hard during ..... winter.
8. He decided to spend ..... winter in town.
9. Where did you spend the time from ..... midnight till eight in ..... morning?
10. The child sleeps well at ..... night but never sleeps during ..... day.
11. We were ready to start at ..... dawn.
12. It was ..... cloudy morning and they decided to stay at home.
13. On ..... day of his arrival the family woke up early in ..... morning.
14. ..... summer is very short in Britain.



1. Существительные **bed, school, college, university, prison, church, hospital, town, sea, work, home** могут иметь значение конкретного предмета, здания или учреждения. В таком случае артикли употребляются с этими существительными как с исчисляемыми.

There is **a new school** not far from our house. (здание школы)

**The bed** is very comfortable. (конкретный предмет мебели)

**The University** is new. (здание университета)

**The sea** is rough today. (конкретное море)

The reporter went **to the prison** to take an interview. (здание тюрьмы)

The tourists went **to the church**. (на экскурсию в церковь)

**The hospital** is being redecorated. (здание больницы)

It's **a small town** not far from Moscow. (городок)

**The work** is very difficult. (определенная работа)

What are they building here? — **A hospital**.

He goes to **a primary school**.

I know her son has graduated from **a technical college**.

They live in **a small town**.

2. В других случаях эти существительные обозначают процессы или деятельность, связанные с теми местами, которые эти существительные обозначают. Так, существительное **bed** обозначает сон; **school, college, university** — учеба; **prison** — лишение свободы; **church** — вера в бога; **town** — город, а не деревня; **sea** — плаванье.

The boy is too little **to go to school**. (учиться)

**Go to bed** at once! (спать)

Jack decided **to go to sea**. (в плаванье)

The police **took him to prison**. (заключение)

She **goes to church** every Sunday. (молиться)

The sick man **went to hospital**. (лечиться)

They **went to town** to do the shopping. (из деревни в город)

He **is at work**. (исполняет какую-то работу)

**Закончите предложения, употребляя слова***work, prison, hospital, school, college, home, bed, church, town, sea.***Каждое слово может быть употреблено несколько раз.****9.1**

1. The Browns never stay in ..... during the summer. They always go to the country.
2. He stole 50 thousand pounds and was taken to .....
3. I don't feel like going out. I'd better stay at .....
4. He usually comes at about seven o'clock after .....
5. The sick man was taken to .....
6. He was a sailor and spent most of his life at .....
7. He believed in God and went to ..... church every Sunday.
8. When I finish ..... I'll go to .....
9. He never goes to ..... before eleven and gets up at six.
10. They say that a very dangerous criminal escaped from ..... yesterday.
11. He was a sick boy and often missed .....
12. I'm quite well and don't want to stay in ..... any more.
13. He spent the day from 9 a. m. to 6 p. m. at .....
14. It's time to get up. Are you going to spend the whole day in ..... ?

**Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.****9.2**

1. The mother told the nurse to put the children to ..... bed at nine.
2. He had to leave ..... school at the age of fourteen.
3. Why are these things on ..... bed?
4. Mary and Harold are having lunch in ..... town today.
5. Jane's parents went to ..... school to speak to the teacher.
6. I'm going to ..... hospital to visit John.
7. ..... bed was empty and there was nobody in the room.
8. I know he went to ..... law school some years ago.
9. Did you study chemistry in ..... high school?
10. ..... sea is calm today.
11. Each town has ..... church.
12. Did the police take him to ..... prison?
13. Don't worry. His lawyer will go to ..... prison to speak to him.

**Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.****9.3**

1. He lives in ..... town not far from London. .... town is beautiful.
2. He always got up early and went jogging before going to ..... work.
3. Don't worry, I'll do ..... work properly.
4. Did you go to ..... college?
5. He is a doctor and often spends his days off at ..... hospital.
6. A lot of children hate ..... school.
7. It's ..... old church. It's the oldest church in ..... town.
8. This year he is going to ..... secondary school.
9. It's ..... very expensive bed. Let's look for something cheaper.
10. They say it's ..... good hospital.
11. He said he would go to ..... town on business and return in the afternoon.
12. There is no place like ..... home.

Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.

**10.1****1** -----

1. Slow down! You can't drive at ..... speed of 50 miles here.
2. .... life is full of surprises.
3. .... Philippines are situated in ..... south-eastern Asia.
4. I don't know much about ..... ancient literature and ..... art.
5. He told us a lot about ..... France and ..... French.
6. Who will make ..... speech at ..... coming meeting?
7. .... Professor Norman gives us lectures in ..... Chemistry.
8. I want ..... advice and he is ..... only person who will help me.
9. Do you think it's ..... right thing to say?
10. .... day was hot.

**2** -----

1. She worked at ..... hospital and looked after ..... sick.
2. It's ..... good music. I like such ..... music.
3. .... dog is ..... friend of ..... man.
4. .... aunt Ann appeared by ..... afternoon.
5. They expected ..... cold winter.
6. After ..... dinner ..... family gathered in ..... garden for ..... coffee.
7. He was looking forward to ..... fortnight on ..... coast of ..... Atlantic Ocean.
8. .... question is of ..... great importance to me.
9. I need ..... good advice.
10. .... USA has ..... area of 3.5 million square miles.

**3** -----

1. .... President Roosevelt was ..... only president who served three terms.
2. Are ..... Tailors coming to ..... lunch?
3. Look at ..... sky! ..... moon is full.
4. Can you think of ..... better way to get to ..... centre of ..... city?
5. She chose ... vase of ... stone.
6. They have ..... nice country-house with ..... beautiful garden.
7. Enter ..... house by ..... back door.
8. .... little Billy often wakes up at ..... night.
9. .... climate of ..... Crimea is mild.
10. .... plastic can't resist ..... fire.

**4** -----

1. What ..... sunny weather we are having today!
2. Where are they staying? — At ..... President Hotel.
3. .... Wests have bought ..... villa on ..... Hawaii.
4. Could you ask for ..... coke and ..... sandwich?

5. .... Netherlands border on .... Germany and .... Belgium.
6. He studies .... science and I'm interested in .... history.
7. Have you been to .... Pushkin Museum and .... Bolshoi Theatre yet?
8. .... Friday evening is .... best evening for me.
9. They had to spend .... night at .... airport.
10. .... Central Park in .... New York has .... area of 85 acres.

**5.**

1. I don't want .... brandy. I want .... plain water.
2. I get .... Daily Express and .... Financial Times.
3. .... Kilimanjaro is .... mountain, .... top of which is always covered with .... snow.
4. .... title of .... book seems interesting.
5. Though .... air was rather cold, .... water was quite warm.
6. Look! .... sleeves of .... coat are short.
7. He has .... great experience and .... deep knowledge.
8. Did you understand .... end of .... story?
9. Add .... powder to .... cake.
10. .... sand and .... salt are often used to melt .... ice.

**Вставьте артикли, где это необходимо.****10.2****1**

I remember it very well. I was poor then and often didn't have .... money for .... bread. I had .... friend. He was .... poor writer too. Once we needed .... three dollars. We had to have .... money by .... evening. I didn't know where to go and where to get .... three dollars. For .... hour I was walking along .... streets of .... Washington. At last I came to .... big hotel. I went into .... hall of .... hotel and sat down on .... sofa to have .... rest. Suddenly ..... beautiful small dog ran into .... hall. It was .... nice dog and I began to play with it. I was playing with .... dog when .... man came into .... hall. I knew .... man at once. It was .... General Miles. He saw .... dog and liked it at once. "Do you want to sell it?" ..... general asked me. "..... three dollars," I answered. "..... price of three dollars is too little for such ..... dog. Do you want more?" he said. I didn't, so he took .... dog and went to .... elevator.

Ten minutes later .... old man came into .... hall. He was looking for something.

"Are you looking for .... dog, sir?" I asked. "Yes," said .... old man. I promised .... old man to find .... dog for three dollars and went to .... General Miles's room. .... general had to return .... dog and of course I returned him .... money. But .... old man paid me .... three dollars I had earned. (After W. S. Maugham).

**2**

..... London is .... capital of .... Great Britain, situated on .... both sides of .... Thames. This is one of .... greatest cities in .... world. .... People going to .... London expect to see .... large city, but .... real size of .... London impresses everybody. .... London's territory is twice as great as .... territory of .... New York, though .... London's population is smaller. .... territory of .... city is so large because .... English like living in .... terraced houses with .... small gardens. .... London was first mentioned by .... Romans. They called it .... Londinium.

**3** -----

I've lived in ..... Barfield for ..... long time. I have ..... job in ..... London so I travel to London by ..... train almost every day and know ..... faces of almost half ..... passengers. But , of course, I don't know ..... names of all these passengers.

One day I stayed at ..... office till late in ..... evening and got to ..... Waterloo Station in ..... time for ..... nine o'clock train. I took ..... seat next to ..... man of about forty ..... face of ..... man was familiar to me.

..... weather was terrible and when ..... train came to ..... station it was raining heavily. I offered ..... man ..... lift in my car. He agreed. But on ..... way to ..... Barfield he suddenly asked to stop ..... car at ..... very lonely place. When I stopped ..... car something heavy hit me on my head.

When I came to I was in ..... field. I had ..... terrible headache, no car, no money. I walked to ..... police station. I told ..... sergeant on duty about what had happened to me. Then I saw ..... photo on ..... wall. I recognized ..... man in ..... photo at once. It was ..... man who had robbed me. Then I realized why ..... face of ..... man was familiar to me. .... police were looking for him and there were ..... pictures of ..... robber everywhere in ..... Barfield.

**4** -----

..... Fleet Street is famous as ..... home of ..... nation's ..... newspapers, but in fact only two of them — ..... Daily Express and ..... Daily Telegraph are still in ..... Fleet Street. However, ..... people still say “..... Fleet Street” to mean “..... press”. ..... British are ..... nation of ..... newspaper readers. Many of them have ..... daily papers delivered to their homes in time for ..... breakfast. .... British newspapers can be divided into two groups: quality and popular. .... quality newspapers cover ..... home and ..... foreign news thoughtfully while ..... popular newspapers like ..... shocking popular stories as well as some news.

**5** -----

..... City of London is one of ..... major banking centres of ..... world and you can find ..... banks of many nations in ..... famous Threadneedle Street and ..... surrounding area. Here you will also find ... Bank of England. Nearby is ..... Stock Exchange which is like ..... busy market, except that here not ..... food but ..... shares of ..... commercial companies are bought and sold.

A little further along in ..... Leadenhall Street is ..... Lloyds, ..... most famous insurance company in ..... world.

**6** -----

The West End is ..... name given to ..... area of ..... central London north from ..... Mall to ..... Oxford Street. It includes ..... Trafalgar Square, ..... main shopping areas of ..... Oxford Street, .... Regent Street, and ..... Bond Street and ..... entertainment centres of ..... Soho, ..... Piccadilly Circus, ..... Leicester Square, and ..... Shaftesbury Avenue. Its name is associated with ..... glamour and ..... bright lights.

**7** -----

Opposite ..... Houses of ..... Parliament stands ..... Westminster Abbey. From ..... Norman times ..... British monarchs have been crowned there and since ..... 13<sup>th</sup> century they have been buried there.

Piccadilly Circus is ..... centre of ..... nightlife in ..... West End. It is usually ..... top of everybody's list of ..... things to see London.

# **NOUNS**

**СУЩЕСТВИТЕЛЬНЫЕ**

- 1.** Исчисляемые существительные имеют формы единственного и множественного числа. У большинства исчисляемых существительных форма множественного числа образуется при помощи суффикса **-s (-es)**.

a bag — bags  
a brush — brushes

**BUT!**

a man ⇒ men	a tooth ⇒ teeth	an ox ⇒ oxen	a deer ⇒ deer
a woman ⇒ women	a foot ⇒ feet	a sheep ⇒ sheep	a mouse ⇒ mice
a child ⇒ children	a goose ⇒ geese	a swine ⇒ swine	a craft ⇒ craft

He says his *foot* hurts.  
He has a habit of sitting with his *feet* on the table.  
The cat was playing with a *mouse*.  
She is afraid of *mice*.

- 2.** Сложные и составные существительные

schoolgirl ⇒ schoolgirls	son-in-law ⇒ sons-in-law	woman-doctor ⇒ women-doctors
postman ⇒ postmen	forget-me-not ⇒ forget-me-nots	man servant ⇒ men-servants

a Frenchman ⇒ Frenchmen	a German ⇒ Germans
an Englishman ⇒ Englishmen	a Roman ⇒ Romans

*Frenchmen* are fond of good food.



a Chinese — (the) Chinese  
a Japanese — (the) Japanese

- 3.** Следующие существительные имеют только форму множественного числа:

clothes	cattle	glasses (spectacles)
police	trousers (shorts, jeans)	people
goods	scissors	wages

The *cattle* are in the field. — Стадо в поле.  
His *wages* are too low. — У него слишком низкий доход.



Слово «часы», которое в русском языке имеет только форму множественного числа, в английском языке имеет обе формы:

a clock ⇒ clocks  
a watch ⇒ watches

- 4.** Множественное число существительных, заканчивающихся на **-f, -fe**

leaf ⇒ leaves	wife ⇒ wives	thief ⇒ thieves	half ⇒ halves
calf ⇒ calves	knife ⇒ knives	wolf ⇒ wolves	shelf ⇒ shelves

**BUT!**

belief ⇒ beliefs	chief ⇒ chiefs	roof ⇒ roofs	safe ⇒ safes	giraffe ⇒ giraffes
<b>consonant + o</b>	tomato ⇒ tomatoes			
<b>vowel + o</b>	studio ⇒ studios	zoo ⇒ zoos		
<b>abbreviations</b>	photo ⇒ photos	piano ⇒ pianos		

## Поставьте словосочетания во множественное число.

11.1

★ this question ⇒ *these questions*.

- |                               |                            |
|-------------------------------|----------------------------|
| 1. that shelf — .....         | 11. this passer-by — ..... |
| 2. this match — .....         | 12. this child — .....     |
| 3. that bus — .....           | 13. that sheep — .....     |
| 4. my glove — .....           | 14. this policeman — ..... |
| 5. his photo — .....          | 15. his toy — .....        |
| 6. my study — .....           | 16. my tooth — .....       |
| 7. her brother-in-law — ..... | 17. her chief — .....      |
| 8. that taxi — .....          | 18. this potato — .....    |
| 9. her radio — .....          | 19. that rose — .....      |
| 10. this watch — .....        | 20. this path — .....      |

## Поставьте следующие предложения во множественное число.

11.2

1. This aircraft is new. ....
2. I saw a cat playing with a mouse. ....
3. I've never won a prize. ....
4. Do you know this lady? .....
5. This is a tall tree. ....
6. I need a box. ....
7. We are going to visit this country. ....
8. She has a grandchild. ....
9. This man is a thief. ....
10. I like this player. ....
11. I don't have an ashtray. ....
12. Have you ever talked to a Frenchman? .....
13. There is a swimming pool in our town. ....
14. He likes his teacher. ....

## Выберите правильный вариант.

11.3

1. They have no *proofs* / *proves* of his guilt.
2. These *cities* / *citys* are beautiful.
3. The *roofs* / *rooves* of these houses are bad.
4. They are very good *students* / *studentes*.
5. Her *knifes* / *knives* are always sharp.
6. This farmer breeds *geese* / *gooses*.
7. I want to see *deer* / *deers* in the zoo.
8. He wants to buy some new *shelfs* / *shelves*.
9. You can't park *lorries* / *lorrys* here.
10. I like *plays* / *plaies* by this author.
11. Some *Irishmans* / *Irishmen* live here.
12. He injured his *feet* / *foots*.
13. They sell *pianoes* / *pianos* here.
14. Her *eyes* / *eyies* are beautiful.
15. She has two *umbrellas* / *umbrellaes*.



**1.** Неисчисляемые существительные имеют только форму единственного числа и никогда не употребляются с неопределенным артиклем. К этой категории существительных относятся:

- существительные — названия веществ

I like coffee.

He made it of paper.

Why are you covered with dirt?

The ground is covered with snow.

- абстрактные существительные

He believes that freedom is everything.

You need strength to open this box.

He looked at me with interest.

I feel pity for the man.

- названия наук и искусств

I'm fond of history.

He writes about poetry.

Mathematics is too difficult for me.

She studied painting.

**2.** В отличие от русского языка, следующие существительные всегда неисчисляемые и имеют только форму единственного числа.

advice	knowledge	progress	furniture	luggage
news	money	work	scenery	permission
hair	information	weather		

This is very important information.

Это очень важные сведения.

Her hair is beautiful.

У нее прекрасные волосы.

No news is good news.

Это хорошие новости.

I've always wanted to have long hair.

Я всегда хотела иметь длинные волосы.

Their furniture is very old.

Их мебель очень старая.

**3.** Некоторые существительные могут изменять значение, и тогда они становятся исчисляемыми.

Two coffees and a tea, please.

Два кофе и чай, пожалуйста.

Are these your papers?

Это твои бумаги.

I have two English Grammars.

У меня два учебника по грамматике.

That's an interesting history.

Это интересная история.

## Выберите правильный вариант.

12.1

- ★ These children *is/ are* happy. ⇨ **These children are happy.**
1. *This/ These geese is/ are* white.
  2. Statistics *is/ are* an interesting science.
  3. *This/ These women wants/ want* to see the manager.
  4. Some people *is/ are* waiting for you.
  5. Bad news travels / travel fast.
  6. Her hair *is/ are* black.
  7. Athletics *consists/ consist* of running, the high jump, and the javelin.
  8. His knowledge of the subject *leaves/ leave* much to be desired.
  9. The money *is/ are* in the bag.
  10. The child *likes/ like* to play.
  11. He gave me *an advice/ advice*.
  12. *This is a / These are* policeman.
  13. *This/ these ox is/ are* in the field.
  14. This is *an interesting / interesting* work.
  15. *This/ These clothes is/ are* old.
  16. He thinks money *brings/ bring* happiness.
  17. It's *a fine / fine* weather we are having today.
  18. The police *has/ have* arrived.
  19. This is *a new / new* furniture.
  20. I have *a bad / bad* tooth.

## Переведите.

12.2

1 -----

1. Его ищет полиция.
2. Что случилось с его ногами?
3. Это плохой совет.
4. Его доход довольно высок.
5. Эти сведения — старые.
6. Этот кот не ловит мышей.
7. У нее не очень длинные волосы.
8. Товар испорчен.
9. Это хорошие новости.
10. Где деньги? — Они в кошельке.
11. Эти люди — немцы.
12. Почему твоя одежда на полу? Положи ее в шкаф.

2 -----

1. Физика — его любимый предмет.
2. Ваши успехи доставляют мне радость.
3. Эти дети еще маленькие.
4. Это ужасная мебель.
5. У него было два зятя.
6. Я не люблю дождливую погоду.
7. Где ножницы?
8. Это тяжелый багаж.
9. Это грязная одежда.
10. Полиция все знает.
11. Мои часы немного спешат.
12. Его советы всегда правильны.

- 1.** Слова *much* (много), *little* (мало), *a little* (немного, некоторое количество) употребляются с неисчисляемыми существительными.

Was there *much snow* last winter?

В прошлом году было *много* снега?

I had *little money*.

У меня было *мало* денег.

We have *a little bread*.

У нас есть *немного* хлеба.

В отличие от *little*, слово *a little* имеет положительное значение.

I have *little time*. I must hurry.

У меня *мало* времени. (почти нет)

I have *a little time*. I can talk to you.

У меня есть *немного* времени.

- 2.** Слова *many* (много), *few* (мало), *a few* (несколько, некоторое количество) употребляются с исчисляемыми существительными.

Do you have *many friends*?

У тебя *много* друзей?

I had *few friends* when I was little.

Когда я был маленьким, у меня было *мало* друзей.

I've visited *a few countries* this year.

В этом году я посетил *несколько* стран.

В отличие от *few*, слово *a few* имеет положительное значение.

I have *few questions*. I won't take much of your time.

У меня *мало* вопросов. (почти нет)

The problem is not quite clear. I have *a few questions*.

У меня есть *несколько* вопросов.

- 3.** Слова *much* и *many*, как правило, употребляются в вопросительных и отрицательных предложениях. В утвердительных предложениях чаще всего употребляется *a lot of*.

I have *a lot of friends*.

У меня *много* друзей.

There is *a lot of snow* this winter.

В этом году *много* снега.

There are *a lot of shops* in Oxford Street.

На Оксфорд-стрит *много* магазинов.

Если перед словом *много* стоят слова *very, too, so*, то употребляются *much* или *many*, а не *a lot*.

He has *so many friends*!

У него так *много* друзей!

He eats *very much sugar*.

Он ест *очень много* сахара.

We spent *too much money*.

Мы потратили *слишком много* денег.

- 4.** *Many of / much of*

*Many of* my friends have come to my birthday party.

*Многие из* моих друзей пришли ко мне на день рождения.

*Much of* their conversation was about work.

*Большая часть* разговора сводилась к работе.

## Заполните пропуски словами.

13.1

1. *much, many, a lot* -----

1. Why do you need so ..... paper?
2. He says he has ..... problems.
3. Did you spend ..... money on it?
4. I haven't seen them for ..... years.
5. We had ..... fun at the party.
6. Why have so ..... people come?
7. Do you really need so ..... luggage?
8. Did he really give you ..... advice?
9. She always adds ..... salt to every dish she makes.
10. He buys very ..... papers every day.
11. Why have you bought so ..... clothes?
12. Don't give the dog too ..... meat.
13. You should eat ..... fruit.
14. Does he really have so ..... work?
15. He doesn't have ..... knowledge of the subject.

2. *few / a few или little / a little* -----

1. He says there is ..... news, almost nothing.
2. There are ..... people who know about it but not many.
3. Women always think they have ..... clothes.
4. You need ..... luck to win.
5. I'll be ready in ..... minutes.
6. I have invited ..... people. I don't want a crowd of people here.
7. The teacher gave Tom a bad mark because he has ..... knowledge of the subject.
8. I have ..... knowledge of the subject and can prove my point of view.
9. Somehow he has very ..... English books.
10. He had ..... time and stopped to talk to his friend.
11. Why are there so ..... flowers in you garden?
12. The child has made ..... progress and speaks English better.
13. The child left ..... soup in his plate, he had eaten almost the whole of it.
14. Give the cat ..... fish every day. It's necessary for him.
15. .... people want to see you. May they come in?

## Переведите.

13.2

1. Он дал мне много хороших советов.
2. В баке мало бензина.
3. Я помогу тебе, если у меня будет несколько минут.
4. У меня очень много новостей.
5. У Билла мало хорошей одежды, а у Теда много.
6. У меня есть немного денег. Я могу одолжить тебе немного.
7. У меня мало сведений об этой фирме.
8. В этом лесу много оленей.
9. Мало знаний — опасная вещь.
10. Добавить тебе в чай немного сахара?
11. Он пьет слишком много кофе.
12. В магазине было несколько часов, которые понравились Сьюзан, и ей было трудно сделать выбор.

Существительные в английском языке имеют два падежа: *общий падеж* (the Common Case) и *притяжательный падеж* (the Possessive Case).

**1. Притяжательный падеж** образуют, в основном одушевленные существительные при помощи 's или только апострофа (').

a) 's добавляется

- ко всем существительным в единственном числе:  
this boy's bag; Alice's umbrella
- к существительным во множественном числе, которые образуют его не по общим правилам:  
these children's toys; these women's children
- с существительными, обозначающими «время», «расстояние»:  
*today, Wednesday, morning, a mile* и т. д.  
today's newspaper; a mile's distance

b) (') добавляется

- к существительным во множественном числе, которые образуют его по общим правилам:  
these boys' bags; the Browns' garden
- именам собственным, оканчивающимся на -s:  
Charles' wife / Charles's wife; Dickens' novel / Dickens's novel

c) Если указывается два владельца одного предмета, то 's прибавляется к имени последнего.

Steve and Ann's car **BUT!** Steve's and Ann's cars

d) В составных существительных 's прибавляется к последнему элементу.

my mother-in-law's book

**2.** Конструкция с предлогом **of** употребляется

- с неодушевленными существительными:  
The roof of the house needs painting.
- если после существительного следует придаточное определительное:  
The car of the man you saw yesterday.

**3.** С существительными, обозначающими организацию или группу людей, а также с географическими названиями возможны обе конструкции.

the company's director / the director of the company  
Moscow's government / the government of Moscow

## 1. Постройте предложения, употребляя притяжательный падеж.

14.1

★ *(front, house)* needs painting. ⇒ *The front of the house needs painting.*

- 1
1. I don't know (*parents, girl playing with my child*).
  2. Put it in (*back, car*).
  3. The teacher expects (*these children, parents*) to come to the school.
  4. You'll find the sentence in (*middle, page*).
  5. (*effect, James, speech*) was great.
  6. This is (*my, cousin*) house.
  7. They sell only (*women, clothes*) here.
  8. I didn't get (*idea, article*).
  9. (*this woman, story*) impressed everybody.
  10. These are (*the Wests, friends*).

- 2
1. (*Moscow, centre*) is always busy.
  2. (*team, results*) are great.
  3. (*these doctors, practice*) is large.
  4. These are the pictures I took during (*last year, holiday*).
  5. (*yesterday, visitor*) has come again.
  6. You don't know (*rules, game*).
  7. I know little about (*this country, economy*).
  8. (*these passengers, seats*) are very comfortable.
  9. I can't meet (*these people, demands*).
  10. (*my sister-in-law, books*) are popular with readers.
  11. These are (*John and Sharon, children*).
  12. I didn't like (*these newspapermen, questions*).
  13. These are (*my, children*) toys.
  14. The teacher praised (*Martin and Carol, papers*).

## Переведите.

14.2

- 1
1. Лекции этих профессоров интересные.
  2. Доход этих полицейских довольно высок.
  3. Дайте я взгляну на мотор машины.
  4. Мне не понравился конец рассказа.
  5. Мне нравятся картины этих детей.
  6. Вас хочет видеть управляющий магазина.
  7. Мне не понравилось выражение ее лица.
  8. Постояльцы гостиницы собрались на первом этаже.
  9. Это зонтик женщины, сидящей за тем столом.
  10. Мне понравились ответы Кэрол и Сью.
- 2
1. Вы знаете причину аварии?
  2. Новое платье этой девочки красивое.
  3. Вчерашняя газета на столе.
  4. Ты знаешь адреса этих людей?
  5. Сад Смитов — самый красивый в городке.
  6. Листья этого дерева желтые.
  7. Я пропустил начало спектакля.
  8. Не пропусти завтрашний урок.
  9. Где работы этих студентов?
  10. Он говорил о прошлогодней неудаче.
  11. Расстояние в милю — это недалеко.
  12. Комната Теда и Билла уютная.

Поставьте следующие словосочетания в форму множественного числа притяжательного падежа.

**15.1**

★ this boy, bag ⇒ *these boys' bags*

**1** -----

1. this engineer, work .....
2. my sister, clothes .....
3. this woman, secret .....
4. this country economy .....
5. my friend, advice .....
6. his teacher, question .....
7. this man, wife .....
8. my child, toothbrush .....
9. this city, mayor .....
10. this sheep, wool .....

**2** -----

1. this scientist, progress .....
2. her pupil, knowledge .....
3. this bird, nest .....
4. the top, mountain .....
5. this sportsman, coach .....
6. this president, aircraft .....
7. this farmer, goose .....
8. the page, book .....
9. the smell, cigar .....
10. (Mr.) Lee and Mrs. Lee, cottage .....

Закончите предложения, используя слова из таблицы.

**15.2**

room, hotel	author, name	children, wear
smell, dish	price, furniture	postman, mistake
guests, arrival	advertisement, soap	students, progress
sound, piano	president, country	team, play

★ I liked the place where we stayed. ⇒ I liked *the room of the hotel*.

1. I didn't get the letter in time because of .....
2. .... will take part in a summit meeting next week.
3. We knew about ..... beforehand and met them at the airport.
4. They lost again and I didn't like .....
5. .... helped the company to increase the sales.
6. I heard ..... and understood he was practising again.
7. I'm satisfied with ..... . They passed all the exams successfully.
8. I wanted to buy a new sofa but ..... in the shop was too high.
9. I was hungry but ..... was awful so I decided not to eat it.
10. I must buy some clothes for Teddy. Let's find .....
11. I've read the novel but I don't remember .....

Постройте вопросы, начинающиеся с *How much* или *How many* и ответьте на них при помощи *very little* или *very few*.

15.3

★ How much coffee have you drunk? ⇒ *Very little*.

1. .... cups of coffee have you drunk? .....
2. .... wine is there in the bottle? .....
3. .... cigarettes do you smoke a day? .....
4. .... people will come? .....
5. .... luggage do you have? .....
6. .... ice cream has he eaten? .....
7. .... days did you spend on it? .....
8. .... meat does the dog need? .....
9. .... oxen does the farmer have? .....
10. .... subjects does he study? .....

Переведите.

15.4

1 -----

1. У моей тещи много сестер.
2. Сестры моей тещи живут в другом городе.
3. У полиции много доказательств.
4. Возьмите эти лыжи.
5. У этих часов оригинальный циферблат (face).
6. Крыши этих домов плоские.
7. Это фотографии моих друзей.
8. У тебя есть карта мира?
9. У него два больных (bad) зуба.
10. Я люблю гулять в хорошую погоду.

2 -----

1. Это багаж тех англичан.
2. У меня много новостей.
3. Я свяжусь с вами через несколько дней.
4. Почему одежда твоего брата мокрая? Пусть он ее высушит.
5. Все эти часы дорогие.
6. Мне не понравились вопросы этих полицейских.
7. Физика — очень сложный предмет.
8. Это простая работа.
9. Мне не нравятся лица этих прохожих.
10. Ты знаешь результаты вчерашних матчей?

3 -----

1. Он дал мне много советов, но я не хочу им следовать.
2. Обложки этих книг красивые.
3. Сколько у тебя свободного времени? — Очень мало.
4. Сколько у него немецких книг? — Очень мало.
5. Я не ем много конфет.



6. Я не понимаю значение этого слова.
7. Мне не нужно много сведений об этой фирме.
8. Мне нравятся джинсы этих девушек.
9. Волосы ее детей длинные и красивые.
10. Это была ошибка доктора Брауна.
11. Тебе нужно немного терпения.
12. В саду Смитов очень много цветов.
13. Дети Джона и Элис очень милые.
14. Результат эксперимента был удовлетворительным.
15. Я не понял идею этой статьи.

**4** -----

1. Мне нравятся вопросы этих детей.
2. Я не знаю имен этих женщин.
3. Это мужские перчатки.
4. Команде мало везло в прошлом сезоне.
5. Дети знают мало английских слов.
6. Здесь мало света.
7. Тебе не нужно брать много одежды.
8. Он говорит, что у него мало теплой одежды.
9. Возьми деньги и отдай их Теду.
10. У меня замерзли ноги. Пойдем домой.
11. Плохие новости делают людей несчастными.
12. Он ест много фруктов.
13. Знание — сильное оружие.
14. Ребенок никогда раньше не видел овец.
15. Математика — точная наука.
16. Ты не видел сегодняшнюю газету?
17. Часы Ника и Сьюзан спешат.
18. Тренер этих спортсменов говорит, что они в отличной форме.
19. Мужья этих дочерей очень умные.
20. Сколько предложений ты перевел? — Очень мало.

# PRONOUNS

МЕСТОИМЕНИЯ

**1. Личные местоимения**

Личные местоимения имеют два падежа: *именительный* и *объектный*.


именительный падеж		объектный падеж	
<i>I</i>	I am ready.	Let <b>me</b> see the book.	<i>me</i>
<i>you</i>	<b>You</b> must do it.	I saw <b>you</b> yesterday.	<i>you</i>
<i>he</i>	<b>He</b> lives here.	Ask <b>him</b> to do it.	<i>him</i>
<i>she</i>	<b>She</b> is busy.	Tell her to come.	<i>her</i>
<i>it</i>	It is my bag.	Put <b>it</b> on the floor.	<i>it</i>
<i>we</i>	<b>We</b> are friends.	Explain it to <b>us</b> .	<i>us</i>
<i>you</i>	<b>You</b> know the truth.	I'll meet <b>you</b> at the airport.	<i>you</i>
<i>they</i>	<b>They</b> can help you.	Can you help <b>them</b> ?	<i>them</i>

**2. Притяжательные местоимения**


Эти местоимения определяют существительное и отвечают на вопросы *чей, чье, чья, чьи*.

Притяжательные местоимения имеют две формы:

	притяжательное местоимение в функции определения	притяжательное местоимение в функции существительного
<i>I</i>	<i>my</i> This is <b>my</b> bag.	It's your bag. Where is <b>mine</b> ? <i>mine</i>
<i>you</i>	<i>your</i> They are <b>your</b> friends.	She is my friend, not <b>yours</b> . <i>yours</i>
<i>he</i>	<i>his</i> It is <b>his</b> car.	I know her address, tell me <b>his</b> . <i>his</i>
<i>she</i>	<i>her</i> <b>Her</b> name is Jane.	His name is Tom and what is <b>hers</b> ? <i>hers</i>
<i>it</i>	<i>its</i> <b>Its</b> (the dog's) tail is long.	It's not the dog's bowl. I want <b>its</b> . <i>its</i>
<i>we</i>	<i>our</i> We like <b>our</b> teacher.	It's their children and that is <b>ours</b> . <i>ours</i>
<i>you</i>	<i>your</i> Can I have <b>your</b> book?	We like our teacher. Do you like <b>yours</b> ? <i>yours</i>
<i>they</i>	<i>their</i> Answer <b>their</b> question.	<b>Theirs</b> is a new house. <i>theirs</i>

 Обратите внимание на строгое соответствие употребления притяжательного и личного местоимения:

- **She** took *her* bag and left. Она взяла *свою* сумку и ушла.
- **The students** wanted to see *their* papers. Студенты хотели посмотреть *свои* работы.

 С существительными, обозначающими *части тела, предметы одежды, родственников*, как правило, употребляются притяжательные местоимения, а не определенный артикль.

- Close *your* eyes.
- Put on *your* hat.
- This is *my* sister.

**Замените выделенные слова личными местоимениями.****16.1**★ *Pete lives here. I saw Pete yesterday.* ⇒ *He lives here. I saw him yesterday.*

1. *Alice is my girlfriend. I love Alice.* .....
2. *Jane and I saw Mark but Mark didn't see Jane and me.* .....
3. I told *Steve and Carol* to come. ....
4. *My parents* liked the cat and bought *the cat*. ....
5. Why are *the books* on the table? Put *the books* on the shelf. ....
6. It's a nice bird. Listen how lovely *the bird* is singing. ....
7. *Your friend and you* are late again. ....
8. *My sister and I* are great friends. ....
9. I haven't seen *Pete and Alex* today. ....
10. *Steve and Mark* have invited *my friend and me* to the cinema. ....

**Измените выделенные части предложений по образцу.****16.2**★ This is not my pen. I want *my pen*. ⇒ *I want mine*.

1. This is my girlfriend and that's *his girlfriend*. ....
2. Their street is not as busy as *our street*. ....
3. These are my children and those are *her children*. ....
4. My flat is smaller than *their flat*. ....
5. It's not your umbrella. It's *my umbrella*. ....
6. My telephone doesn't work. Can I use *your telephone*? .....

**Заполните пропуски местоимениями.****16.3**

1. How many times a day do you brush ..... teeth?
2. We want him to stay with ..... in summer.
3. Mr. Smart is rich. .... car is very expensive.
4. Are ..... ready? — No, ..... am not.
5. Put down ..... telephone number and I'll put down .....
6. I met ..... parents yesterday and now he wants to meet .....
7. Have ..... read this book? Is ..... interesting?
8. Do ..... recognize the man? — Yes, I recognize ..... . But he doesn't seem to recognize .....
9. He put on ..... coat and left.
10. They asked me to help ..... fix ..... car.
11. We know it's ..... problem. But can ..... help ..... solve ..... ?
12. Don went to see ..... grandparents and Angela went to see .....

**Переведите.****16.4**

1. Она дала мне свой зонт.
2. Он открыл глаза и посмотрел на нас.
3. Ты рассказала ему об этом?
4. Моя сумка черная, ее — коричневая.
5. Это не ее ключи, а его.
6. Они хорошие люди. Они мне нравятся.
7. Посмотри на кота. Его хвост такой красивый!
8. Их дети студенты, а наши — ученики.
9. Я ответила на ваши вопросы. Почему вы не хотите ответить на мои?
10. Отдай им эту книгу. Эта книга их.

**1.**

<b>singular</b>	<b>I</b> Myself	<b>you</b> yourself (one person)	<b>he</b> himself	<b>she</b> herself	<b>it</b> itself
<b>plural</b>	<b>we</b> ourselves	<b>you</b> (more than one person) yourselves		<b>they</b> themselves	

I hurt myself.

You mustn't blame yourself.

He burnt himself.

She likes to talk about herself.

We'll take care of ourselves.

Why don't you read it yourselves?

Can't they find the way themselves?

Я ушибся.

Ты не должен себя винить.

Он обжегся.

Она любит говорить о себе.

Мы сами о себе позаботимся.

Почему бы вам самим это не прочитать?

Разве они сами не могут найти дорогу?



Возвратное местоимение от неопределенного местоимения **one** — **oneself**.

It's good when one can do everything oneself.

Хорошо, когда человек сам все может сделать.

**2.** Возвратные местоимения обычно **не употребляются** с глаголами:

- **to wash, to shave, to dress** в значении *умыться, бриться, одеваться*

He washed, shaved, dressed, and sat down to breakfast.

Однако возвратные местоимения употребляются с этими глаголами, если есть указание на того, кто совершает действие.



The child washed.

Ребенок умылся.

The man shaved.

Мужчина побрился.

The child always washes (by) himself.

Ребенок всегда умывается сам.

I can shave myself.

Я и сам умею бриться.

- **to concentrate, to feel, to relax, to meet, to behave, to afford, to hurry**

I don't feel well.

I can't concentrate.

They decided to relax a little.

The child always behaves well.

Я чувствую себя плохо.

Я не могу сосредоточиться.

Они решили немного расслабиться.

Ребенок всегда хорошо себя ведет.



Behave yourself!

I can't afford a new car.

Hurry up!

Веди себя хорошо!

Я не могу позволить себе новую машину.

Поторопись!

**3.** Возвратные местоимения могут употребляться в **эмфатических** конструкциях.

You yourself told us the story.

The party itself was boring.

Ты же сам рассказал нам эту историю.

Сама вечеринка была скучной.

Закончите предложения при помощи возвратных местоимений.  
Используйте слова:

17.1

to enjoy	to cut	to burn	to express	to introduce
to hurt	to find	to dry	<i>to blame</i>	to behave

★ It's only your fault. ⇒ *Blame yourself.*

1. He knows German rather well so it's not difficult for him to ..... in German.
2. Why is the girl crying? — She fell down and .....
3. Did you have a nice time at the party? Did you ..... ?
4. My finger is still bleeding. I ..... when I was cutting bread.
5. Why are you going to ..... as Mrs. Stone? This is not your name.
6. It's rather cold. Let them ..... well when they get out of the water.
7. We followed the direction and finally ..... near Pete's house.
8. It's dangerous to play with matches. One can .....
9. Children, please ..... Don't make so much noise.

Заполните пропуски соответствующими местоимениями.

17.2

1. He made ..... a cup of tea.
2. I've done two tests ....., but I can't do the last one. I hope you'll help .....
3. I dressed ..... very quickly and left the house.
4. They say they can carry the luggage .....
5. We met ..... only yesterday. She felt ..... fine. Can she have fallen ill?
6. You should phone her .....
7. I tried to concentrate ..... and find the mistake .....
8. Are you going to take your children to the sea-side with .....
9. In fact her name is Alexandra but she calls ..... Al.
10. They didn't go to Ann's party. She didn't invite .....
11. The woman is kindness .....
12. He'll finish the work ..... if he feels ..... better.

Переведите.

17.3

1. Сам Стив сказал мне об этом.
2. Сосредоточься, и ты все сам вспомнишь.
3. Позвольте мне представиться.
4. Вы хорошо провели время вчера?
5. Почему ребенок так плохо себя ведет?
6. Джейн посмотрела на себя в зеркало.
7. Я сам зарабатываю себе на жизнь.
8. Они купили эти книги для себя.
9. Мы перевели эту статью сами.
10. Я сам поговорю с управляющим.
11. Они сами видели эту информацию в газете.
12. Сам президент выразил им свою благодарность.
13. Ей самой не понравился этот человек.
14. Постарайся расслабиться и ни о чем не думать.
15. Хорошо, когда чувствуешь себя молодым долго.
16. Человек должен сам за себя отвечать.

**1. Местоимение *some* употребляется:**

- в утвердительных предложениях в значении
  - \* несколько, некоторые, какой-нибудь
 

I have <i>some</i> books for you.	У меня есть для тебя <i>несколько</i> книг.
<i>Some</i> people know about it.	<i>Некоторые</i> (люди) знают об этом.
Give me <i>some</i> interesting book, please.	Дай мне <i>какую-нибудь</i> интересную книгу.
  - \* немного, некоторое количество
 

Buy <i>some</i> bread, please.	Купи ( <i>немного</i> ) хлеба.
I have <i>some</i> time.	У меня есть время ( <i>немного</i> времени).
- в вопросительных предложениях, если говорящий что-либо просит или предлагает, а также в специальных вопросах
 

Can I have <i>some</i> coffee, please?	Можно мне ( <i>немного</i> ) кофе?
Would you like <i>some</i> coffee?	Хотите ( <i>немного</i> ) сыра?
Where can I buy <i>some</i> flowers?	Где я могу купить ( <i>какие-нибудь</i> ) цветы?
- в отрицательных предложениях, если отрицание относится не ко всему предложению, а к части предложения
 

Some children don't like bathing.	Некоторые дети не любят купаться.
-----------------------------------	-----------------------------------

**2. Местоимение *any* употребляется:**

- в вопросительных предложениях в значении сколько-нибудь, какой-нибудь
 

Are there <i>any</i> letters for me?	Для меня есть письма?
Is there <i>any</i> milk in the fridge?	В холодильнике есть молоко?
- в отрицательных предложениях в значении *нисколько, никакой*

I don't have <i>any</i> butter.	У меня нет ( <i>нисколько</i> ) масла.
He never gets <i>any</i> letters.	Он никогда не получает ( <i>никаких</i> ) писем.
- в утвердительных предложениях в значении *кто угодно, любой*

Any child can understand it.	Любой ребенок может это понять.
Give me <i>any</i> pen.	Дай мне <i>любую</i> ручку.

**3. Местоимение *no* употребляется в отрицательных предложениях.**

He has <i>no</i> milk in the fridge.	У него в холодильнике нет молока.
<i>No</i> clever man will say it.	<i>Никакой</i> умный человек этого не скажет.
Do any of you know this rule?	Кто-нибудь из вас знает это правило?

**4. Местоимения *some, any, no* могут употребляться как существительные.**

There were *some* nice apples in the shop, so I bought *some*.  
 You can have *some* tea. — But I don't want *any*.  
 How much money have you got? — *None*.

В этих случаях часто употребляется конструкция ***some of, any of, none of***:

I know *some of* these people. I know *some of* them.  
 I don't know *any of* these people. I don't know *any of* them.  
*None of* my friends liked the film. *None of* them liked it.

Заполните пропуски местоимениями *some, any, no*.

18.1

1. Are there ..... new houses in your street? — Yes, ..... of them are beautiful.  
 2. Do ..... of you speak Italian? — Unfortunately, ..... of us do.  
 3. .... child knows it.  
 4. Have you read ..... good books lately? — Yes, I've read .....  
 5. There are ..... new students in our group this year. I know everybody.  
 6. There isn't ..... fish for the cat today. I have ..... fish.  
 7. He asked me if I knew ..... of those people. I told him I knew ..... of them. They were all strangers to me.  
 8. .... of us can tell you how to get there. We all know the way well.  
 9. Could you say ..... words about it? — Not now. I have ..... time. I'm sorry.  
 10. How could you do such a dishonest thing! ..... decent person will do it.

2

1. Did you have ..... snow last winter? — Yes, there was .....  
 2. Are there ..... sentences you can't translate?  
 3. .... people always tell the truth. It's their principle.  
 4. Were there ..... of your teachers at the meeting? — Yes, there were .....  
 5. Choose ..... book you like.  
 6. In ..... of these books there are ..... pictures. They won't be interesting for the boy.  
 7. .... of his friends could help him. He was alone.  
 8. Can you give me ..... information about the man?  
 9. I've never seen ..... of them in my life.  
 10. He asked me ..... questions but I couldn't answer ..... of them.

## Переведите.

18.2

1

1. Некоторые люди всегда отдыхают на море.  
 2. Можно мне немного бумаги? — К сожалению, у меня нет бумаги.  
 3. Некоторые из его книг интересные.  
 4. Не могу дать тебе никакого совета.  
 5. Мать сказала, что девочка может выбрать любую игрушку.  
 6. Никто из них не смог прийти.  
 7. Я не хочу сок, я хочу воды.  
 8. Кто-нибудь из вас умеет водить машину?  
 9. Приходите в любое время.  
 10. Я уверен, что любой мальчик хочет научиться играть в футбол.  
 11. Здесь нет стульев. Принеси, пожалуйста, несколько стульев.  
 12. У него нет никаких доказательств.  
 13. В некоторых классах нет доски.

2

1. Кто-нибудь из вас знает его телефон?  
 2. Ты думаешь, что кто-нибудь из них сможет нам помочь?  
 3. Я не вижу причин для такого поведения.  
 4. У него были друзья, но сейчас у него их нет.  
 5. Ты можешь остановиться в любом отеле в этом районе.  
 6. Нет фильма лучше этого.  
 7. Ты когда-нибудь встречал известных людей?  
 8. Некоторые здания в этом городе очень старые.  
 9. Для меня есть письма?  
 10. Для вас нет никакой информации.  
 11. Можешь пользоваться любым из этих словарей.  
 12. Хочешь мороженого?



<b>some</b>	<b>any</b>	<b>no</b>	<b>every</b>
somebody someone something somewhere	anybody anyone anything anywhere	nobody no one nothing nowhere	everybody everyone everything everywhere

**1.** Производные местоимения от **some, any, no** всегда употребляются как существительные, а следовательно, служат в предложении подлежащим или дополнением.

Подобно местоимениям **some, any, no**, они подчиняются тем же правилам употребления в разных типах предложений.

*Somebody* is waiting for you in the next room.      *Кто-то* ждет тебя в соседней комнате.

I don't know *anyone* here.      Я *никого* здесь не знаю.

He told me *nothing* about it.      Он *ничего* мне об этом не сказал.

Are you going *anywhere* this summer?      Ты *куда-нибудь* поедешь летом?



Следует обратить внимание на то, что при употреблении этих местоимений в роли подлежащего глагол всегда стоит в единственном числе.

Now everything **is** clear.

There **is** nothing to eat.

Everybody **has** arrived.

**Is** there anybody in the room?



При употреблении местоимений **nobody, nothing, no one** глагол всегда стоит в утвердительной форме, так как в английском предложении может быть только одно отрицание.



*Никто* ничего не знает об этом.

*Ничто* не могло ему помочь.

|| *Nobody* knows anything about it.

|| *Nothing* could help him.

**2.** Производные местоимения от местоимения **every** употребляются во всех типах предложений.

I know *everybody* here.

Я здесь *всех* знаю.

The man doesn't seem to know *everything*.

Кажется, этот человек не *все* знает.

I've looked for the book *everywhere* but I can't find it.

Я искал книгу *везде*, но не могу ее найти.

Have you told *everyone* to come?

Ты *всем* сказал прийти?

**3.** Местоимения, образованные с помощью **one** и **body**, употребляются только в отношении людей и сочетаются с глаголом в единственном числе, но при этом они часто сочетаются с личными и притяжательными местоимениями *they, them, their*.

If *anybody* calls me tell **them** I'm out and put down **their** name and address.

*Everybody* has come, **haven't they?** — Yes, **they** have.

Заполните пропуски местоимениями, производными от *some, any, no, every*.

19.1

**+ body** -----

1. You needn't worry. .... knows that we expect them to come at 5.
2. Do you know ..... who can help us?
3. .... came to visit Paul in hospital and he was upset.
4. .... can tell you how to get there. The place is known to .....
5. I don't want to see ..... today.
6. .... told me about it but now I don't remember who it was.
7. If I were you I would ask ..... to explain everything to me. Why don't you ask Jack for example?
8. As ..... had told him when to come, he was late.

**+ thing** -----

1. We've coped with the work. .... is ready.
2. Do you know ..... about the matter?
3. I can't understand ..... . Please, explain what is going on here.
4. I didn't understand ..... in this text. Some sentences were difficult.
5. There was ..... on the table but I don't remember now what it was.
6. There was ..... on the table. It was empty.
7. Give me ..... to eat, please. I'm hungry. I can eat .....
8. We worked hard but ..... seemed to satisfy him.

**+ where** -----

1. Why are your clothes ..... ? Put them into the wardrobe.
2. I looked for the book ..... but couldn't find it.
3. Where did you go yesterday? — ..... . I stayed at home the whole day.
4. Have you seen this man ..... before? — I saw him ..... but I don't remember where it was.
5. I don't feel like going ..... . I'm tired.
6. Quarrelling will take us ..... . We'll only fall apart.
7. He lives ..... in the centre of the city.
8. I can't find my keys. — Where can they be? — ..... . I can't say where I put them yesterday.

**Переведите.**

19.2

1. В офисе кто-нибудь есть? — Да, кто-то тебя ждет.
2. В его словах было что-то настолько странное, что я ничего не понимал.
3. Знать все значит не знать ничего.
4. Я не мог его нигде найти, и начал волноваться.
5. Он говорит, что везде бывал и все знает.
6. Все согласны с вами. Мы сделаем все, что вы скажете.
7. Никто ничего не слышал об этом.
8. Кто-нибудь знает, где он живет? — Он живет где-то здесь, но я не знаю, где точно.
9. Можете спросить кого угодно. Вам скажут, что я прав.
10. Он хотел сказать ей что-нибудь особенное, но не мог ничего придумать.
11. Они могут быть где угодно. К сожалению, никто не знает, где они.
12. Кто сказал тебе, что ты можешь делать все что хочешь?
13. Ничто не казалось ему важным.
14. У тебя есть какие-нибудь дела?
15. Наш город очень красивый. Летом здесь повсюду цветы.

1. Местоимение **other** может употребляться как местоимение-прилагательное и как местоимение-существительное, при этом артикли употребляются по правилам. Как местоимение-существительное, **other** может иметь форму множественного числа.

**another** + **существительное в единственном числе**

I have read this book. Give me *another* one.

Я читал эту книгу. Дайте мне *другую* книгу.

Give me *another* pen. I need two pens.

Дайте мне *еще одну* ручку. Мне нужно две ручки.

**another** + **числительное** + **существительное во множественном числе**

I need *another two* days to finish this work.

Мне нужно *еще два* дня, чтобы закончить эту работу.

**other** + **существительное во множественном числе**

Do you have *any other* books about this country?

У тебя есть *другие* книги об этой стране?

Some people like such films, *other* people don't.

Некоторые люди любят такие фильмы, *другие* люди не любят.

**местоимение** + **other** + **существительное в единственном числе**

*His other* friends couldn't come.

*Остальные его* друзья не смогли прийти.

We can meet *some other* time.

Мы можем встретиться в *другой* раз.



*How many other* people do you want to invite?

*Сколько еще людей* ты хочешь пригласить?

**the other** + **существительное в единственном числе**

I saw him on the *other* side of the street.

Я увидел его на *другой* стороне улицы.



При этом существительное может опускаться:

He bought two books. He gave one to me and kept the *other*.

**the other** + **существительное во множественном числе**

Only three of you are here. Where are *the other* students?

Где (*остальные*) студенты?

**others**

Some people like such films, *others* don't.

Некоторые люди любят такие фильмы, *другие* — нет.



You have five bags. *How many others* do you need?

*Сколько еще тебе* нужно?

**the others**

I see only two books here. Where are *the others*?

Я вижу две книги. Где *остальные*?

**each other, one another**

Mary and John looked at *each other*.

Мэри и Джон посмотрели *друг на друга*. (два лица)

We all looked at *one another*.

Мы все *переглянулись*. (посмотрели *друг на друга*)

## Заполните пропуски местоимениями

*other, another, the other, others, the others, each other, one another.*

20.1

1. This bag is Mike's and ..... is mine.
2. I'd like to see ..... film with this actor.
3. Some children like drawing, ..... children don't.
4. Only five students are present today. Where are ..... ?
5. Can I have ..... cup of tea?
6. My ..... pupils are very good.
7. How much time do you need? — I need ..... two weeks.
8. Some of the books you need are on the table. .... are on the shelf.
9. Please show me some ..... tie. This one is too bright.
10. They have two sons. One is a schoolboy and ..... is a student.
11. How many ..... trees are you going to plant?
12. They looked at ..... and laughed.
13. Steve and I often play jokes on .....
14. The secretary has answered only three letters. When will she answer ..... ?
15. He knows a lot about his country but he doesn't know much about ..... countries.
16. Some people always come in time, ..... are often late.
17. He already keeps three dogs. How many ..... does he want to buy?
18. What is it in your ..... hand?
19. Let's wait for ..... for some time.
20. Why haven't you corrected ..... mistakes?
21. The Swifts are going to spend ..... two years in Australia.
22. Do you often phone ..... ?

## Переведите.

20.2

1. Я читал только три из этих книг, но я обязательно прочитаю остальные.
2. Принеси, пожалуйста, еще два стула.
3. Том и Роберт рассердились друг на друга.
4. У меня нет другого объяснения.
5. Она читает только любовные романы. Остальные книги кажутся ей скучными.
6. Ты сделал только два упражнения. Как насчет других?
7. Сколько еще вопросов он собирается задать?
8. Он опубликовал три статьи в этом году. Сколько еще он хочет опубликовать?
9. В комнате было полно коробок, старой одежды и других ненужных вещей.
10. Остальные мои родственники живут в другом городе.
11. Некоторые любят дарить подарки, а другие нет.
12. Где другой ботинок?
13. Другие гости скоро придут.
14. Можно мне еще яблоко?
15. Я не вижу здесь никаких других ошибок.

**1. Местоимения *either, neither, both***

- Местоимение ***either*** означает *один из двух* или *любой из двух*.

I see two dictionaries here.  
*Either* dictionary will do.

Я вижу здесь два словаря.  
Подойдет *любой*.

Here are two dictionaries. Choose *either*.

Вот два словаря. Бери *один из двух* (*любой*).

- Местоимение ***neither*** означает *ни один из двух* (*ни тот, ни другой*).

I see two dresses here but I like *neither*  
dress.  
*Neither* restaurant is expensive.

Я вижу здесь два платья,  
но мне не нравится ни одно.  
Ни один (из двух) ресторанов  
не является дорогим.

- Местоимение ***both*** означает *оба* (*и тот, и другой*).

I like *both* dresses.  
*Both* dresses are beautiful.

Мне нравятся *оба* платья.  
*Оба* платья красивые.

Иногда эти местоимения употребляются самостоятельно:

Would you like tea or coffee? — *Neither*.

*Ничего*.

Which of the two films would you like  
to see? — *Either*.

*Все равно какой*.

Do you know Steve or Fred? — *Both*.

*И того, и другого*.

**2. *either of, neither of, both of***

- После ***either of, neither of, both of*** всегда следует *the, these/those, his/our* + существительное во множественном числе или местоимения *them, us, you*:

*Either of us* can do it.

*Любой из нас (двоих)* может  
это сделать.

*Neither of these two men* speaks (speak)  
English.

*Ни один из этих (двух) мужчин*  
не говорит по-английски.

*Both of them* are happy.

*Они оба* счастливы.



В конструкции с ***either*** и ***neither*** возможно употребление глагола как в единственном, так и во множественном числе, однако употребление глагола в единственном числе предпочтительнее.

*Neither of the boys* wants/ want to go to bed.

*Either of the dentists* is/ are available. Which one do you want to see?

**3. Коррелятивные союзы *either ... or, neither ... nor, both ... and***

He is *either* tired or ill.

Он *или* устал, *или* болен.

I want *neither* tea nor coffee.

Я не хочу *ни* чая, *ни* кофе.

I'm *both* tired and angry.

Я *и* устал, и сердит.

- Обратите внимание, что если союзы ***either ... or, neither ... nor*** связывают подлежащие, то глагол-сказуемое согласуется с последним подлежащим. Если подлежащие связаны союзом ***both ... and***, то глагол-сказуемое стоит во множественном числе.

*Either they or Jack* knows it.

*Или они, или Джек* знают об этом.

*Neither my friend nor I* am a student.

*Ни мой друг, ни я* не студенты.

*Both Tim and Jack* have been to London.

*И Тим, и Джек* бывали в Лондоне.

Отреагируйте на предложенные ситуации при помощи *either, neither, both*.

21.1

★ Will you have tea or coffee? (It's all the same to you.) ⇒ *Either*.

1. Will you buy the green dress or the red one? (You don't like them.) .....
2. Will you take this or that book? (You need the two of them.) .....
3. Will you ask Carol or Margaret to come? (The two of them.) .....
4. Shall I or Steve help you? (It's all the same to you.) .....
5. Is Alice or Stella your girlfriend? (You don't date these girls.) .....
6. Shall we meet at four or at six? (It's all the same to you.) .....

Переделайте предложения при помощи *either (of); neither (of); both (of)*.

21.2

★ This girl isn't seven and that girl isn't seven. ⇒ *Neither girl is seven. Neither of them is seven.*

1. This man is a driver and that man is a driver. ....
2. This student isn't good and that student isn't good. ....
3. This glass is empty and that glass is empty. ....
4. You can rent this flat or that one. ....
5. I don't know this woman and I don't know that woman. ....
6. You can use this PC or that PC. ....

Переделайте предложения при помощи *either ... or, neither ... nor, both ... and*.

21.3

★ Steve lives in London and Max lives in London. ⇒ *Both Steve and Max live in London.*

1. Fred can't drive and George can't drive. ....
2. Ellen was born in June, or perhaps in July. ....
3. He studies law and his friend studies law. ....
4. I didn't forgive Steve and I didn't forgive Pete. ....
5. His niece lives in Italy, or perhaps his nephew does. ....
6. I asked Ted and Fred. One of them will give you a lift. ....
7. The pill doesn't help and the mixture doesn't help. ....
8. My son is a clever child and my daughter is a clever child. ....
9. I know his address and I know his telephone number. ....
10. I don't like detective stories and my friend doesn't like them. ....



Переведите.

21.4

1. Ни я, ни мой брат не женаты.
2. Мне нравятся обе картины.
3. Тебе нужна синяя ручка или черная? — Любая подойдет.
4. Он отправится туда либо на поезде, либо на самолете.
5. Я не умею ни плавать, ни кататься на коньках.
6. Ты знаешь ее брата или мужа? — Ни того, ни другого.
7. Ни одно из кресел не удобно.
8. Ни один из нас (двоих) не курит.
9. Кто-нибудь из них (двоих) покажет тебе дорогу.
10. То ли его жена, то ли его родители продают машину.
11. Они оба интересуются историей.
12. И Джеймс, и Сэм собирают марки.
13. Я не могу найти ни свои, ни твои ключи.
14. Она не купила платье, потому что оно было то ли дорогое, то ли мало ей.
15. Ни сегодня, ни завтра я его не увижу.

**Исправьте возможные ошибки.**

**22.1**

		
★ Do you like your tea with milk or lemon? ⇒ <i>Neither</i> . <b>RIGHT</b> .....	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
★ Her is the red car. ⇒ <b><i>Hers is the red car.</i></b> .....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input checked="" type="checkbox"/>
1. We asked they to stay with us. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
2. This is not my bag. That one is my. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
3. Have you read some articles on the problem? .....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
4. Did anybody come while I was away? .....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
5. May I have the other slice of bread? I always eat a lot of bread. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
6. Let her put on hers hat. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
7. Can they really do it theirselves? .....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
8. Go to the bathroom and wash the hands and the face. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
9. We can cope with the task ourself. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
10. I don't have no plans for the weekend. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
11. Not anybody can help him in this situation. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
12. We keep in touch with one of my cousins but I haven't heard about another one lately. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
13. We've known one another for a long time. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
14. Would you like juice or water? — <i>Neither</i> . ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
15. <i>Neither</i> of my fellow students failed the exam. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
16. Children, behave yourself! .....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
17. Shall I phone Alice or Judy? — <i>Any</i> . ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
18. He studies Literature, History, and many others subjects. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
19. You can ask anybody of us to help. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
20. Our is a lonely street. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
21. If everybody is here tell him to take his seats. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
22. Have you told the others what to do? .....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
23. I haven't got no news yet. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
24. <i>Neither</i> his children nor he want to stay there. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
25. Why have you come alone? How about others? .....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
26. It was difficult for her to concentrate herself on the text. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
27. Everybody seem to know him here. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
28. Some people believed the article, other said it was nonsense. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>
29. No of them remembered about my birthday. ....	<input type="checkbox"/>	<input type="checkbox"/>

30. Would you like the blue or the green blouse? — Any of them. ....
31. He is arriving on Friday or on Saturday. ....
32. It's their business. Don't interfere. ....
33. The question is so easy. Somebody can answer it. ....
34. Could you give me some more time, please? ....
35. Steve, are you going to take this book with yourself? ....
36. Will you invite Steve or Roger? — None. ....
37. The child is old enough to dress. ....
38. She announced she would stay with us other three days. ....
39. Both his car and mine is in the garage. ....
40. None of his teachers are satisfied with his work. ....
41. He likes to speak about himself. ....
42. They looked at each other but said nothing. ....
43. I don't feel myself well enough to leave the house. ....
44. You'd better try to relax. ....

**Переведите.****22.2**

1. У меня не было денег, и мне пришлось занять немного.
2. Он чувствовал себя плохо и хотел остаться дома.
3. Я боюсь, что может случиться все что угодно.
4. Ни его родители, ни он не курят.
5. Ученые из России, Германии и многих других стран приехали на эту конференцию.
6. В этом нет ничего странного.
7. Ты читал хоть одну из всех этих книг? — Ни одну.
8. Мне нужна еще неделя, чтобы принять решение.
9. Ты хотел бы что-нибудь съесть?
10. Они сами красили дом?
11. Они оба в отпуске, и ни один из них не придет раньше воскресенья.
12. Давайте поиграем в другую игру.
13. Его компьютер очень хороший. Мой — не такой хороший.
14. Я спросил двух людей, как добраться туда, но ни один не знал.
15. Она расстроилась из-за чего-то незначительного.
16. Некоторые люди читают газеты, другие слушают новости.
17. Ни его дети, ни мой сын не любят этого учителя.
18. Если в тексте есть какие-нибудь незнакомые слова, посмотри их в словаре.



19. Вы доедете туда на любом автобусе.
20. Другие картины этого художника неинтересные.
21. В доме никого не было.
22. Их дом очень большой. Наш — не такой большой.
23. Иди куда хочешь.
24. Некоторые мужчины бреются каждый день, другие мужчины считают, что это необязательно.
25. Все присутствуют, да?
26. Ты можешь пригласить кого угодно.
27. Он хорошо говорит и на испанском, и на французском.
28. Я хотел посмотреть три фильма в субботу, но не посмотрел ни одного.
29. Я не мог сделать бутерброд. У меня не было хлеба.
30. Что ты делал вчера? — Ничего.
31. Как давно вы знаете друг друга?
32. Если кто-нибудь позвонит, скажи, что я приду через полчаса.
33. Где другая перчатка?
34. Я сам отнесу костюм в химчистку.
35. Ты встречался с кем-нибудь на прошлой неделе? — Ни с кем.
36. Я и моя подруга учим английский два года, но ни одна из нас не может пока говорить хорошо.
37. Мне нужно еще три дня, чтобы собрать всю информацию.
38. Мы сами за себя заплатим.
39. Ни он, ни я не заняты. Мы оба можем вам помочь.
40. Где остальные? Будем их ждать?
41. Сколько еще словарей тебе нужно?
42. Ничто не могло его остановить.
43. Кто-нибудь из вас бывал в Испании?
44. Я сам красил дом.
45. То ли его друзья, то ли он сам видели этот фильм.

# **ADJECTIVES AND ADVERBS**

**ПРИЛАГАТЕЛЬНЫЕ И НАРЕЧИЯ**

- 1.** Прилагательное употребляется в качестве определения к существительному и отвечает на вопрос «какой?».

It's a *nice* day today.

Наречие отвечает на вопрос «как?» и употребляется:

- после глагола She always drives *carefully*.
- перед прилагательным I'm *awfully* sorry.
- перед причастием The excursion was *badly* organized.
- перед другим наречием He learns poems *incredibly* quickly.

- 2.** Наречия образуются путем прибавления суффикса **-ly** к прилагательным.

bad — *badly*      heavy — *heavily*      beautiful — *beautifully*      easy — *easily*

Некоторые прилагательные оканчиваются на **-ly**:

*friendly, lively, elderly, homely, lonely, lovely*

Они не имеют соответствующих наречий и могут употребляться только как прилагательные.

Mary is a *friendly* person. Мэри — дружелюбный человек.

Mary behaves in a *friendly* manner. Мэри ведет себя дружелюбно.



**good** — прилагательное; **well** — наречие

She is a *good* student. — She studies *well*.

В значении «хорошо себя чувствующий, здоровый» **well** выступает в роли прилагательного.

How are you? — I'm very *well*.

- 3.** В отличие от русского языка, после следующих глаголов употребляются прилагательные. (Они являются частью составного именного сказуемого.)

<b>be</b>	It is very <i>warm</i> today.	Сегодня очень тепло.
<b>feel</b>	I really <i>felt bad</i> .	Я действительно плохо себя чувствовал.
<b>look</b>	The dress <i>looks very nice</i> on you.	Платье очень мило на тебе выглядит.
<b>smell</b>	The soup <i>smells so good!</i>	Суп так хорошо пахнет!
<b>taste</b>	The cake <i>tasted wonderful</i> .	На вкус пирожное было великолепно.
<b>sound</b>	The name <i>sounds beautiful</i> .	Имя красиво звучит.
<b>seem</b>	The situation <i>seems serious</i> .	Положение, кажется, серьезно.
<b>get</b>	It's <i>getting cold</i> .	Становится холодно.

- 4.** Некоторые слова выступают в роли и прилагательного, и наречия, не изменяя форму.

<b>fast</b>	John is a <i>fast</i> swimmer.	John can swim <i>very fast</i> .
<b>hard</b>	This is <i>hard</i> work.	They <i>work hard</i> .
<b>late</b>	You are <i>late</i> again.	He often comes home <i>very late</i> .
<b>early</b>	She is an <i>early</i> riser.	She <i>gets up early</i> .
<b>daily (monthly, weekly, etc.)</b>	This is a <i>daily</i> paper.	The paper arrives <i>daily</i> .



Слово **hardly** употребляется только в значении «едва, с трудом».

I can *hardly* understand a word in this song.

**Закончите предложения.****23.1**

★ Tom learns languages very quickly. ⇒ Tom is a ... *quick* ... learner.

1. He speaks German very well. His German is very .....
2. This is a fast train. It runs .....
3. She is wearing good clothes. She is a ..... woman.
4. This perfume has a bitter smell. The perfume smells .....
5. Nick is a hard-working student. Nick works .....
6. It's easy to understand. You'll understand it .....
7. The planning of the flat is very bad. This is a ..... flat.
8. She is pale. She looks .....
9. His offer was unexpected. He offered his help .....
10. Our teacher explains everything clearly. Her explanations are .....
11. The children behave quietly today. The children's behaviour is ..... today.
12. My brother is a late-riser. He gets up .....
13. I'm not very well today. I don't feel .....
14. It's a perfect plan. The plan sounds .....
15. My Dad is a bad cook. My Dad cooks .....

**Зачеркните неправильный вариант.****23.2**

1. He must be a *bad / badly* student. He *hard / hardly* studies at all.
2. It's a *beautiful / beautifully* arranged bunch of flowers. It's *real / really* good / well.
3. I'm impressed how *fluent / fluently* she speaks English. Her language is *accurate / accurately*, too.
4. I'm not sure she is a *good / well* teacher. She is very *impatient / impatiently* with children.
5. She is a *wonderful / wonderfully* cook. All her dishes smell and taste *nice / nicely*.
6. I'm *absolute / absolutely* sure that it's a *real / really* pearl.
7. The task is *surprising / surprisingly* easy. I'm sure we'll do it very *quick / quickly*.
8. Sue looks *different / differently* after her illness. She doesn't feel *good / well* enough yet.
9. Your essay is quite *good / well*. You've been working *hard / hardly* lately.
10. He is a *slow / slowly* thinker but he does everything very *attentive / attentively*.

**Переведите.****23.3**

1. Это действительно известный архитектор. Странно, что тебе незнакомо его имя.
2. У этих цветов сладкий и тяжелый запах. В комнате невозможно спать.
3. Она так устала, что с трудом двигается. По-моему, она очень плохо себя чувствует. У нее бледный вид.
4. Поездка была хорошо организована, и мы хорошо провели время.
5. С дружелюбными людьми приятно иметь дело.
6. Она необыкновенно хороший помощник. Она очень усердно и быстро работает.
7. Этот журнал выходит раз в месяц. Он всегда красиво иллюстрирован.
8. Она радостно посмотрела на меня и сказала: «Это настоящая удача!»
9. Его слова «Надо действовать быстро, но осторожно» прозвучали неожиданно.
10. Едва ли можно сказать, что у нее хороший английский. Она плохо его знает.
11. Она часто оживленно болтает с друзьями. Мне кажется, у нее всегда хорошее настроение.
12. Ваш сын небрежно работает, и поэтому делает много ошибок.

1. Односложные прилагательные и большинство двусложных, оканчивающихся на -у, образуют степени сравнения при помощи суффиксов -er, -est.

ПОЛОЖИТЕЛЬНАЯ POSITIVE	СРАВНИТЕЛЬНАЯ COMPARATIVE	ПРЕВОСХОДНАЯ SUPERLATIVE
big	bigger	the biggest
easy	easier	the easiest

2. Многосложные прилагательные образуют степени сравнения при помощи слов **more** и **most**.

careful — **more** careful — the **most** careful  
interesting — **more** interesting — the **most** interesting

3. Некоторые двусложные прилагательные (*angry, clever, common, cruel, friendly, gentle, handsome, narrow, pleasant, polite, quiet, simple*) могут образовывать степени сравнения как при помощи суффиксов -er, -est, так и при помощи слов **more** и **most**.

common	commoner	the commonest
common	<b>more</b> common	the <b>most</b> common

good	better	the best
bad	worse	the worst
little	less	the least
much / many	more	the most



4. Сравнительные конструкции

- 1) 

прилагательное в сравнительной степени
--

 + 

than
------

This picture is *more beautiful than* that one.  
I'm stronger *than him*. I'm stronger *than he is*.

- 2) 

much (far)
------------

 + 

прилагательное в сравнительной степени
--

 + 

than
------

This picture is *much (far) more beautiful than* that one.  
*Эта картина гораздо (намного) красивее, чем та.*

- 3) 

as
----

 + 

прилагательное в положительной степени
--

 + 

as
----

This picture is *as beautiful as* that one.

- 4) 

not as (so)
-------------

 + 

прилагательное в положительной степени
--

 + 

as
----

This picture is *not as (so) beautiful as* that one.

- 5) 

the
-----

 + 

прилагательное в сравнительной степени ...
--

 + 

the
-----

 + 

прилагательное в сравнительной степени
--

*The more beautiful the picture, the more pleasant it is to look at it.*  
*Чем красивее картина, тем приятнее на нее смотреть.*



В отличие от русского языка, в первой части данной конструкции никогда не употребляется будущее время.

Чем лучше *будет* твое сочинение, тем выше оценку ты получишь.  
*The better essay you write, the higher mark you'll get.*

## Образуйте сравнительную и превосходную степени прилагательных.

24.1

- |                      |                       |                       |
|----------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. nice .....        | 11. pleasant .....    | 21. convenient .....  |
| 2. cheap .....       | 12. low .....         | 22. large .....       |
| 3. expensive .....   | 13. busy .....        | 23. neat .....        |
| 4. bad .....         | 14. little .....      | 24. simple .....      |
| 5. hollow .....      | 15. quiet .....       | 25. intelligent ..... |
| 6. lucky .....       | 16. interesting ..... | 26. many .....        |
| 7. wonderful .....   | 17. light .....       | 27. bitter .....      |
| 8. shy .....         | 18. good .....        | 28. small .....       |
| 9. cruel .....       | 19. surprising .....  | 29. boring .....      |
| 10. attractive ..... | 20. few .....         | 30. heavy .....       |

## Сравните двух друзей: Сэма и Марка.

24.2

★ Sam is 30. Mark is 32. ⇒ Sam *is younger than Mark*.

- Sam is almost two meters tall. Mark is 1 meter 79 tall. Mark .....
- Sam has three children. Mark has two children. Mark .....
- Sam has a four-room flat. Mark has a three-room flat. Sam .....
- Sam earns \$2000 a month. Mark earns \$1500 a month. Mark .....
- Sam is very handsome. Mark is not very handsome. Sam .....
- Sam speaks three foreign languages. Mark speaks two foreign languages. Sam .....
- Sam is very practical. Mark is not very practical. Mark .....
- Sam is a very good driver. Mark is not a very good driver. Sam .....
- Sam is not very experienced. Mark is very experienced. Mark .....

Закончите предложения при помощи конструкции с союзом *than*.

24.3

★ He isn't very intelligent. ⇒ *You are more intelligent than him (... than he is)*.

- She doesn't know very much. You .....
- He isn't very old. They .....
- I'm not a very good singer. She .....
- We haven't got so much spare time. He .....
- They don't read very interesting books. I .....

## Составьте предложения при помощи конструкции

24.4

"*much (far) + сравнительная степень прилагательного + than*".

★ Chinese, much, difficult, French ⇒ *Chinese is much more difficult than French*.

- the plane, much, fast, the train .....
- Northern Ireland, far, small, Australia .....
- dogs, much, clever, cats? .....
- diamonds, far, expensive, rubies .....
- discos, much, noisy, cinemas .....
- speaking a foreign language, much, useful, reading it? .....
- the Mediterranean, far, warm, the Baltic sea .....
- football, much, dangerous, golf .....
- married women, much, happy, single women? .....
- Brazilian shoes, much, good, Russian shoes .....

**Ответьте на вопросы при помощи конструкции с союзом *as ... as*.**

**24.5**

★ Which ballet do you think is better? (*beautiful*) ⇒ *I believe this ballet is as beautiful as that.*

1. Which essay do you like better? (*bad*) .....
2. Which flat do you like better? (*comfortable*) .....
3. Which plan do you like better? (*effective*) .....
4. Which textbook do you think is better? (*good*) .....
5. Which dress do you like better? (*colourful*) .....

**Измените предложения.**

**24.6**

★ This exercise is easier than that ⇒ *This exercise isn't as difficult as that.*

1. The book is more interesting than I expected. ....
2. He is cleverer than he can seem. ....
3. Mary and Charles have fewer children than Rachel and Steve. ....
4. His answer at the exam was worse than his friend's. ....
5. This test is longer than that. ....
6. My brother is older than he looks. ....
7. Kate's room is smaller than her sister's. ....
8. This information is more useful than that. ....
9. She spends less time on cooking than her mother. ....
10. The Mercedes is more expensive than the Ford. ....

**Измените предложения, используя превосходную степень прилагательных.**

**24.7**

★ This is a very important event. (*of the year*) ⇒ *This is the most important event of the year.*

1. This is a very exciting book. (*in his collection*) .....
2. This is a very high mountain. (*in the world*) .....
3. He is a very noisy person. (*at the party*) .....
4. She is a very good doctor. (*I know*) .....
5. This is a very beautiful park. (*in the city*) .....

**Измените предложения, используя превосходную степень прилагательных.**

**24.8**

★ This is a very funny film. (*at the festival*) ⇒ *This is one of the funniest films at the festival.*

1. This is a very old cathedral. (*in the country*) .....
2. This is a very bad experience. (*in my life*) .....
3. He is a very successful businessman. (*in this company*) .....
4. This is a very powerful machine. (*at the plant*) .....
5. Monday is always a very busy day. (*of the week*) .....

**Ответьте на вопросы.**

**24.9**

★ Which is cleverer: the monkey, the cow, or the kangaroo? ⇒ *The kangaroo is cleverer than the cow but the monkey is the cleverest.*

1. Which is faster: the coach, the train, or the plane? .....
2. Which is bigger: Canada, the USA, or Russia? .....
3. Which is more difficult: German, Spanish, or Vietnamese? .....

4. Which is sweeter: strawberries, oranges, or mandarins? .....
5. Which is more frightening: thrillers, detective stories, or biography novels? .....

**Раскройте скобки, используя конструкцию *the ... the*.**

**24.10**

1. (*responsible*) you are, (*few*) problems you get. ....
2. (*popular*) the person is, (*little*) spare time he has. ....
3. (*many*) cigarettes you smoke, (*bad*) it is for your health. ....
4. (*modern*) the car, (*expensive*) it is. ....
5. (*tall*) the person is, (*thin*) he usually is. ....
6. (*hard*) your work is, (*tired*) you feel. ....
7. (*nervous*) you are, (*many*) mistakes you make. ....
8. (*large*) the house, (*difficult*) it is to keep it tidy. ....
9. (*long*) the flight, (*hungry*) you feel. ....
10. (*good*) dictionary you use, (*good*) your knowledge is. ....

**Переведите.**

**24.11**

- 1** -----
1. Она всегда покупает только самую дорогую одежду. — Но ведь она и самая хорошая, не так ли?
  2. Какая дорога к пляжу короче: через лес или через поле? — Дорога через поле занимает больше времени, и к тому же в поле гораздо жарче, чем в лесу.
  3. Чем меньше у меня времени, тем больше я нервничаю.
  4. Это один из самых смешных эпизодов в фильме.
  5. Сегодняшняя домашняя работа не такая трудная, как вчерашняя.
  6. Этот актер гораздо более талантлив, чем его партнер.
  7. Как вы думаете, какое открытие самое важное и известное в мире?
  8. Мой младший сын делает меньше ошибок в диктантах, чем остальные. Его учитель говорит, что он один из самых усердных и умных учеников в классе.
  9. Чем больше у вас работы, тем меньше времени остается на семью.
  10. Ник гораздо ленивее, чем его друг Чарльз, хотя он и способнее.
- 2** -----
1. Это упражнение такое же большое, как и то? — Нет, оно короче, но гораздо труднее.
  2. Это один из самых старых и маленьких городков Европы. Улицы там гораздо уже, чем в современных городах.
  3. В этой газете меньше сведений, чем в той. Она не такая интересная, как та.
  4. Это самые плохие новости или есть еще хуже?
  5. Чем длиннее доклад, тем неинтереснее его слушать.
  6. Это лето гораздо жарче, чем предыдущее. — Да, а дождей меньше, чем в прошлом году.
  7. Джек такого же возраста, как и Поль? — Да, но он выше и кажется гораздо сильнее, чем Поль.
  8. Что лучше: учить или учиться?
  9. Вы сейчас больше заняты, чем утром? — Нет, у меня не так много дел, как утром.
  10. Это одна из самых красивых песен этой певицы. Она моя любимая.



Некоторые прилагательные имеют две формы в сравнительной и превосходной степенях.

**1. far ⇒ farther (further) ⇒ the farthest (the furthest)**

Форма **further** употребляется также в значении «дополнительный, дальнейший».

The shop is *farther (further)* along the road. Магазин *дальше* по дороге.

For *further* information speak to the secretary. За *дальнейшей* информацией обратитесь к секретарю.

**2. near ⇒ nearer ⇒ the nearest (о расстоянии)**  
**the next (следующий по порядку)**  
**next (следующий по времени)**

This bus stop is *nearer* than that one. Эта автобусная остановка *ближе*, чем та.

Where is *the nearest* telephone box? Где *ближайший* телефон-автомат?

Who is *the next* one? Кто *следующий*?

See you *next* Monday. Увидимся в *следующий* понедельник.

**3. late ⇒ later ⇒ the latest (о времени)**  
**the latter (второй из упомянутых; тот)**  
**the last (последний по порядку)**  
**last (прошлый по времени)**

Is there any *later* train to London? Есть ли более *поздний* поезд в Лондон?

I don't like his *latest* book. Мне не нравится его *последняя* (=недавно опубликованная) книга.

When does *the last* train start? Когда отходит *последний* поезд?

These are Ben and Steve. *The former* is a businessman and *the latter* is a dentist. Это Бен и Стив. *Первый* — бизнесмен, а *второй* — дантист.

I sent the information to Brian but *the latter* didn't answer. Я послала сведения Брайену, но *тот* не ответил.

Why were you absent *last* week? Почему тебя не было на *прошлой* неделе?

**4. old ⇒ older ⇒ the oldest (о возрасте вообще)**  
**⇒ elder ⇒ the eldest (только как определения со словами son, daughter, sister, brother, cousin)**



Формы *elder, the eldest* никогда не употребляются в сравнительных конструкциях.

My husband is a year *older* than me. Мой муж на год *старше* меня.

Which of your friends is *the oldest*? Кто из твоих друзей *самый старший*?

My *elder* brother is eight years *older* than me. Мой *старший* брат на 8 лет *старше* меня.

Tina is *the eldest* of the three sisters. Тина — *самая старшая* из трех сестер.



Некоторые из вышеуказанных форм употребляются также в качестве наречия.

I'd like to sit *nearer* to the door. Мне бы хотелось сидеть *поближе* к двери.

He'll come a little *later*. Он придет немного *позже*.

She lives *farthest of all* from the centre. Она живет *дальше всех* от центра.

Раскройте скобки, употребив слова в необходимой форме сравнительной или превосходной степеней.

25.1

- 1
1. She has two children. Her ..... (*old*) son is twenty-five years old.
  2. If you need any ..... (*far*) help, just ask us. — Thank you.
  3. The new library is much ..... (*near*) to my house than the old one.
  4. This building is one of ..... (*old*) in the street.
  5. Could you tell me the way to ..... (*near*) bus stop, please? — You should walk ..... (*far*) along the street and take ..... (*near*) turn to the right.
  6. You can consult Dr. Sleet or Dr. Nuttle. — I'm afraid I don't know the former, so I'd rather speak to ..... (*late*). I'll phone him ..... (*near*) week.
  7. Pete was ..... (*near*) to answer.
  8. This must be ..... (*old*) actress of this theatre.
  9. Have you heard ..... (*late*) news? — No, what's the matter?
  10. Is your father much ..... (*old*) than your mother?

- 2
1. Is that ..... (*late*) bus to Greenford? — No, there is one more in half an hour.
  2. What is her ..... (*old*) sister like?
  3. Her house seems to be ..... (*far*) from the station! I'm too tired to walk ..... (*far*)!
  4. Of all the children in the family Dick is ..... (*old*).
  5. Is it only six o'clock? I thought it was much ..... (*late*).
  6. Nobody agreed with George and our ..... (*far*) discussion was quite heated.
  7. I said to the woman, "Excuse me, can you help me?" But ..... (*late*) didn't even react.
  8. Is this ..... (*late*) edition of the book? — Yes, it is. It was published ..... (*late*) month.
  9. How much is your cousin ..... (*old*) than you? — Actually, we are the same age.
  10. I missed my station and had to go as far as ..... (*near*) station to change trains.

Переведите.

25.2

- 1
1. Последний вопрос на экзамене часто самый трудный.
  2. Следующая остановка — ваша.
  3. Вы не могли бы позвонить чуть попозже? Он сейчас занят.
  4. Ближайший кинотеатр в десяти минутах ходьбы отсюда.
  5. У моей жены есть старший брат. Он намного старше ее.
  6. Его последняя статья опять на ту же тему, да?
  7. Секретарь в соседней комнате? — Да.
  8. Мне нравится и Кевин, и Филип. Первый очень вежлив, а второй очень красив.
  9. Я не знаю, какой театр в Москве является старейшим. А ты?
  10. Он хочет поступить еще в один университет, чтобы получить дальнейшее образование.
- 2
1. Чем позже ты придешь, тем хуже.
  2. Уильям — самый старший из трех братьев.
  3. Есть ли еще какая-нибудь больница ближе к дому, чем эта? — Нет, остальные гораздо дальше.
  4. Мой друг не старше меня.
  5. Последняя пьеса этого писателя весьма популярна среди читателей.
  6. Это был последний раз, когда вы его видели?
  7. Учитель задал студенту вопрос несколько раз, но тот все молчал.
  8. Когда ты придешь в следующий раз? — Может, на следующей неделе.
  9. Твоя двоюродная сестра старше тебя? — Да, на три года.
  10. Мой дом самый дальний от остановки.

**1. Наречия имеют такие же степени сравнения, как и прилагательные.**

Односложные наречия, а также наречие **early** образуют степени сравнения при помощи суффиксов **-er, -est**.

Все остальные наречия образуют степени сравнения при помощи слов **more** и **most**.



В отличие от прилагательных, *перед наречием в превосходной степени никогда не употребляется определенный артикль.*

СТЕПЕНЬ СРАВНЕНИЯ		
ПОЛОЖИТЕЛЬНАЯ POSITIVE	СРАВНИТЕЛЬНАЯ COMPARATIVE	ПРЕВОСХОДНАЯ SUPERLATIVE
soon	sooner	soonest
early	earlier	earliest
carefully	more carefully	most carefully



well	better	best
badly	worse	worst
little	less	least
much	more	most
far	farther (further)	farthest (furthest)

**2. Наречия употребляются в таких же сравнительных конструкциях, как и прилагательные.**

David writes essays *better than* his brother.

Sarah speaks English *much more fluently than* her friend.

My parents get up *as early as* me.

Nick *doesn't speak as rudely as* Mark.

*The faster* you do it, *the sooner* you'll go for a walk.



Обратите внимание на варианты перевода предложений типа:

Он занимается *меньше всех*.  He studies *least of all*.  
He studies *less than anyone else*.

Образуйте от прилагательных в скобках наречия и употребите их в соответствующей степени сравнения.

26.1

★ He can run much (*quick*) than me. ⇒ *He can run much more quickly than me.*

1. .... (*far*) he went, the more tired he got.
2. Speak ..... (*slow*), please. We can't understand English well enough yet.
3. I was surprised that Henry ran ..... (*fast*) of all.
4. You don't know the poem as ..... (*good*) as you should.
5. Mrs. Nickson behaves ..... (*impatient*) and ..... (*nervous*) than her husband.
6. He usually answers as ..... (*bad*) at the exam as at the lesson.
7. .... (*early*) you leave, ..... (*soon*) you'll arrive.
8. Luis speaks much ..... (*polite*) than his friend.
9. She treats the child ..... (*gentle*) of all his relatives.
10. I believe you aren't doing enough. You must work ..... (*hard*).

Зачеркните неправильный вариант.

26.2

1. He is as *good / well / best*- educated as his boss.
2. The people who win arguments are usually the ones who can speak *the calmest / calmliest / most calmly*.
3. In such cases I get *angrier / more angrier / more angrily* than my mother.
4. This cake tastes far *more delicious / more deliciously / deliciouslier* than that one.
5. *The less carefully / The least carefully / The more carefully* you work, *the worst / worst / the worse / worse* mistakes you make.
6. This is a *more safer / more safely / saflier / safer* kind of sport than that.
7. He learns languages as *quickly / quick / more quickly* and *easier / easy / easily* as his sister.
8. You must do your *better / best / the best / good* to help them.
9. It's *more pleasantly / most pleasantly / more pleasant* to spend summer in the country than in town.
10. Is this really *most widely / widest / the most widely / the most wide* -used method?

Переведите.

26.3

1. Те, кто громче всех кричит, часто не самые умные.
2. Она как-то странно смеется. — Да, но ее брат смеется еще более странно.
3. Он пишет по-французски так же плохо, как и говорит на нем.
4. Чем раньше ты встанешь, тем легче тебе будет работать.
5. Этого я меньше всего ожидаю.
6. Она не так терпеливо относится к людям, как мне хотелось бы.
7. Моя комната гораздо красивее украшена к празднику, чем комната моих родителей.
8. Ты не можешь рисовать так же хорошо, как Уолт. Он рисует лучше всех.
9. Обычно он слушает учителя более внимательно, чем остальные.
10. Чем больше (усерднее) он работает, тем хуже спит.

**Исправьте ошибки.**

**27.1**

- 1** -----
1. This is one of the most interesting program on TV. ....
  2. The least you know the best. ....
  3. Pat is taller than I. ....
  4. Mike is not as quick than Paul. ....
  5. He is older than you three years. ....
  6. I tried hardly but couldn't do anything. ....
  7. He spoke politer than usual. ....
  8. Their house is modern as ours. ....
  9. Let me know if you need farther help. ....
  10. Brian is the oldest brother. ....

- 2** -----
1. He knows the lesson more better than you. ....
  2. It's nicely of you! ....
  3. I'm awful sorry! ....
  4. He smiled at me friendly. ....
  5. The operation was more painful I expected. ....
  6. She sings the best of all. ....
  7. Is your sister elder than you? ....
  8. She receives as more letters as him. ....
  9. Is it a really sapphire? ....
  10. She looked nervous out of the window. ....
  11. Is it really such a good-paid job? ....
  12. It's much farer than that! ....
  13. The dish smells nicely. What is it? ....
  14. I still feel badly. ....
  15. He speaks well English. ....

**Вставьте пропущенные слова для образования  
необходимой сравнительной конструкции.**

**27.2**

1. This chair is ..... comfortable ..... the others.
2. Peter is ..... smartest of all my students.
3. This rule isn't ..... difficult ..... that one.
4. .... cheerful the child is, ..... better his mood is.
5. She speaks English ..... fluently ..... her friends.

**Раскройте скобки, употребив прилагательное или наречие  
в необходимой форме и добавив все необходимые слова.**

**27.3**

- ★ The black dress is far (*expensive / expensively*) the blue one. ⇨  
***The black dress is far more expensive than the blue one.***
1. Why didn't he greet me (*warm / warmly*) the others? .....
  2. He is (*frequent / frequently*) visitor here. ....
  3. Is he really so (*incredible / incredibly*) famous? — Oh yes, he is (*popular / popularly*) singer nowadays. ....
  4. That won't suit her. She prefers to wear much (*bright / brightly*) coloured clothes. ....
  5. Which is (*dangerous / dangerously*): tennis or horse-riding? .....
  6. He laughs (*good / well*) who laughs (*late / lately*). ....

7. This girl has a (*good / well*) pronunciation. She reads (*fluent / fluently*) and (*clear / clearly*) ..... the other children in her class. ....
8. It's raining even (*heavy / heavily*) yesterday, but the wind isn't (*strong / strongly*) it was. ....
9. Which is (*difficult*) task in the textbook? .....
10. (*hard / hardly*) he works, (*successful / successfully*) he becomes. ....
11. This is the subject he knows (*bad / badly*). It is (*interesting / interestingly*) for him. ....
12. What can be (*pleasant / pleasantly*) to spend a rainy day in a comfortable armchair in front of a TV set? .....
13. Very often when learners of English are asked to imitate native speakers they start to speak (*indistinct / indistinctly*) possible. ....
14. Jack is (*slow / slowly*) person I know. (*Long*) I listen to him, (*impatient / impatiently*) I get. ....
15. All parents hope their children will live (*happy / happily*) they do. They want their children's life to be (*difficult*) theirs. ....

## Переведите.

27.4

1. -----
  1. Он хуже всех справляется с работой. Он самый ленивый студент.
  2. Этот писатель не так хорошо известен, как тот, но его последнее произведение пользуется большим успехом.
  3. Это действительно сложное упражнение. Остальные гораздо легче него.
  4. Чем короче стихотворение, тем легче его выучить, не так ли?
  5. Что полезнее: ходить пешком или бегать трусцой?
  6. Теперь я лучше себя чувствую, но мне еще тяжело долго работать.
  7. Ты должен вежливее разговаривать с людьми, иначе они подумают, что ты плохо воспитан.
  8. Это одна из самых душных комнат в офисе. Я здесь ужасно устаю.
  9. Ваша задача сделать как можно меньше ошибок, но закончить как можно быстрее.
  10. Я за тобой едва поспеваю (to catch up with smb.). Ты всегда так быстро ходишь?
2. -----
  1. Интересно, есть ли кто-нибудь удачливее тебя?
  2. Дети любят петь, но часто делают это плохо.
  3. Хотя эта квартира меньше моей, она удобнее, и кроме того, удивительно дешевая.
  4. Как вы думаете, каковы будут дальнейшие события?
  5. Чем ближе работа к дому, тем меньше времени вы тратите на дорогу.
  6. У моего старшего брата двое детей. Сын на два года старше дочери.
  7. Все ею восхищаются. Что бы она ни делала, она все делает великолепно, лучше всех.
  8. И Энн, и Кейт красивые девушки. Последняя замужем.
  9. Он сова (to be a late-riser)? — Нет, он рано встает, раньше, чем остальные члены семьи. Он считает, что это более практично и удобно.
  10. Чем меньше советов она тебе даст, тем лучше. Ее советы так же бесполезны, как и ее помощь.
  11. Давайте обсудим следующий вопрос. — Давайте сделаем это позже. У меня ужасно болит голова.
  12. Это самая серьезная проблема, мы должны обсудить ее как можно тщательнее.
  13. Фруктовый салат очень вкусный, но мне кажется, лучше класть меньше яблок.
  14. Если ты будешь заниматься ежедневно, ты будешь говорить на иностранном языке быстрее и правильнее.
  15. Даже если ты в плохом настроении, надо приветливее обращаться с клиентами, нельзя быть таким грубым.

**1.**



 + 



 + 



 +

I	don't speak	French	very well.
She	lost	her passport	last week.
He	met	Sue	at the concert.

**2.** Обстоятельства ставятся в предложении в следующем порядке: сперва обстоятельство *образа действия*; затем *места*; и последним — *времени*.

	<i>как?</i>	<i>где?</i>	<i>когда (как долго)?</i>
He slept	soundly	in his room	all night long.
She works	hard	at the office	every day.

После глаголов движения (*go, come, leave, etc.*) обстоятельства обычно употребляются в другой последовательности:

	<i>куда?</i>	<i>как?</i>	<i>когда?</i>
He is coming	here	urgently	at five sharp.

**3.** *Always, never, often, sometimes, usually, also, probably, hardly, definitely, etc.* стоят перед смысловым глаголом, но после глагола **to be**.

- He *probably* knows about it.
- They *sometimes* have lunch together.
- She *often* makes this cake.
- You must *also* speak to your father.
- We don't *usually* have lectures on Saturday.
- I am *never* late.

**4.** Существительное в предложении может иметь несколько определений. Они употребляются в следующей последовательности:

1. прилагательное, выражающее отношение или мнение говорящего;
  2. прилагательное, описывающее предмет.
- a wonderful sunny day  
a funny English joke

**5.** Несколько прилагательных, описывающих предмет, ставятся в таком порядке:

1. размер
    - а) высота, длина
    - б) форма, ширина
  2. возраст
  3. цвет
  4. происхождение
  5. материал
  6. назначение
- a large old brown wooden table (1а ⇒ 1б ⇒ 2 ⇒ 3 ⇒ 5)  
a blue Japanese lace tablecloth (3 ⇒ 4 ⇒ 5)  
a new bright nylon bathing suit (2 ⇒ 3 ⇒ 5 ⇒ 6)

**Расположите части предложения в правильном порядке.****28.1**★ the story, much, I, very, like ⇒ *I like the story very much.*

1. every day, she, half a pound of sweets, eats .....
2. are playing, in the yard, the children, ball .....
3. fruits, in the garden, grow, vegetables, they, and .....
4. large, my, have, in the country, a house, friends .....
5. my, I, in the classroom, pen, left .....
6. a lot of, writes, every day, he, letters .....
7. they, every Friday, parties, give .....

**Составьте предложения, соблюдая правильный порядок слов.****28.2**★ on Saturday, invited, to a party, he, a lot of people ⇒ *He invited a lot of people to a party on Saturday.*

1. together, chess, every other day, Henry and Joy, play .....
2. yesterday, Peter, some bad mistakes, made, in his Russian test .....
3. the Turners, last night, saw, at the cinema, we .....
4. raised, several times, the question, the chairman, at the meeting .....
5. the news, she, every morning, listens to, on the radio .....
6. in his room, Tom, at seven o'clock, morning exercises, does .....
7. both ... and, at work, her Dad, a lot, smokes, at home .....

**Расположите обстоятельства в правильном порядке.****28.3**★ He played last night very well at the concert. ⇒ *He played very well at the concert last night.*

1. We discussed the problem at Nick's place in detail in the evening. ....
2. She went home after that unexpectedly. ....
3. He explained it to her at lunch during their meeting carefully. ....
4. Peter prefers to work alone in the morning in his study. ....
5. He arrived safely home at the weekend. ....
6. My mother-in-law works all summer hard in the garden. ....
7. He wrote something on a piece of paper quickly after their conversation. ....
8. The children always play behind the house before supper noisily. ....
9. They came together to the party at about 9 o'clock. ....
10. She left for London at night / secretly. ....

**Вставьте в предложение наречие.****28.4**★ He is so impolite! ..... ⇒ *He is always so impolite!*

1. He can do anything in time. ....
2. Mike is the cleverest student. ....
3. They take a walk before going to bed. ....
4. She doesn't behave so impatiently. ....
5. He talks nonsense. ....
6. They are great friends. ....
7. You must say it again. ....
8. We have got much spare time. ....
9. We don't see each other nowadays. ....
10. I'm wrong. ....
11. She gets good marks. ....
12. My friend can play the piano. ....
13. She does extraordinary things. ....
14. The weather in England is the same two days running. ....
15. Children must go to bed in time. ....

<i>always</i>
never
definitely
always
usually
sometimes
also
never
seldom
often
probably
usually
also
sometimes
never
always



**Расположите определения перед существительным в правильном порядке.**

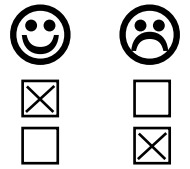
**28.5**

- ★ a towel: red, large, bath, thick, Chinese ⇒ *a large thick red Chinese bath towel*
1. ice-cream: strawberry, delicious, French .....
  2. a carpet: Persian, bright, wonderful, silk .....
  3. a girl: young, slim, tall .....
  4. a legend: old, Indian, beautiful .....
  5. a watch: charming, Swiss, wrist, gold, tiny .....
  6. a bag: green, ordinary, school .....
  7. a belt: leather, brown, unusual, Italian, new .....
  8. a supper: light, good, cold .....
  9. a face: round, tanned, small, pretty .....
  10. a dictionary: old, English, popular, school, thick .....
  11. an organizer: new, plastic, black, convenient .....
  12. chairs: Malaysian, massive, light-brown, wooden .....
  13. a machine: white, big, German, washing, new .....
  14. a ballet: old, well-known, Russian .....
  15. a mirror: dim, fantastic, Italian, ancient, tall .....

**Найдите возможные ошибки в порядке слов.**

**28.6**

- ★ He is often alone at home. — *RIGHT*
- ★ It's a tasty birthday enormous cake. — It's a tasty *enormous birthday* cake.



- 1** -----
1. They arranged to meet at the station at a quarter to five. ....
  2. He planned carefully the murder beforehand. ....
  3. They went with the Smiths on a picnic on Sunday. ....
  4. You also must know it. ....
  5. He probably knows everything about it. ....
  6. It was a clear summer night. ....
  7. He is a tall handsome young man. ....
  8. They grow aromatic, garden, yellow, big flowers. ....
  9. Mike has bought a huge modern Japanese TV set. ....
  10. He knew then nothing. ....

- 2** -----
1. She sometimes is too talkative. ....
  2. She goes shopping on Sunday with pleasure. ....

- |   |                          |                          |
|---|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| 3. They met in summer on board a ship. ....                                     | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 4. She is a sociable French young girl. ....                                    | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 5. They spent the night at the hotel. ....                                      | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 6. Tom hardly is nervous. ....  | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 7. I like loose light silk trousers. ....                                       | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 8. They spend in the country almost every weekend. ....                         | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 9. She smiled happily in her sleep. ....  | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 10. He learns thoroughly English words every day. ....                          | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 11. I'd like to buy new leather elegant Italian shoes. ....                     | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 12. He also very well plays chess. ....   | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 13. They speak loudly at meetings all the time. ....                            | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 14. The boss had to go unexpectedly somewhere after lunch. ....                 | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 15. My husband gave me a wonderful round Greek jewellery box as a present. .... | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |

**Переведите.****28.7**

1. Мне очень нравится этот французский мягкий цветочный лосьон для рук.
2. Утром ей работается лучше всего.
3. Эти цветы вечерами сильно пахнут.
4. Ты всегда вовремя приходишь на работу?
5. Нам надо купить новые большие книжные полки.
6. У нее много ярких больших и маленьких мягких игрушек.
7. Обычно он рано возвращается домой.
8. Ты не хочешь сходить со мной в воскресенье в кино?
9. Мне нравится твой новый шерстяной красный свитер.
10. Упражнения бывают иногда очень сложными, не так ли?
11. Выходные они проводят летом за городом.
12. Она покупает духи редко.
13. Наш поезд прибывает ранним утром в Петербург.
14. Она тратит на учебу тоже много времени.
15. Он плохо ответил позавчера на экзамене.

1. Глагол **have** и выражение **have got** по смыслу равнозначны. Глагол **have** строит вопрос и отрицание при помощи вспомогательного глагола **do**, а в выражении **have got** вопрос и отрицание строит глагол **have**.

He *has* a car. ⇨ *Does he have* a car? — Yes, he *does*. / No, he *doesn't*.

They *have got* a car. ⇨ *Have they got* a car? — Yes, they *have*. / No, they *haven't*.

They *have* a house of their own. ⇨ They *don't have* a house of their own.

She *has got* a house of her own. ⇨ She *hasn't got* a house of her own.

2. Выражение **have got** употребляется только в настоящем времени.

Глагол **have** может быть употреблен в настоящем, прошедшем и будущем времени.

We *'ve got* a three-room flat.

He *has* classes three times a week.

Did he *have* an English class yesterday?

We *won't have* any classes on Friday because our teacher is ill.

3. В следующих выражениях употребляется только глагол **have**:

- *have* breakfast (lunch, dinner, supper, a meal)
- *have* a drink (a cup of tea; coffee)
- *have* a walk
- *have* a rest (a holiday)
- *have* a party
- *have* a good time
- *have* a cigarette
- *have* a bath (a shower)
- *have* a look at something
- *have* a chat

I *don't* usually *have* coffee in the evening.

Where *does* he usually *have* lunch?

Hello, Ann. *Did* you *have* a good flight?

Сделайте предложения вопросительными и отрицательными.

29.1

- ★ The Browns have a nice garden. ⇒ *Do the Browns have a nice garden?*  
The Browns don't have a nice garden.
- ★ He's got three children. ⇒ *Has he got three children?*  
He hasn't got three children.

1. Tom has a large country-house. ....
2. They usually have lunch at one o'clock. ....
3. Mary has got two brothers. ....
4. I have a shower every morning. ....
5. Helen and John have got a three-room flat. ....
6. Little Ben has got a bicycle. ....
7. Kate always has tea for breakfast. ....
8. My Mum usually has a holiday in summer. ....
9. The child has got coloured pencils. ....
10. George has a family of his own. ....

Вставьте *have* или *have got* в нужной форме.

29.2

В некоторых предложениях возможны варианты.

1. .... she ..... any grandparents? — Yes, both her Granny and Grandad are still alive.
2. Did you go to Mary's birthday party? — Oh, yes, we ..... a grand time.
3. As far as I know, he lives with his relatives. He ..... a flat of his own.
4. What ..... you usually ..... for breakfast?
5. If you work hard, I'm sure you ..... any problems at the exam.
6. May I ..... a look at this book, please?
7. I ..... enough time to do the shopping yesterday, so I'll have to do it tonight.
8. I'm sorry, I ..... any present for you. — Never mind.
9. I couldn't answer the telephone as I was ..... a shower.
10. Could you lend me a fiver, please? — Oh, sorry, I ..... any money on me.
11. I think I ..... a holiday in August this year.
12. .... their daughter ..... dark or fair hair? — Actually, she is red.
13. I ..... dinner yesterday, I didn't feel quite well.
14. She ..... so many clothes she doesn't know where to put them all.
15. .... you ..... a good rest? — Yes, I really enjoyed it.

Переведите.

29.3

1. ....

1. Я ничего не пил за ланчем, потому что у меня очень болит голова.
2. У тебя есть фотоаппарат? Давай я тебя сфотографирую.
3. Я не буду устраивать вечеринку в день рождения, так как я уезжаю.
4. У Тома большая семья? — Да, у него брат и две сестры.
5. Я не могу дозвониться до Кейт. — Я только вчера с ней разговаривала.

6. Мистер Браун очень занят, у него сейчас нет времени разговаривать с вами.
7. Вы хорошо погуляли в воскресенье? — О да, погода была прекрасная.
8. У тебя много занятий по средам? — Обычно, 3 или 4 лекции.
9. У нее дома совсем не было цветов, и мне это не понравилось.
10. В этом магазине нет свежего хлеба. Пойдем в другой.

**2** -----

1. А у тебя есть своя собственная комната в вашей новой квартире? — Да, и она довольно большая.
2. Где мне найти мистера Пита? — Он вышел. У него деловой ланч с клиентом.
3. Если вечеринку сделать в субботу, то гости не будут рано расходиться. Им же не надо будет рано вставать в воскресенье.
4. У тебя есть брат или сестра? — У меня старший брат.
5. Сегодня утром у меня не было времени даже выпить кофе, поэтому я такая сонная.
6. Вы хорошо долетели? — Да, спасибо.
7. Не имею ни малейшего представления, о чем вы говорите.
8. Что случилось? Ты так взволнована! — Сегодня вечером у меня первое свидание.
9. Разве у тебя никогда не болели зубы?
10. Марк как раз выкуривал последнюю сигарету перед сном, когда в дверь вдруг постучали.

# **TYPES OF QUESTIONS**

**ВИДЫ ВОПРОСИТЕЛЬНЫХ  
ПРЕДЛОЖЕНИЙ**

### 1. Общий вопрос

**ВГ** + **подлежащее** + **сказуемое** + ...?

Требует краткого ответа:

**Yes / No** + **подлежащее** + **ВГ** .

Pete is reading.	Is Pete reading? — Yes, he is. / No, he isn't.
They are at home.	Are they at home? — Yes, they are. / No, they aren't.
I am right.	Am I right? — Yes, you are. / No, you aren't.
Mary lives in Leeds.	Does Mary live in Leeds? — Yes, she does. / No, she doesn't.
They learn English.	Do they learn English? — Yes, they do. / No, they don't.
I'd like to visit him.	Would you like to visit him? — Yes, I would. / No, I wouldn't.
He has a car.	Does he have a car? — Yes, he does. / No, he doesn't.
They have got a car.	Have they got a car? — Yes, they have. / No, they haven't.

### 2. Общий вопрос с отрицанием

**ВГ** + **not** + **подлежащее** + **сказуемое** + ...?

Употребляется для выражения удивления, недоумения.

— *Разве (Неужели) вы этого не знаете?* — **Don't you know it?**

— *Да, не знаю.* — **No, I don't.** / — *Нет, знаю.* — **Yes, I do.**

В английском языке обе части ответа должны быть либо утвердительными, либо отрицательными в зависимости от смысла ответа.



Предложения типа «У тебя **нет** ручки?» ничем не отличаются от обычных общих вопросов «У тебя **есть** ручка?» и соответственно переводятся на английский язык без отрицания. — *Do you have a pen? (Have you got a pen?)*

### 3. Альтернативный вопрос

- Строится так же, как общий вопрос.
- Задается к любому члену предложения при помощи союза **or**.

Is he a doctor *or* a teacher? — He is a doctor.

Do they live in London *or* in Liverpool? — They live in London.

Does Kate *or* Jack learn Spanish? — Jack does.

Would you like tea *or* coffee? — Tea, please.

Has she got black *or* blue shoes? — She's got blue shoes.



При ответе на альтернативный вопрос нельзя использовать слова **Yes** и **No**.

## Сделайте предложения вопросительными.

30.1

★ Nick likes strawberries. ⇒ *Does Nick like strawberries?*

1. John and Jill are married. .... ?
2. I'd like to go for a walk. .... ?
3. Victor is sometimes late for classes. .... ?
4. Alice knows the language very well. .... ?
5. The brothers watch TV every evening. .... ?
6. Rachel has very many friends in Paris. .... ?
7. Her elder brother is a second-year student. .... ?
8. Jane would like to spend a holiday abroad. .... ?
9. Paul's friends agree with him. .... ?
10. Irene's husband has got an expensive car. .... ?

## Вставьте вспомогательный глагол в следующие общие вопросы.

30.2

★ ..... you and Fred great friends? ⇒ *Are you and Fred great friends?*

1. .... your brother like playing volleyball? .... ?
2. .... you have any relatives in the Crimea? .... ?
3. .... your teacher a young woman? .... ?
4. .... you like to join me? .... ?
5. .... Charles' parents English? .... ?
6. .... Robert got a camera? .... ?
7. .... you tired after classes? .... ?
8. .... Mary often go to the theatre? .... ?
9. .... I wrong? .... ?
10. .... you always get good marks? .... ?

## Ответьте утвердительно.

30.3

★ Do you know this story? ⇒ *Yes, I do.*

1. Would you like to see this new film? .....
2. Is your brother twenty? .....
3. Are you English? .....
4. Does your mother cook well? .....
5. Have you got any nieces? .....
6. Do your friends like playing tennis? .....
7. Is your grandfather a pensioner? .....
8. Does he have a room of his own? .....
9. Would you like to go to the park with me? .....
10. Are his books popular? .....

## Ответьте отрицательно.

30.4

★ Does he know any foreign languages? ⇒ *No, he doesn't.*

1. Are you a first-year student? .....
2. Does she have any lessons on Saturday? .....
3. Is he at school? .....
4. Would you like to be younger? .....
5. Do your parents go in for sport? .....
6. Have you got any idea what to do? .....



7. Is this coat expensive? .....
8. Does your sister live with you? .....
9. Am I taller than her? .....
10. Would they like to stay there? .....

**Выразите удивление при помощи общего вопроса с отрицанием. Для построения вопроса используйте слова и выражения в скобках.**

**30.5**

★ I don't want any more meat. — (*to like*) ⇒ **Don't you like it?**

1. John is so late! — (*here, yet*) .....
2. My Dad can't help me with the homework. — (*to know English*) .....
3. June phones her mother almost every day. — (*to live together*) .....
4. Mark would like to have a brother. — (*to have an elder brother*) .....
5. I'd like to enter this University. — (*a student, now*) .....
6. Mary says she needs new black shoes. — Why? (*to have got*) .....
7. I can't play this game. — (*to know the rules*) .....
8. Whose magazines are these? — (*yours*) .....
9. Tommy is going to play football. — (*to have a headache*) .....
10. I often have to go out to have dinner. — (*your wife, cook well*) .....

**Переведите ответы на следующие вопросы.**

**30.6**

1. Isn't it your house? — Нет, не мой. ....
2. Mummy, don't you have enough money to buy this doll? — Да, нет. ....
3. Aren't your parents doctors? — Ну да, врачи. ....
4. Aren't your friends coming to the party? — Да, не придут. ....
5. Doesn't Nick have breakfast at home? — Нет, дома. ....
6. Isn't that woman your teacher? — Нет. ....
7. Don't you give French lessons? — Конечно, даю. ....
8. Haven't you got a cousin? — Есть. ....
9. Aren't you glad to come here? — Нет, рада. ....
10. Doesn't he like to go to the cinema? — Да, не любит. ....

**Переведите.**

**30.7**

1. Разве ты не знаешь этого правила? — Нет, не знаю. ....
2. У тебя нет этой книги? — Нет. ....
3. Неужели тебе не нравится эта музыка? — Нет, нравится. ....
4. Разве Дэвид тебе не друг? — Конечно, друг. ....
5. Ты не согласна со мной? — Согласна. ....
6. Неужели у тебя совсем нет свободного времени? — Нет, есть. ....
7. Вы разве не менеджер? — Нет. ....
8. Ты не помнишь эту песню? — Ну как же, помню. ....
9. Разве он не играет на гитаре? — Да, не играет. ....
10. Он разве не дома? — Нет, дома. ....

**Постройте альтернативные вопросы, используя данные утверждения.**

**30.8**

★ They like to go to the cinema, not to concerts. ⇒ **Do they like to go to the cinema or to concerts?**

1. He has a very interesting book, not his friend. .... ?
2. They are in Spain now, not in France. .... ?

3. My Dad reads newspapers in the evening, not in the morning. .... ?
4. Jane likes orange juice, not apple. .... ?
5. The box is light, not heavy. .... ?
6. I've got two children, not my friend. .... ?
7. We are sometimes late for classes, not often. .... ?
8. John makes few mistakes in his tests, not many. .... ?
9. Helen is their cousin, not their niece. .... ?
10. Robert is fond of reading, not his friends. .... ?

**Переведите.****30.9****1**

1. Ты не поздно работаешь? — Нет, я заканчиваю в 6.
2. У тебя есть планы на будущее? — Да, я хочу быть врачом.
3. Разве он не здесь живет? — Да, не здесь.
4. Они счастливы вместе? — Думаю, что да.
5. Вы бы хотели прийти в 5 или в 6? — Мне бы хотелось прийти после шести.
6. Разве у него нет машины? — Нет, есть. Он хороший водитель.
7. Вы ездите за город летом? — Да.
8. Твой брат женат? — Еще нет.
9. Они рано или поздно встают? — Довольно рано, в 7.
10. Ты не играешь в шахматы? — Ну, как же, играю.

**2**

1. Я опоздала? — Да, немного.
2. Тебе бы хотелось познакомиться с моей подругой? — А разве я ее не знаю?
3. Твой папа ездит на работу на машине или на метро? — На метро.
4. Твоя сестра говорит по-испански? — Нет, она учит немецкий.
5. Неужели твоя мама не помогает тебе? — Нет, помогает.
6. Вы больны? — Да, я плохо себя чувствую.
7. Он или его родители хотят переехать в другой город? — Его родители.
8. Он присутствует на занятии? — Нет, он болен.
9. У ее родственников нет дачи? — Насколько я знаю, нет.
10. Разве он не ваш начальник? — Да, начальник.

**3**

1. Это платье твоей сестры или твое?
2. У вас есть вопросы? — Нет, мне все понятно.
3. Ты не хочешь есть? — Нет, хочу.
4. Он изучает языки или историю?
5. Я не права? — Боюсь, что да.
6. Вы пьете чай или кофе на завтрак? — Я предпочитаю чай.
7. Ты дружишь с Ником? — Да, мы большие друзья.
8. Неужели у него совсем нет родственников? — Насколько я знаю, нет.
9. Твой брат интересуется историей?
10. Завтрак готовишь ты или мама? — Обычно мама.

1. Разделительный вопрос состоит из двух частей: повествовательного предложения и вопросительного «хвостика».

**повествовательное предложение**

+

**вопросительный «хвостик»  
(ВГ + подлежащее)**

?

Если первая часть утвердительная, то вторая отрицательная, и наоборот.

**You like ice-cream, don't you?**

Ты *ведь* любишь мороженое?

**Ann is a teacher, isn't she?**

Анна — учитель, *не так ли?*

**He has a lot of books, doesn't he?**

У него много книг, *не правда ли?*

**We can go for a walk now, can't we?**

Теперь мы можем погулять, *да?*

**I was right, wasn't I?**

Я была права, *правда?*

**They didn't know about it, did they?**

**We aren't late, are we?**

**I'm not badly ill, am I?**

**Nick hasn't got a car, has he?**

**You can't play the guitar, can you?**

2. Разделительный вопрос требует краткого ответа.

Brian is a doctor, isn't he?

— Yes, he is.

*Да. / Да, врач. / Нет, врач.*

— No, he isn't.

*Нет. / Нет, не врач. / Да, не врач.*

You don't know him, do you?

— Yes, I do.

*Знаю. / Да, знаю. / Нет, знаю. / Ну как же, знаю.*

— No, I don't.

*Не знаю. / Нет, не знаю. / Да, не знаю.*



Некоторые разделительные вопросы образуются особым способом:

- **I am late, aren't I?**
- **Everybody is here, aren't they?**
- **Let's have dinner now, shall we?**
- **Be careful, will you?**  
**Don't be late, will you?**  
**Close the window, will you?**  
**Don't close the window, will you?**

## Добавьте вопросительный хвостик.

31.1

★ All children like sweets, *don't they?*

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 1. You weren't present yesterday, ..... ?      | 13. They understand that it's important, ..... ? |
| 2. Victor can speak Spanish, ..... ?           | 14. I'm clever, ..... ?                          |
| 3. She is your niece, ..... ?                  | 15. Robert can't speak Spanish, ..... ?          |
| 4. You don't agree with me, ..... ?            | 16. Speak louder, ..... ?                        |
| 5. I am not mistaken, ..... ?                  | 17. This girl doesn't have many friends, ..... ? |
| 6. Let's discuss the problem together, ..... ? | 18. Everybody thinks so, ..... ?                 |
| 7. They've got a lot of work to do, ..... ?    | 19. We have some more time, ..... ?              |
| 8. Everybody is O.K., ..... ?                  | 20. Tim wasn't in town at the weekend, ..... ?   |
| 9. Mary didn't keep her promise, ..... ?       | 21. You are my best friend, ..... ?              |
| 10. Don't be angry, ..... ?                    | 22. I always come in time, ..... ?               |
| 11. We aren't alone, ..... ?                   | 23. She has a good job, ..... ?                  |
| 12. George and Kate never quarrel, ..... ?     | 24. Be quick, ..... ?                            |

## Выразите согласие, отвечая на вопросы.

31.2

★ You didn't promise her anything, did you? ⇒ *No, I didn't.*★ She is very beautiful, isn't she? ⇒ *Yes, she is.*

- You aren't in love, are you? .....
- They have your address, don't they? .....
- This man is Tom's uncle, isn't he? .....
- Everybody knows about the meeting, don't they? .....
- She never lies, does she? .....

## Выразите несогласие, отвечая на вопросы.

31.3

★ He knows the truth, doesn't he? ⇒ *No, he doesn't.*★ We aren't in a hurry, are we? ⇒ *Yes, we are. (But we are.)*

- She has a cold, doesn't she? .....
- They can't help us, can they? .....
- David is very friendly, isn't he? .....
- We haven't got the key, have we? .....
- I'm not older than you, am I? .....

## Переведите.

31.4

- Ты ведь не можешь мне ничего обещать? — Да, не могу.
- Сегодня прекрасная погода, не так ли? — Да.
- Не будь таким нетерпеливым, хорошо?
- У них большой телевизор, да? — Да, большой.
- Мы прекрасно провели вчера время, правда?
- Все довольны, не правда ли? — Думаю, да.
- Он сегодня отсутствует, не так ли? — Нет, он здесь.
- Я ведь права? — По-моему, нет.
- Давай спросим у него совета, а?
- Она не очень хорошо готовит, да? — Почему? Хорошо.



What do you think of this book?  
Where does your friend live?  
Where would you like to go?  
When is the next lesson?  
Why are you so upset?  
How do you get to school?  
How much does it cost?  
How many are you in the class?  
Who is she waiting for?

Что вы думаете об этой книге?  
Где живет твой друг?  
Куда бы вам хотелось пойти?  
Когда следующий урок?  
Почему ты так расстроена?  
Как ты добираться до школы?  
Сколько это стоит?  
Сколько вас в классе?  
Кого она ждет?



Предлог, относящийся к вопросительному слову, стоит в конце вопроса.

What are you thinking **about**?  
Who do you want to speak **to**?

О **чем** ты думаешь?  
С **кем** вы хотите поговорить?



Если вопросительное слово определяет дополнение, дополнение стоит сразу после вопросительного слова.

What *colour* are her eyes?  
What *kind of music* do you like?  
How *many things* can I take?  
How *much money* do you need?  
Whose *bag* is this?  
Which *dress* did you like?

Какого цвета у нее глаза?  
Какая (Что за) музыка вам нравится?  
Сколько вещей я могу взять?  
Сколько денег тебе нужно?  
Чья это сумка?  
Какое (которое) платье тебе понравилось?



What is **he**? — He is a doctor.  
What is **she like**? — She is kind and friendly.

Who is **he**? — He is my cousin. / It's Sam.  
What does **she look like**? — She is rather tall with long dark hair and wide brown eyes.



Обратите внимание на особую конструкцию вопроса:

How long does it take you to get to work?  
How long does it take to study to be a doctor?  
How long does it take by train from Moscow to Warsaw?

Сколько тебе надо времени, чтобы доехать до работы?  
Сколько надо времени, чтобы выучиться на врача?  
Сколько времени надо, чтобы доехать на поезде от Москвы до Варшавы?

## Составьте вопросы.

32.1

- ★ when, Kate, usually get up ⇒ *When does Kate usually get up?*
1. how, you, to make this cake ..... ?
  2. why, the children, not to be in bed yet ..... ?
  3. where, Mr. Brown, to work ..... ?
  4. how long, this film, to last ..... ?
  5. when, the manager, to have time for a short rest ..... ?
  6. what, you, to have got in this parcel ..... ?
  7. who, the teacher, to want to answer the question ..... ?
  8. how many, you, in the family ..... ?
  9. where, the chemist's ..... ?
  10. what, this word, to mean ..... ?
  11. how often, your children, to go for a walk in this park ..... ?
  12. why, he, to get so many bad marks ..... ?
  13. where, your daughter, would like to study ..... ?
  14. what, his son, to want to be ..... ?
  15. when, you, to have lunch ..... ?

## Задайте вопрос к предложному дополнению.

32.2

- ★ Little Tommy is afraid of dogs. ⇒ *What is little Tommy afraid of?*
1. Kate usually has dinner with her husband. ....
  2. Tom never thinks of other people. ....
  3. I must apologize to him. ....
  4. Vera is waiting for her friend. ....
  5. Nick likes to listen to loud music. ....
  6. Mr. and Mrs. Foster often go out with their friends. ....
  7. Anna's daughter dreams of travelling. ....
  8. Robert is interested in history. ....
  9. She never smiles at strangers. ....
  10. I'm looking for my textbook. ....
  11. This book is about wild animals. ....
  12. Rachel writes letters to her friends. ....
  13. This novel is written by a famous writer. ....
  14. I'm looking forward to my birthday. ....
  15. I always thank people for help. ....

## Задайте вопросы к выделенным словам.

32.3

- ★ I often take a walk *in the park*. ⇒ *Where do you often take a walk?*

- 1
- 
1. Mr. Smith wants *to see you*. ....
  2. Food shops in London close early *on Saturday*. ....
  3. George pays a lot of money for *his flat*. ....
  4. Mr. Bennett gets to work *by car*. ....
  5. William wants to take his family *to the country* this summer. ....
  6. Mary always does her work *very well*. ....
  7. I need *a little* sugar to make this cake. ....
  8. This is *my friend's* book. ....
  9. The boys often play *chess* in the evening. ....
  10. Mrs. Brown usually has lunch *at one*. ....

- 2** -----
1. Robert learns French *at the University*. .....
  2. My sister has *three* children. ....
  3. I'd like *my friends* to come to my birthday party. ....
  4. It usually takes me *an hour* to clean the flat. ....
  5. I like *this white* bag most of all. ....
  6. He is absent from the lesson *because he is ill*. ....
  7. On Sunday I go out with *my best friend*. ....
  8. These are *my pupils'* exercise-books. ....
  9. Nick reads *about a hundred pages* a day. ....
  10. I've got some *strawberry* jam. ....

**Вставьте необходимые вопросы в следующие микродиалоги.**

**32.4**

- 1** -----
- Mr. Jones                   — ..... ?  
His secretary           — This is Mr. Smith. He'd like to work for our company and he is waiting to speak to you.
- Mr. Jones                   — ..... ?  
His secretary           — He is a lawyer.  
Mr. Jones                 — Well, actually we need lawyers. Tell him to come in.

- 2** -----
- Chris                       — You know, my sister has got married.  
Jane                       — Oh, really? Congratulations! ..... ?  
Chris                       — He is a dentist. His name is John.  
Jane                       — Do you like him? ..... ?  
Chris                       — Well, I think I do. We always have a lot of fun together because John is a good mixer. He is very energetic and joyful. He is well-read too.  
Jane                       — And ..... ?  
Chris                       — I wouldn't say John is handsome. But he is quite nice: not very tall, but well-built with light hair and grey eyes.  
Jane                       — Well, I hope your sister will be happy with John. Give them my regards.  
Chris                       — I will, thanks.

**Составьте вопросы с конструкцией *How long does it take ...?***

**32.5**

★ by underground, your house, the city centre? ⇒ *How long does it take to get by underground from your house to the city centre?*

1. by train, Moscow, St. Petersburg? .....
2. on foot, your house, the nearest shop? .....
3. by plane, Moscow, London? .....
4. by car, your country-house, Moscow? .....
5. by plane, Glasgow, Edinburgh? .....
6. by bus, your house, the nearest underground station? .....
7. by train, France, England? .....
8. by bicycle, your house, the park? .....
9. by underground, your house, your friend's place? .....
10. by car, your place, the airport? .....

**Задайте вопрос с конструкцией *How long does it take ...?* и дайте полный ответ.**

**32.6**

★ your mother, to make dinner — *about half an hour* ⇒  
— **How long does it take your mother to make dinner?**  
— **It takes her about half an hour to make dinner.**

1. you, to do your homework — two or three hours .....
2. to learn to drive — about three months .....

3. your mother, to do the shopping — an hour and a half .....
4. your father, to read a newspaper — half an hour .....
5. your friend, to get to your place — forty minutes .....
6. your Granny, to make a birthday cake — two hours .....
7. your parents, to redecorate their flat — a month .....
8. to study to be a teacher in your country — five years .....
9. you, to read a hundred pages — an hour .....
10. you, to clean your room — twenty minutes .....

**Переведите.****32.7****1** -----

1. Кто твой отец по профессии?
2. Сколько времени вам надо, чтобы приготовить все необходимое?
3. Где учится твоя племянница?
4. Какой язык тебе хотелось бы изучать?
5. От кого это письмо?
6. От чего ты устала?
7. Сколько у вас работы на сегодня?
8. Как выглядит мама Фрэнка?
9. Как ты хочешь ему помочь?
10. Почему она опоздала?

**2** -----

1. Чьи это дети?
2. Сколько их в семье?
3. Откуда ваш новый ученик?
4. Что за человек твой двоюродный брат?
5. Кто эта женщина? — Это миссис Арнольд. Она ваш новый преподаватель.
6. Когда у твоей сестры день рождения?
7. Сколько надо времени, чтобы доехать отсюда до театра?
8. В кого из твоих сестер влюблен Том?
9. Куда они обычно ездят летом?
10. Зачем тебе его телефон?

**3** -----

1. Какие у вас вопросы?
2. Что за подарок ты бы хотел на день рождения?
3. Сколько стоит этот компьютер?
4. Где живут его родители?
5. Кого он хочет видеть?
6. Чем известно это здание?
7. Как выглядит муж твоей сестры?
8. Сколько у нее братьев и сестер?
9. Кого ты всегда ждешь здесь в это время?
10. Что значит это слово?



В вопросе к подлежащему и его определению — прямой порядок слов. Такой вопрос не требует вспомогательного глагола.

Ответ на такой вопрос состоит из подлежащего и соответствующего вспомогательного глагола.

*My sister* knows French.

**Who** knows French? — **My sister does.**  
**Whose sister** knows French? — **My sister does. (Mine does.)**

*This student* has more mistakes.

**Who** has more mistakes? — **This student does.**  
**Which student** has more mistakes? — **This student does.**

*All of us* would like to come.

**Which of you** would like to come? — **All of us would.**

*The book* is on the shelf.

**What** is on the shelf? — **The book is.**



Обратите внимание, что вопросительное слово, заменяющее подлежащее, согласуется с глаголом в единственном числе независимо от того, в каком числе стоит само подлежащее.

*My parents* like watching TV in the evening.

**Who** likes watching TV in the evening? — **My parents do.**

*These students* are always late.

**Who** is always late? — **These students are.**



Не путайте вопрос к подлежащему или его определению с вопросом к дополнению.

➤< *This word* means “good” in Spanish.

**What** means “good” in Spanish? — This word does.  
 (вопрос к подлежащему)

**Which word** means “good” in Spanish? — This word does. (вопрос к определению подлежащего)

**What does this word** mean in Spanish? — It means “good”.  
 (вопрос к дополнению)

*Nick’s sister* phones Sam every day.

**Who** phones Sam every day? — Nick’s sister does.  
 (вопрос к подлежащему)

**Whose sister** phones Sam every day? — Nick’s sister does. (вопрос к определению подлежащего)

**Who does Nick’s sister** phone every day? — She phones Sam.  
 (вопрос к дополнению)

## Задайте вопросы к выделенным словам и дайте на них ответы.

33.1

★ *Mary* likes dancing.Who likes dancing? ⇨ *Mary does.*

1. *The children* come home from school at about four. ....
2. *My friend* is very fond of playing tennis. ....
3. *This bag* is a nice colour. ....
4. *Tom* has got a lot of friends. ....
5. *All of us* want to know more about it. ....
6. *The coat* costs £200. ....
7. *Kate* is a hairdresser. ....
8. *Detective stories* may be very intriguing. ....
9. *His parents* want him to become a doctor. ....
10. *Both of them* are teachers. ....
11. *His latest book* is a great success. ....
12. *Sandy* would like to visit Paris. ....
13. *I* am a stranger here. ....

## Задайте вопросы к выделенным словам.

33.2

★ Mark has *a room of his own*. ⇨ *What does Mark have?*★ Mark has *a room of his own*. ⇨ *Who has a room of his own?*

1. *Jack* knows the answer to this question. ....
2. *My Mum* makes delicious cakes. ....
3. We'd like to buy *a new house*. ....
4. *The key* is in her bag. ....
5. Nick's cousin has got an *interesting job*. ....
6. *His friends* are fond of sports. ....
7. *All of you* are responsible for it. ....
8. I have *a letter* for you. ....
9. I often see *Tom* at the bus stop. ....
10. *Luke* always does his homework in time. ....
11. Luke always does *his homework* in time. ....
12. *My sister* would like me to go on holiday with her. ....
13. The *black bag* is more expensive. ....
14. *This work* is very hard. ....

## Переведите.

33.3

1. Кто нравится твоей подруге?
2. Кому нравится твоя подруга?
3. Кто из этих писателей хорошо известен? — Думаю, что оба.
4. Чей брат женат на Энн? — Брат Мэгги.
5. Что тебе нужно?
6. Что с тобой случилось вчера?
7. У какого (которого) студента отличная оценка? — У Уолтера.
8. Кого бы ты хотел пригласить на день рождения?
9. Кто у тебя в семье завтракает рано? — Мой отец.
10. Кто из них знает тебя? — Вот эти две девушки.

1. Косвенный вопрос — это вопрос внутри утверждения или другого вопроса.



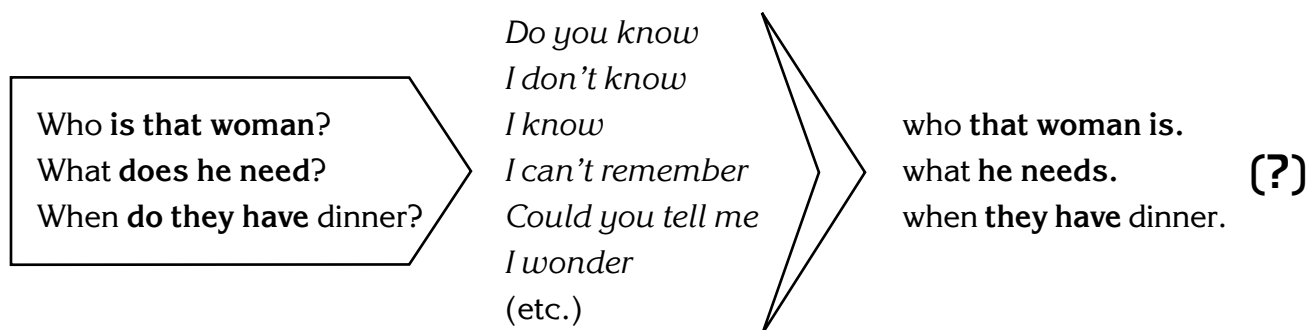
В косвенном вопросе всегда прямой порядок слов.



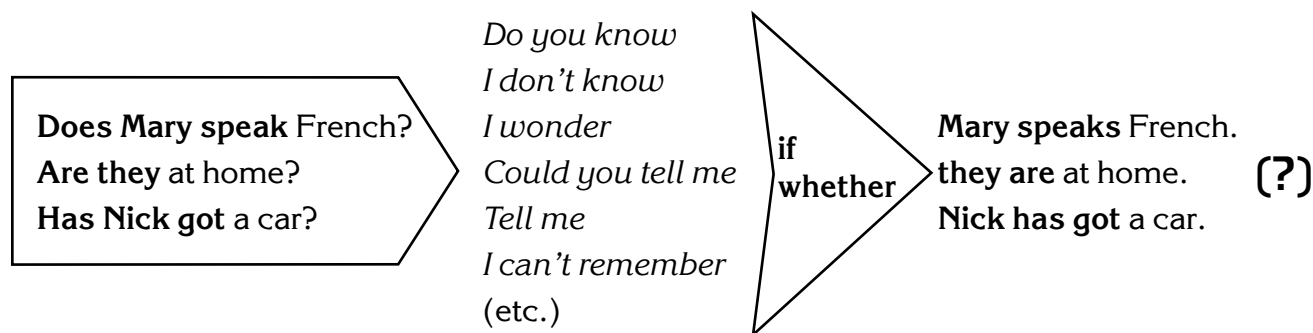
Where **is the bus stop**?

Could you tell me where **the bus stop is**?

2. Специальные вопросы преобразуются в косвенные следующим образом.



3. Общие вопросы преобразуются в косвенные при помощи союзов.



**Постройте косвенный вопрос при помощи *Do you know ...* ?.****34.1**★ Is Jack at school? ⇒ *Do you know if (whether) Jack is at school?*

1. Is the theatre far from the underground station? .....
2. Does Sam have an elder sister? .....
3. Have they got a country-house? .....
4. Do their children go to school yet? .....
5. Are Frank and Eve married? .....

**Преобразуйте следующие вопросы в косвенные вопросы или утверждения.****34.2**★ What kind of sweets does she like? I don't know ... ⇒ *I don't know what kind of sweets she likes.*

1. Why are they late? I don't know .....
2. How long does it take to get there? Do you know .....
3. When does the train arrive? I don't remember .....
4. Where is Emm? Do you know .....
5. What does it mean? I don't know .....

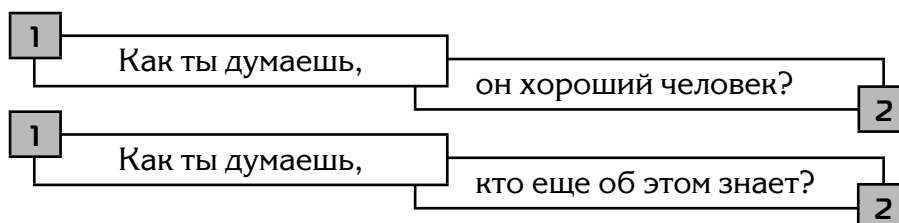
**Закончите предложения, раскрыв скобки.****34.3**★ How old is his brother? I wonder... ⇒ *I wonder how old his brother is.*★ Is he polite? I don't know ... ⇒ *I don't know if (whether) he is polite.*

1. Are they well-read? I don't know .....
2. Where does George's mother work? I know .....
3. Why doesn't he do his work properly? I wonder .....
4. Has Kate got Nick's address? Do you know .....
5. How many children do the Turners have? I don't know .....
6. When does the lesson begin? Can you tell me .....
7. Which of them is older? I don't remember .....
8. Is he a professional sportsman? Do you know .....
9. Do they have any problems with their car? I wonder .....
10. Who does he want to marry? I know .....

**Переведите.****34.4**

1. Вы не подскажете, где находится библиотека?
2. Ты не помнишь, когда начинается фильм?
3. Ты знаешь, почему они так часто ссорятся?
4. Интересно, помнит ли он о моем дне рождения?
5. Скажите, что я должен сделать.
6. Я не знаю, когда они начинают работать.
7. Ты не знаешь, есть ли у него эта книга?
8. Интересно, сколько стоит такой дом?
9. Я не помню, сколько времени лететь до Берлина.
10. Я не знаю, действительно ли она хороший врач.

1. Вопрос типа «Как ты думаешь...?» всегда состоит из двух частей.



2. Если вторая часть представляет собой общий вопрос, то вопрос «Как ты думаешь...?» строится по следующей схеме:

**Do you think** + **прямой порядок слов** ?

Is it Nick's brother? ⇒

*Do you think it is* Nick's brother?

*Как ты думаешь, это брат Ника?*

Do they smoke? ⇒

*Do you think they smoke?*

*Как ты думаешь, они курят?*

3. Если вторая часть представляет собой специальный вопрос, то вопрос «Как ты думаешь...?» строится следующим образом:

**Вопросительное слово специального вопроса** + **do you think** + **прямой порядок слов** ?

Why are they late? ⇒

**Why** *do you think they are late?*

*Как ты думаешь, почему они опоздали?*

When does he get up? ⇒

**When** *do you think he gets up?*

*Как ты думаешь, во сколько он встает?*

How many books have they got? ⇒

**How many books** *do you think they have got?*

*Как ты думаешь, сколько у них книг?*

Who does he want to marry? ⇒

**Who** *do you think he wants to marry?*

*Как ты думаешь, на ком он хочет жениться?*

How is she? ⇒

**How** *do you think she is?*

*Как ты думаешь, как она поживает?*

Who knows the answer? ⇒

**Who** *do you think knows the answer?*

*Как ты думаешь, кто знает ответ?*

What is going on there? ⇒

**What** *do you think is going on there?*

*Как ты думаешь, что там происходит?*

## Соедините два вопроса в один.

35.1

1 -----

★ Как ты думаешь? Is he a responsible person? ⇒ *Do you think he is a responsible person?*

1. Are they great friends? .....
2. Does her daughter help her about the house? .....
3. Do they often go out together? .....
4. Is he keen on art? .....
5. Have they got much experience? .....
6. Am I late? .....
7. Does Mr. Brown have a family of his own? .....
8. Would he like to see this picture? .....
9. Is the problem serious? .....
10. Do they need our help? .....

2 -----

★ Как ты думаешь? What language does he speak? ⇒ *What language do you think he speaks?*

1. What does her sister look like? .....
2. How long does it take him to do the home-task? .....
3. Why are the children so excited? .....
4. Whose book is it? .....
5. How much time have we got? .....
6. Who would she like to ask for help? .....
7. When does her husband return from work? .....
8. How many rooms do they have in their house? .....
9. Where are the children? .....
10. What is his wife? .....

## Переведите.

35.2

1. Как ты думаешь, чего они боятся?
2. Как ты думаешь, этот компьютер хороший?
3. Как ты думаешь, кто из них лучше знает английский?
4. Как ты думаешь, что он за человек?
5. Как ты думаешь, кто эта женщина?
6. Как ты думаешь, они влюблены друг в друга?
7. Как ты думаешь, у него есть машина?
8. Как ты думаешь, сколько времени надо, чтобы доехать до центра?
9. Как ты думаешь, откуда эти люди?
10. Как ты думаешь, почему она расстроена?
11. Как ты думаешь, она хорошо играет на пианино?
12. Как ты думаешь, я права?
13. Как ты думаешь, кто он по профессии?
14. Как ты думаешь, чья это идея?
15. Как ты думаешь, куда бы они хотели поехать на каникулы?

**Вставьте вопросительные слова или выражения.**

**36.1**

- ★ ..... is he so angry with you? ⇨ *Why is he so angry with you?*
- ..... does it take you to water all these flowers?
  - ..... music do you prefer? — I like classical music.
  - ..... does your new teacher look like?
  - ..... dictionary is it? — I think it's Tom's.
  - ..... is Jack? — He is an architect.
  - ..... colour are your new shoes?
  - ..... are your parents? — They are travelling abroad.
  - ..... of these boys is your brother?
  - ..... is on duty today? — Mary is.
  - ..... do you agree with?
  - ..... mistakes did you make in the dictation? — Just two.
  - ..... is your birthday? — It's on the eleventh of July.
  - ..... is your Granny? — Not bad, thanks.
  - ..... are you so late?
  - ..... is that new clerk like? — He is very friendly.

**Задайте вопросы, ответы на которые приведены ниже.**

**36.2**

- ★ He is on holiday now. (*John*) ⇨ *Where is John?*
- ..... ? I'm good at swimming.
  - ..... ? But I do. I remember you very well.
  - ..... ? No, they aren't at home. (*Kate and Mary*)
  - ..... ? She is not very tall, with long dark hair and large dark eyes. (*Sarah*)
  - ..... ? That's Jane, Nick's girlfriend.
  - ..... ? Yes, they want to go to the seaside.
  - ..... ? He is about four. (*Robert and Brenda's son*)
  - ..... ? No, she doesn't know anything about it yet.
  - ..... ? It's ten minutes past three.
  - ..... ? Yes, I think it's time to go now.

**Задайте вопросы к выделенным словам, добавляя «Как ты думаешь...?».**

**36.3**

- ★ The author of this book is *Agatha Christie*. ⇨ *Who do you think the author of this book is?*
- It takes *a lot of time*. .....
  - The next plane to New York is *at three o'clock sharp*. .....
  - She is worried *because the children aren't at home yet*. .....
  - This book* is his. .....
  - His voice* shows that something is wrong. .....
  - It can take him *a few days* to find everything out. .....
  - They are *on an excursion*. .....
  - Brian* is wrong. .....
  - She is an *artist*. .....
  - These are *the manager's papers*. .....

**Исправьте ошибки.**

**36.4**

- I'm older than you, am I not? .....
- Do you or your brother help your mother to do the shopping? .....
- Are you agree with me? .....
- Doesn't he play the piano? — Yes, he doesn't. .....
- What does mean this expression? .....
- How long it takes to get to Australia? .....

7. Let's wash the car together, will we? .....
8. Do she still have a cold? .....
9. Who does take you to school? .....
10. How do you think will she like my present? .....
11. Tell me where does your new friend live? .....
12. They never get bad marks, don't they? .....
13. Does he have got much money? .....
14. How does his wife look like? .....
15. Buy some bread, won't you? .....

**Закончите микродиалоги, используя слова и выражения в скобках.****36.5**

★ I can't remember (*William's brother*). — He is ten. ⇒ I can't remember how old William's brother is.

1. *Philip*: Could you tell me ..... ? (*Green Street*)  
*A passer-by*: It's the first turn to the right.
2. *Alex*: I wonder ..... ? (*David, a foreign language*)  
*Richard*: He does! He learnt English at school and now he is studying German.
3. *Pam*: Do you know ..... ? (*Chris, classes*)  
*Pete*: As far as I know, he has three lectures today.
4. *Sue*: I don't know ..... ? (*help*)  
*Mark*: I think Ron can. He always finds a way out.
5. *Nell*: I can't remember ..... ? (*Sam's sister*)  
*Lenny*: She is three years younger than Sam.

**Переведите.****36.6**

- 1** -----
1. Как ты думаешь, где он может быть?
2. Сегодня солнечная или дождливая погода?
3. Никогда так больше не говори, ладно?
4. Сколько семей живут на этом этаже? — Насколько я знаю, три.
5. Вы не знаете, сколько стоит эта картина?
6. Что за человек ваш новый помощник? — Он очень ответственный и внимательный.
7. Разве ты не знаешь его имени? — Нет, я впервые его вижу.
8. Давай навестим его, а?
9. Интересно, хорошо ли он учится.
10. Чьи это деньги? Почему они здесь?
- 2** -----
1. Сколько времени надо, чтобы прочитать эту книгу?
2. У кого из учителей самый интересный урок? — У миссис Слейтер.
3. Спроси их, кто он по профессии.
4. Что хочет малыш? — Он хочет пить.
5. У них еще нет детей, не так ли? — Да, нет.
6. Как ты думаешь, станция метро далеко отсюда? — Нет, совсем близко.
7. С кем бы тебе хотелось потанцевать?
8. Какого цвета волосы у вашего ребенка?
9. Интересно, кто из них прав?
10. Теперь я слишком худая, да?
11. Что тебя так смешит каждый раз, когда ты его видишь?
12. С чем ты предпочитаешь есть мясо?
13. Как выглядит ваша новая учительница английского?
14. Как ты думаешь, что бы ей хотелось получить в подарок на день рождения?
15. Кому нужна помощь? — Нам.



1. Конструкция **there is / there are** употребляется для выражения наличия или отсутствия какого-либо неизвестного лица или предмета в определенном месте.

В русском языке подобные предложения начинаются с обстоятельства места.

**There is** a picture on *the wall*.

*На стене* — картина.

▶◀ **There is** a book on *the table*.

*На столе* — книга.



**The book is** on the table.

*Книга на столе.*

2. В конструкции **there is / there are** исчисляемое существительное в единственном числе может употребляться только с *неопределённым артиклем*. С неисчисляемыми существительными и исчисляемыми существительными во множественном числе артикль не употребляется.

**There is** a chair near the window.

*У окна* — стул.

**There is** milk in the glass.

*В стакане* — молоко.

**There are** children in the yard.

*Во дворе* — дети.



Для конструкции **there is / there are** типично употребление местоимений *some, any, no, much, many, little, few* и количественных числительных.

**There are** *two* books on the table.

*На столе* — две книги.

**There is** *some* butter in the fridge.

*В холодильнике есть* масло.



В конструкции **there is / there are** глагол согласуется с первым существительным.

**There is** a book and *two pens* on the table.

**There are** *two pens and a book* on the table.

3. Отрицательная форма конструкции **there is / there are**.

**There is** *no* butter in the fridge.

*В холодильнике нет* масла.

**There isn't** *any* butter in the fridge.

*В холодильнике нет* масла.

**There are** *no* hotels in this town.

*В этом городе нет* гостиниц.

**There aren't** *any* books on the table.

*В этом городе нет* гостиниц.

4. Вопросительная форма конструкции **there is / there are**

**Is there** *any* milk in the fridge?

*В холодильнике есть* молоко?

— Yes, there is. (No, there isn't.)

— Да, есть. (Нет.)

**Are there** any books on the shelf?

*На полке есть* книги?

— Yes, there are. (No, there aren't.)

— Да, есть. (Нет.)



Конструкция **there is / there are** употребляется в разных временных формах:

There was a letter on the table.

There were no students in the hall.

There will be a parking place here next year.

I'm sure there won't be any questions after the lecture.



Специальные и альтернативные вопросы:

How many books are there in your bag?

— There are five books in my bag.

Are there red or green pencils in the box?

— There are red pencils in the box.

Употребите оборот *there is / there are* в правильной форме.

37.1

- ★ *There are* a lot of pictures on the walls in her room.
- ..... a good film on TV tomorrow.
  - The book is good. .... interesting stories in it.
  - It was late and ..... many people in the street.
  - ..... many people at the meeting?
  - ..... any meeting next week. It has been cancelled.
  - ..... anybody at home when you came?
  - ..... anything strange about him yesterday.
  - How many students in your group next year?
  - How many mistakes in his last test?
  - ..... a lot of clothes in the wardrobe. Choose anything you like.
  - ..... no work for him yesterday. He had nothing to do.
  - ..... any classes on Friday? No, there won't. It's a holiday.
  - ..... anything in this box? Let's have a look. .... a pair of shoes and two dresses.
  - ..... many guests at the hotel when you stayed there?
  - ..... enough food for all of us and we had a nice lunch.

Дайте краткие ответы на вопросы.

37.2

- ★ Are they coming on Friday? — *Yes, they are. We'll meet them.*
- ★ Are there many questions you would like to ask? — *No, there aren't. Just one in fact.*
- Are they on holiday? — ..... They are working.
  - Are there any holidays in September? — ..... It's a busy month.
  - Were they present at the meeting? — ..... I saw them.
  - Were there many people present at the meeting? — ..... Almost everybody came.
  - Were they on holiday last month? — ..... They are having a holiday next month.
  - Were there many people in the doctor's waiting room? — ..... I was alone.
  - Are your friends nice people? — ..... They are the best people I've ever seen.
  - Are there any flowers in their garden? — ..... They are fond of flowers.

Переведите.

37.3

- На этой улице один новый дом и много старых домов.
- На остановке было много людей. Они ждали автобус.
- У меня в кошельке было слишком мало денег.
- В четверг по телевизору будет интересная программа.
- На этой улице всегда такое сильное движение?
- В коробке ничего не было. Она была пуста.
- Здесь есть стоянка для машин? — Да. Она за тем домом.
- Сколько марок будет в твоей коллекции, если ты купишь эту? — Не много.
- Словарь на полке. Возьми его. — Но на полке два словаря. Какой взять?
- В меню есть какие-нибудь блюда итальянской кухни? — К сожалению, нет.
- В этой книге не много информации о Бразилии.
- В этой газете есть интересные статьи? — Да, на третьей странице есть очень интересная статья.
- Где у вас телефон? Телефон в гостиной. Можешь позвонить.
- Почему на столе так много тарелок? К обеду будут гости?
- Краски было недостаточно, и я не смог закончить работу.
- Что у тебя в комнате? — Там кровать, шкаф и другая мебель.
- Здесь недостаточно материала, чтобы сшить длинное платье.
- Дальнейшего обсуждения не будет.
- Сколько бензина в баке? — В баке достаточно бензина.
- Они туристы? — Да. В мае здесь всегда много туристов.

**1.** Предложения с **so** (*такой; так*)

**подлежащее** + **сказуемое** + **so** + **прилагательное / наречие**

He is so lazy!

*Он такой ленивый!*

Her bag is so expensive!

*Ее сумка такая дорогая!*

He speaks so rudely!

*Он так грубо разговаривает!*

She sings so well!

*Она так хорошо поет!*

**2.** Предложения с **such** (*такой*)

**подлежащее** + **сказуемое** + **such** + **(a / an)** +  
+ **прилагательное** + **существительное**



Если существительное стоит во множественном числе или если существительное неисчисляемое, то артикль не употребляется.

He is such a clever person!

*Он такой умный человек!*

It is such an interesting book!

*Это такая интересная книга!*

The boy is such an obedient child!

*Этот мальчик такой послушный ребенок!*

These are such interesting books!

*Это такие интересные книги!*

It was such difficult work!

*Это была такая трудная работа!*

**3.** Предложения с **what** (*какой*)

**What** + **(a / an)** + **прилагательное** + **существительное** +  
+ **подлежащее** + **сказуемое**



Если существительное стоит во множественном числе или если существительное неисчисляемое, то артикль не употребляется.

What a nice person he is!

*Какой он милый человек!*

What nice people they are!

*Какие они милые люди!*

What fine weather we are having today!

*Какая сегодня хорошая погода!*

**4.** Предложения с **how** (*какой; как*)

**How** + **прилагательное / наречие** + **подлежащее** + **сказуемое**

How clever you are!

*Какой ты умный!*

How interesting the stories are!

*Какие интересные истории!*

How quickly you do it!

*Как быстро вы это делаете!*

How badly he speaks English!

*Как плохо он говорит по-английски!*

Заполните пропуски нужными словами.  
Используйте артикли, если необходимо.

38.1

a)

1. The tree is ..... tall!
2. The smell is ..... awful!
3. It is ..... a beautiful carpet!
4. It's ..... cold!
5. She is smiling ..... happily!
6. They are ..... friendly people!
7. The children are ..... noisy!
8. It was ..... a terrible day!
9. .... politely he behaves!
10. .... difficult the exercise is!
11. .... a boring film it is!
12. .... terribly he writes!
13. .... expensive clothes they are!
14. .... brave he is!
15. .... cunning questions they are!
16. .... an easy question it is!

b)

1. These are ..... fast cars!
2. It was ..... terrible holiday!
3. .... good artist he is!
4. .... rainy weather we are having!
5. He is ..... great scientist!
6. .... funny accent!
7. .... difficult work!
8. It was ..... expensive furniture!
9. .... dirty clothes!
10. They are ..... dangerous animals!
11. She drives ..... carelessly!
12. .... well she plays the piano!
13. .... polite he is!
14. They were ..... kind to us!
15. .... warmly they met us!
16. My boss is ..... angry today!
17. He walks ..... slowly!
18. .... rich my uncle is!
19. He was ..... quiet yesterday!
20. .... serious the question is!

**c)**

1. .... delicious dish it is!
2. .... beautifully she sings!
3. She has ..... sweet voice!
4. .... terrible his pictures are!
5. He speaks ..... good English!
6. .... carefully he drives!
7. .... friendly people they are!
8. He is ..... efficient worker!
9. This teacher treats the children ..... kindly!
10. Look ..... expensively the man is dressed!
11. .... brilliant idea it is!
12. .... glad I am to meet you!

**Переведите.****38.2**

1. Какой неудачный план!
2. Он такой нервный!
3. У нее такие красивые волосы!
4. Как они счастливы!
5. Он посмотрел на меня так грустно!
6. Какой горячий кофе!
7. Это такие важные новости!
8. Как дешево он продал дом!
9. Ситуация такая сложная!
10. Какой полезный совет!
11. Как легко он справился с заданием!
12. Это такие ценные сведения!

# **TENSE FORMS OF THE VERB**

**ВИДО-ВРЕМЕННЫЕ ФОРМЫ ГЛАГОЛА**

**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**

Present Indefinite образуется при помощи инфинитива смыслового глагола без частицы **to**. В 3-м лице единственного числа глагол принимает окончание **-s**.

Вопросительная и отрицательная формы строятся при помощи вспомогательного глагола **do (does)**.

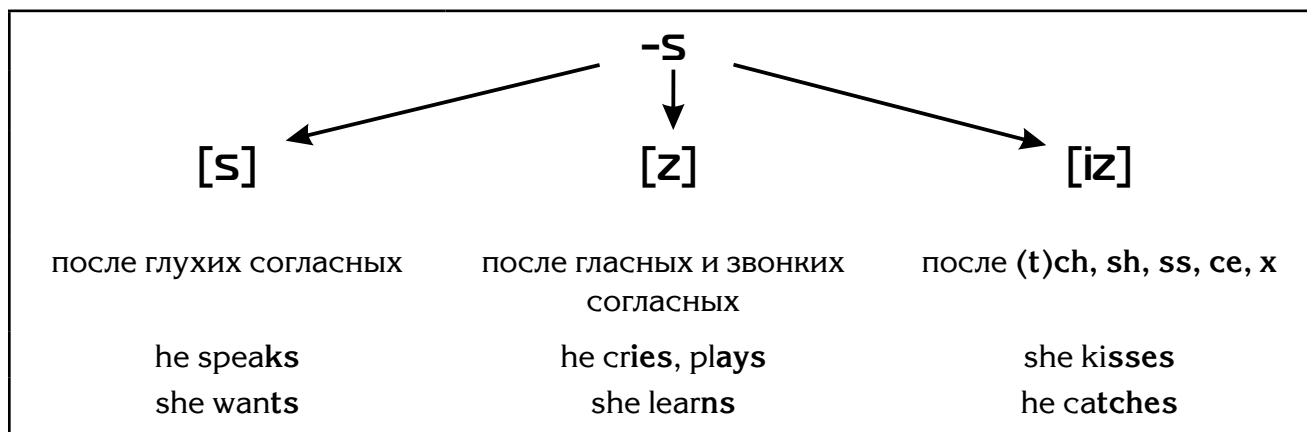
We **play** tennis together.

My sister **doesn't have** any children yet.

Do you **know** any foreign language?



Окончание **-s** в 3-м лице единственного числа может читаться по-разному:



have — has

do — does

**2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ**

- Обычное, регулярно происходящее или характерное действие, состояние.

I usually **make** breakfast myself.

They **go** to the seaside every summer.

My brother **likes** playing tennis.

- Последовательность обычных действий.

Every day my father **gets up** at 7, **does** his morning exercises, **takes** a shower, **has** breakfast and **goes** to work.

- Общеизвестная истина (часто в пословицах и поговорках).

Time **works** wonders.

Water **boils** at 100°C.

- Present Indefinite часто употребляется с наречиями *usually, sometimes, generally, often, seldom, never, always, every day* и т. д. (порядок слов см. в Unit 28).

I **often play** chess with my friend.

She **never shouts** at her children.

**Прочитайте.****39.1**

looks, dresses, opens, asks, plans, feels, counts, seems, finishes, hates, packs, copies, visits, teaches, fills, closes, finds, answers, fetches, cries, loses

**Поставьте глагол в 3-е лицо единственного числа.****39.2**

★ We grow flowers in the garden. (Mrs. Green) ⇒ *Mrs. Green grows flowers in the garden.*

1. I want to study German. (Nick) .....
2. They refuse to help us. (Mary) .....
3. My children study hard. ....
4. These students speak English fluently. ....
5. We know the right answer. (She) .....
6. They always tell the truth. (My friend) .....
7. These planes fly from London to Madrid. ....
8. They make a lot of money. (His father) .....
9. These books give a lot of information. ....
10. They teach History. (Mr. Brown) .....

**Исправьте следующие утверждения.****39.3**

★ The sun rises in the west. ⇒ *The sun doesn't rise in the west. It rises in the east.*

1. Snow melts in winter. ....
2. Dolphins live in forests. ....
3. The Sun goes round the Earth. ....
4. Spring comes after autumn. ....
5. The Japanese live in the south. ....

**Составьте вопросы и ответьте на них, используя слова *always, often, sometimes, never, seldom, usually*.****39.4**

★ your father, to read newspapers, in the evening ⇒

*Does your father read newspapers in the evening?*

*Yes, he usually (always) reads newspapers in the evening.*

*No, he never (seldom) reads newspapers in the evening.*

1. you, to get up early ..... ?
2. your friend, to phone, on one's day off ..... ?
3. you, to help mother, to do the shopping ..... ?
4. your parents, to go on holiday together ..... ?
5. your father, to go fishing, at the weekend ..... ?
6. you, to quarrel, with friends ..... ?
7. you, to visit, grandparents ..... ?
8. your mother, to cook, delicious dinners ..... ?
9. your friend, to help with homework ..... ?
10. you, to have nightmares ..... ?



**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**

**am (is, are) + -ing**

I *am translating* an exercise.

She *is cooking* dinner.

They *aren't watching* TV now.

What *is* he *doing* at the moment?

*Are you reading* now?



Обратите внимание на правила орфографии:

to makee — making

to studyy — studying; to playy — playing

to stopp — stopping; to runn — running

to be'gin — beginning;

to travell — travelling; to compell — compelling

**BUT!** to lie — lying

**BUT!** to 'visit — visiting

**2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ**

- Действие в момент речи (*now, at the moment*)

I *am washing* my hands.

- Действие в настоящий период времени (*at present*)

The Browns are awfully busy and tired. They *are redecorating* the house.

- Часто повторяющееся действие, которое вызывает недовольство, раздражение (эмоциональный Continuous)

**am (is, are) + always (constantly) + -ing**

You *are always talking* at the lesson!

*Вечно ты болтаешь на уроках!*

- Запланированное действие в ближайшем будущем (в этом же значении употребляется выражение **to be going to do smth** — *собираться что-либо сделать*)

We *are giving* a party on Saturday.

They *are going to build* a new road here.



Глагол **to have** употребляется в Continuous только в устойчивых выражениях (см. *Unit 29*).

Don't call him now. He *is having a rest*.

**Раскройте скобки, употребив глаголы в Present Continuous в утвердительной или отрицательной форме.**

40.1

- ★ Sue is a secretary. She types letters and documents every day. But today she ..... (to type). She ..... (to shop). ⇒ **But today she isn't typing. She is shopping.**
- Nick is a student. He has to study a lot. But at the moment he ..... (to study). He ..... (to listen) to music.
  - Barbara and Mary are shop assistants. They work at a supermarket. But today is Sunday, so they ..... (to work). They ..... (to walk) in the park.
  - Irene is a teacher. She gives lessons at London University. But it's 7 o'clock in the evening and she is at home. She ..... (to give) any lessons. She ..... (to watch) TV.
  - My name is Brian. I'm a taxi driver. I take people to various places in my taxi. But I'm on holiday now. I ..... (to drive). I ..... (to lie) on a beach.
  - Robert is a writer. He writes novels. But right now he ..... (to write) anything. He and his wife ..... (to have) dinner.

**Составьте предложения (утвердительные или отрицательные) о том, что сейчас на самом деле происходит.**

40.2

- I, to wait, for a bus .....
- I, to practise, English grammar .....
- My teacher, to listen, to me .....
- Leaves, to fall, from trees .....
- I, to watch TV .....
- I, to sit, on a chair .....
- I, to think hard .....
- My classmates, to do, this exercise, too .....
- It, to rain, heavily .....
- I, to have tea, with my friends .....

**Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в форме Present Continuous.**

40.3

- Why ..... (you, to wear) such a funny suit? — I ..... (to go) to a fancy party.
- It's so quiet in the house! Where are the children? — They ..... (to sleep).
- Let's have a break and go out to lunch together. — I'm sorry, I can't. I ..... (to prepare) a very important project.
- You ..... (always, to come) late. Don't you realize it's not polite to keep people waiting?
- Jane ..... (to return) from her holiday tomorrow, ..... she? — Oh, yes, we are going to meet her at the station.
- As far as I know, he ..... (not, to look for) a new job. So he is unlikely to be interested in your offer.
- What ..... (they, to work at) at the moment? — I have no idea, but it seems to be something special. They ..... (to make) more and more experiments every day.
- I ..... (to move) to a new flat at the weekend. Perhaps you can help me if you ..... (not, to do) anything special.
- He ..... (to spend) just a few days in Paris. — And where ..... (he, to stay)?
- When ..... (you, to leave)? — I don't know actually. The embassy ..... (still, to consider) my application.

**1.**



**Present Indefinite**

He **writes** you letters *every week*.  
Он пишет тебе письма каждую неделю.

Mike **jogs** in the park *every morning*.  
Каждое утро Майк бежит в парке.

Jane **swims** in the pool *twice a week*.  
Джейн плавает в бассейне дважды в неделю.

**Present Continuous**

He **is writing** a letter to you *right now*.  
Как раз сейчас он пишет тебе письмо.

Look! **Isn't** it Mike **jogging**?  
Посмотри! Это не Майк бежит?

Look! How well Jane **is swimming**!  
Посмотри! Как хорошо плавает Джейн!

**2.** Следующие глаголы, обозначающие чувственное восприятие и умственную деятельность, не имеют форм Continuous:

<i>to be</i>	<i>to hear</i>	<i>to see</i>	<i>to notice</i>	<i>to seem</i>	<i>to hate</i>
<i>to like</i>	<i>to love</i>	<i>to prefer</i>	<i>to know</i>	<i>to understand</i>	<i>to realize</i>
<i>to want</i>	<i>to need</i>	<i>to remember</i>	<i>to mean</i>	<i>to possess</i>	<i>to find</i>
<i>to believe</i>	<i>to think</i>	<i>to belong</i>	<i>to smell</i>	<i>to taste</i>	<i>to feel</i>
<i>to look</i>	<i>to sound</i>				

Where **is** he? I **don't see** him.

We **understand** what you **mean**.

**Do** you **hear** that sound?

I **find** the book quite interesting.



Некоторые из этих глаголов могут употребляться в формах Continuous, если они обозначают не состояние, а действие.

Состояние	Действие
I <b>think</b> it's the right thing to do. <i>Я думаю (считаю), это правильно.</i>	What <b>are</b> you <b>thinking</b> about? <i>О чем ты думаешь (размышляешь)?</i>
The meat <b>smells</b> wonderful! How do you cook it? <i>Мясо пахнет замечательно! Как ты его готовишь?</i>	Why <b>are</b> you <b>smelling</b> the meat? Isn't it fresh? <i>Почему ты нюхаешь мясо? Разве оно несвежее?</i>
Here is Nick! <b>Do</b> you <b>see</b> him? ( <b>Can</b> you <b>see</b> him?) <i>А вот и Ник! Видишь его?</i>	I <b>am seeing</b> my future parents-in-law tonight. <i>Сегодня вечером я встречаюсь с родителями своего будущего мужа.</i>

**Поставьте глагол в правильную форму  
(Present Indefinite или Present Continuous).**

41.1

1. Who ..... (*you, to wait*) for? — A friend of mine. We ..... (*to go*) to the cinema.
2. I still ..... (*not, to understand*) the rule. — No wonder. You never ..... (*to listen*) to what I ..... (*to say*). And you ..... (*not to listen*) now either.
3. What ..... (*you, to do*) here? — Actually, I ..... (*to wait*) for the museum to open. — But why? ..... (*you, not to know*) that it ..... (*not to work*) on Mondays?
4. The picture you ..... (*to look*) at ..... (*to belong*) to the Tretyakov Gallery. We ..... (*just, to exhibit*) it.
5. I can't stand her! She ..... (*constantly, to throw*) her things about the room. She never ..... (*to put*) anything in its place.
6. .... (*you, to see*) the notice? — Yes, but it's too high for me to read. What ..... (*it, to say*)?
7. Has he agreed to your offer? — No, he ..... (*still, to think*) it over.
8. Why, Peter, you ..... (*to smoke*)!!! — ..... (*you, not to know*) that I ..... (*to smoke*)?
9. You ..... (*to taste*) the pizza over and over again. Is anything wrong? — Oh no, on the contrary, it ..... (*to taste*) so delicious that I just can't help it.
10. Where is Mr. Brown? — He ..... (*to have*) lunch at the canteen as usual. He usually ..... (*to return*) to his office at half past one.
11. I ..... (*to need*) your help immediately. There's something wrong with my dog. He ..... (*to have*) a temperature and he ..... (*hardly, to breathe*)!
12. He ..... (*to come*) back from his business trip in a few days. .... (*you, to know*) it for sure? — Of course, I do. He always ..... (*to call*) me every other day.
13. These shoes are too tight. — Then why ..... (*you, to put*) them on again? — They ..... (*to look*) so wonderful and besides they ..... (*to match*) my dress.
14. You ..... (*to read*) in the dark again! — But I ..... (*not, to believe*) it's dark. I ..... (*to see*) everything well enough.
15. Jack and Pam ..... (*to have*) a long conversation. I wonder what they ..... (*to talk*) about.

**Переведите.**

41.2

1. Что ты делаешь сегодня вечером? — Ничего особенного. А что? — Слушай, я иду на концерт, и у меня есть лишний билет. Хочешь пойти? — С удовольствием.
2. Вечно ты закрываешь окна! Как ты можешь работать в такой душной комнате? — Но мне холодно!
3. Что ты готовишь? Так вкусно пахнет! — Это секрет. Я пробую новый рецепт.
4. Как ты думаешь, что нужно этому человеку? — Не понимаю, он жестикулирует, но не произносит ни слова.
5. Зачем ты листаешь книгу? Ты что-то ищешь? — Я ее не листаю, а читаю. — Ты всегда читаешь так быстро?
6. Обычно я работаю в пятницу, но эта пятница — праздничный день, поэтому я гуляю в парке.
7. Ты весь мокрый! Дождь все еще идет? — Да, и становится все холоднее.
8. Завтра я встречаюсь с моим редактором. — Ты работаешь над новой книгой? — Да, и он хочет подписать со мной новый контракт.
9. Интересно, а в Бразилии когда-нибудь идет снег?
10. Обожаю эту песню! Но это какая-то новая версия. Кто это поет?
11. Теперь ты мне веришь? — Нет, мне все еще кажется, ты мне врешь.
12. Ты опять идешь в театр? — Что значит «опять»? Я действительно часто хожу в театр, но почему тебя это удивляет?
13. Почему ты так рано ужинаешь? Сейчас только 6 часов.

**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**

shall / will

+

инфинитив *без to*They *will* (They'll) *go* there tomorrow.We *shall* (We'll) *finish* the work in a few days.

Вспомогательный глагол **shall** употребляется только с местоимениями **I** и **we**. Однако в современном языке наблюдается тенденция употребления **will** для всех лиц, тем более, что разница исчезает в сокращенных формах: **I'll, we'll, you'll, she'll, they'll** и т. д. Вопросительную и отрицательную формы строят вспомогательные глаголы **will** или **shall**.

**will not = won't**      **shall not = shan't**I *won't* (*shan't*) *see* him next Friday.*Will* she *be* free on Sunday?**2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ**

Future Indefinite обозначает действие или последовательность действий в будущем.

In half a year he'll *start* working as a doctor.I'll *arrive* at about six o'clock, *leave* my things at the hotel, and then *take* a walk.

В придаточных предложениях времени и условия вместо Future Indefinite употребляется Present Indefinite. Эти придаточные предложения присоединяются союзами **if, in case, unless, when, after, before, as soon as, till, until, while, ...**

You'll get this job *if* you *learn* English.

Ты получишь эту работу, если выучишь английский.

I won't be able to help you *unless* you *tell* me the truth.

Я не смогу помочь тебе, если ты не скажешь мне правду.

We'll have dinner together *when* he *comes* from work.

Мы вместе поужинаем, когда он придет с работы.

We won't go for a walk *until* the rain *stops*.

Мы не пойдем гулять, пока не прекратится дождь.

I'll look after the child *while* you *cook* (*are cooking*) dinner.

Я присмотрю за ребенком, пока ты будешь готовить обед.



Союзы **when** и **if** могут присоединять и придаточные изъяснительные. В этом случае в придаточном предложении употребляется Future Indefinite.

I'm not sure *if* they'll *understand* us.

Я не уверен (в чем?), поймут ли они нас.

He has no idea *when* he *will return*.

Он понятия не имеет (о чем?), когда вернется.

**Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в форме Future Indefinite.****42.1**

1. Don't worry, he ..... (*not, to refuse*) to lend you the money.
2. They ..... (*to celebrate*) the second anniversary of their wedding next month.
3. .... (*he, to show*) us the sights of the town right now?
4. The actors are very good. I'm sure the performance ..... (*to be*) a great success.
5. I ..... (*never, to forget*) what you did to me.
6. .... (*there, to be*) any party after the official ceremony?

**Употребите глагол в правильной форме (Future Indefinite или Present Indefinite).****42.2**

1. I don't think she ..... (*to agree*) to help us until she ..... (*to know*) all the details of the plan.
2. I hope he ..... (*not, recognize*) me if I ..... (*to wear*) a wig.
3. I'm sure there ..... (*to be*) a heated discussion after the students ..... (*to see*) the film.
4. When you ..... (*to apologize*) to her you ..... (*to feel*) much better.
5. I don't know when Mrs. Smith ..... (*to recover*).
6. I ..... (*to lay*) the table while you ..... (*to dress*) for the party.
7. I'm not sure if this time ..... (*to be*) convenient for him.
8. I ..... (*not, to continue*) the conversation unless you ..... (*to calm down*).
9. I ..... (*to return*) you the book as soon as I ..... (*to finish*) it.
10. Call me at any time in case you ..... (*to have*) any problems.
11. She promises that when we ..... (*to see*) him working we ..... (*to be*) surprised.
12. Everything ..... (*to be*) ready before Frank ..... (*to come*).
13. I doubt if he ..... (*to catch*) the train if he ..... (*to leave*) so late.
14. I ..... (*to try*) to find out when they ..... (*to publish*) our book.
15. In case he ..... (*to be*) late he ..... (*to call*) us.

**Переведите.****42.3**

1. Он не сдаст экзамен, если ты не поможешь ему подготовиться.
2. Как только гости соберутся, мы им объявим новость.
3. Когда вы узнаете результаты? — Когда преподаватель проверит наши работы.
4. Интересно, присоединится ли к нам Джон, когда мы расскажем ему о поездке.
5. Прежде чем ребенок ляжет спать, мама его искупает.
6. В случае, если его не будет дома, я зайду к нему позже.
7. Я понятия не имею, когда состоится следующее собрание.
8. После того как закончится фильм, мы пойдем гулять.
9. Если погода будет хорошая, мы пойдем на пляж.
10. Я надеюсь, что пока я буду спать, температура спадет.
11. Узнай, пожалуйста, пойдут ли они с нами в театр.
12. Я не буду ничего покупать, пока не накоплю немного денег.
13. Он говорит, что когда вернется из отпуска, он организует вечеринку.
14. Я дам тебе знать, как только все будет готово.
15. Пока идет дождь, я почитаю или посмотрю телевизор.
16. Я подожду, пока ты не вернешься.
17. Я не уверена, напишет ли он мне, но если напишет, я обязательно отвечу.
18. Мне кажется, что если мы поедем в отпуск вместе, мы прекрасно проведем время.

Кроме Future Indefinite, действие в будущем могут выражать и другие формы.

### 1. Future Indefinite

- *действие* в отдаленном будущем (часто с глаголами *think, expect, believe*; выражениями *be sure, be afraid*; наречиями *probably, perhaps, certainly, ...*)  
Their son *will probably become* a famous doctor.
- только что принятое решение  
The soup smells strange. I *won't eat* it.
- действие в будущем, на которое нельзя повлиять  
The temperature *will fall* to 2°C tomorrow.

### 2. Present Continuous; to be going to

- запланированное действие в будущем, часто в ближайшем.  
The Browns *are giving* a house-warming party on Saturday.  
*I'm going* to make a cake for tea.



Выражение **to be going to** обычно не употребляется с глаголами движения.

He *is coming* for the weekend.

Он *собирается приехать* на выходные.

### 3. Present Indefinite

- действие в соответствии с программой или расписанием  
The Berlin train *arrives* in Moscow at 6 p. m. sharp.
- будущее действие в придаточных времени и условия  
He won't come unless you *invite* him personally.  
As soon as you *finish* writing, hand in your papers, please.

## Выберите правильный вариант.

43.1

1. Do you have any plans for tonight? — Well, actually I ..... to the cinema with Mark.  
 ❶ go    ❷ am going    ❸ am going to go    ❹ will go
2. The dress suits you wonderfully! — Yes, I think I ..... it.  
 ❶ will buy    ❷ buy    ❸ am going to buy
3. Do you know that Claire and James ..... in a month? — Oh, really? What wonderful news!  
 ❶ will get married    ❷ get married    ❸ are getting married
4. When ..... the second term .....?  
 ❶ will ..... start    ❷ does ..... start    ❸ is ..... going to start
5. We ..... a test on Monday. I have to revise a lot of rules.  
 ❶ have    ❷ are having    ❸ will have
6. Why are you buying so much wallpaper? — My husband and I ..... our flat.  
 ❶ are going to redecorate    ❷ will redecorate    ❸ redecorate
7. We ..... to a new flat next week.  
 ❶ are moving    ❷ will move    ❸ move
8. The concert ..... at 7 p. m. So let's meet at 6:45 near the entrance to the concert hall.  
 ❶ will begin    ❷ is going to begin    ❸ begins
9. We ..... probably ..... to Italy for our next holiday.  
 ❶ are ..... going    ❷ will ..... go
10. I'm hungry. — Me too. I ..... some sandwiches.  
 ❶ am going to make    ❷ am making    ❸ will make
11. Why are you taking out this old sewing machine? — I ..... this dress. It's too big for me now.  
 ❶ am going to remake    ❷ will remake    ❸ am remaking
12. I'm looking forward to seeing my daughter. — When ..... she ..... back from the summer camp?  
 ❶ is ..... going to come    ❷ will ..... come    ❸ is ..... coming
13. If you ..... Jack, tell him to call me. — O. K. Why? — It's a secret. — Come on! ..... you ..... him something I shouldn't know?  
 ❶ see; will ..... tell    ❷ see; are ..... going to tell    ❸ will see; will ..... tell
14. Oh, the bus is so slow! I hope we ..... late.  
 ❶ aren't going to be    ❷ aren't    ❸ won't be

## Переведите.

43.2

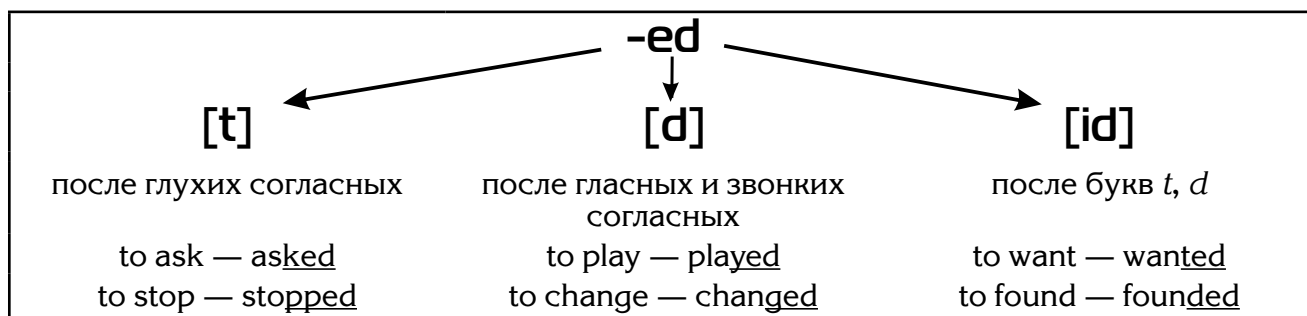
1. Боюсь, они нам не поверят. — Пусть делают, что хотят. Я не собираюсь им ничего доказывать.
2. Пожалуй, я куплю эту книгу в подарок подруге. Я иду к ней завтра на день рождения.
3. Во сколько начнется фильм? — В 5. — Тогда я не смогу пойти. Мои занятия закончатся только в 6.
4. Они собираются уехать восьмичасовым поездом. Тогда они будут на море уже днем.
5. Летом дни станут длиннее, а ночи короче.
6. Не забудь зонт. Собирается дождь.
7. Мэри приведет своего нового друга на вечеринку. — Правда? Как ты думаешь, ему понравится наша компания?



## 1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ

- Правильные глаголы образуют Past Indefinite при помощи прибавления окончания **-ed** к инфинитиву глагола без частицы *to*.

Окончание **-ed** может читаться следующим образом:



**Обратите внимание на правила орфографии:**

to live — lived; to finish — finished

to copy — copied

**BUT!** to stay — stayed

to stop — stopped; to régret — regretted

**BUT!** to 'visit — visited

- Неправильные глаголы имеют особые формы в Past Indefinite, которые надо заучивать (см. Приложение).
- Вопросительная и отрицательная формы образуются при помощи вспомогательного глагола **do** в Past Indefinite — **did**.

He *fell* ill last night. He *didn't fall* ill last night. *Did* he *fall* ill last night?

## 2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ

- Действие, которое имело место в прошлом (обычно указывается или подразумевается время совершения действия: *last week, a month ago, the other day, yesterday, the day before yesterday, ...*)

Who *did* you *meet* there?

I *didn't sleep* well last night.

They *got married* seven years ago.

- Цепочка действий в прошлом

On Sunday morning she *did* the shopping, *cleaned* the flat and *made* dinner for the whole family.

- ## 3. Для выражения повторяющегося действия в прошлом используются конструкции **used to + инфинитив** и **would + инфинитив**, которые переводятся как *раньше, бывало, когда-то*.

**Used to** используется для выражения действия или состояния; **would** выражает только действие.

He *used to be* more friendly.

*Раньше он был более приветлив.*

The Browns *used to visit* us quite often.

*Бывало, Брауны нас довольно часто навещали.*

They *would write* to each other every week.

*Когда-то они каждую неделю писали друг другу.*

**Прочитайте.****44.1**

created, missed, studied, filled, looked, fainted, washed, answered, phoned, visited, seemed, closed, opened, hated, liked, divided, fitted, explained, cried, touched, stayed

**Составьте предложения о том, что реально произошло или не произошло вчера с вами.****44.2**

★ I, to quarrel, with a friend ⇒ *I quarrelled with my friend yesterday. / I didn't quarrel with my friend yesterday.*

1. I, to have classes, till three .....
2. My mother, to go shopping, after work .....
3. My friend, to phone, in the evening .....
4. I, to get up, early in the morning .....
5. It, to be one's day off .....
6. I, to see, a film at the cinema .....
7. My mother, to make, a delicious dinner .....
8. My friend, to invite to a party .....
9. There, to be, an interesting show, on TV .....
10. My parents, to plan, a holiday .....

**Задайте вопросы к выделенным словам.****44.3**

★ He gave me *a vase* as a present. ⇒ *What did he give you as a present?*

1. Lucy called me *twice* last week. ....
2. He was born *in 1968*. ....
3. I wrote a letter *to Nick* in the morning. ....
4. *The children* broke that cup the other day. ....
5. They went *to the country* for the weekend. ....
6. The weather was *awful* on Sunday. ....
7. It took me *an hour* to read that article in yesterday's newspaper. ....
8. There was *a gun* in the criminal's bag. ....
9. *Yes*, I spoke to Mr. Nickson on Tuesday. ....
10. Nelly danced *with Mark* at the party. ....

**Переведите.****44.4**

1. Мы познакомились пять лет назад.
2. Когда он уехал?
3. Сколько комнат было в вашей старой квартире?
4. На днях у моей подруги был день рождения, и она устроила прекрасную вечеринку.
5. Почему ты сразу не сказал мне правду?
6. Вчера я его не видела. — Позавчера его тоже не было на работе.
7. Ник, ты отсутствовал в прошлый раз. Ты болел? — Да, я плохо себя чувствовал.
8. Когда-то я читала эту книгу по-английски. Я помню, что было довольно интересно.
9. Когда вы были за городом в последний раз? — Это было очень давно.

**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**

have (has)	+	причастие прошедшего времени
------------	---	------------------------------

- Правильные глаголы образуют причастие прошедшего времени (Participle II) при помощи окончания **-ed**, что совпадает с формой Past Indefinite (см. *Unit 44*). Неправильные глаголы имеют особую форму (см. *Приложение*). Вопросительная и отрицательная формы образуются при помощи вспомогательного глагола **have (has)**.

I *have finished* the work. *Have you finished* the work?

I *haven't finished* the work.

He *has bought* a new car. *Has he bought* a new car?

He *hasn't bought* a new car.

**2. УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЕ**

- Present Perfect обозначает действие, которое произошло когда-то в прошлом и имеет связь с настоящим. Неважно, когда именно произошло действие, важен его результат на момент речи.

He *has come* to see you. (= результат: He is here.)

- The Present Perfect Tense употребляется только в контексте настоящего времени со следующими наречиями:

**ever**                                    *Have you ever played* the piano?

**never**                                   *I've never done* such a difficult job.

**just**                                     *He has just called* me.

**already**                                *We have already discussed* this problem.

**yet**                                      *She hasn't told* me the news *yet*. *Has she told* you the news *yet*? (употребление *already* и *yet* — см. *Unit 83*)

**today**                                   *I haven't seen* her *today*.

**this morning**                        *We haven't visited* our grandparents *this month*.

**(this week,**                             *Have you been* abroad *this summer*?

**this month,**

**this summer, и т. д.)**

(если период времени  
еще не истек)

**so far**                                   *I haven't had* dinner *so far*.

**once (twice, three times,**    *I've seen* this film *twice*.

**the third time, и т. д.)**        *It's the first time we have met*.



Обратите внимание на употребление предлога **to** в предложениях типа

*Have you ever been to* Greece?

*Вы когда-нибудь были в Греции?*  
(= ездили в ...)

**BUT!** They *have been in* Paris since Monday.

*Они находятся в Париже*  
*с понедельника.*

## Составьте предложения по образцу.

45.1

1 -----

★ the longest poem — to learn ⇒ *This is the longest poem I've ever learnt.*

1. the most difficult exam — to take .....
2. the most wonderful present — to get .....
3. the funniest joke — to hear .....
4. the most hard-working person — to meet .....
5. the best friend — to have .....

2 -----

★ (to see, this film?) — (never / twice) ⇒ — *Have you ever seen this film? — No, I've never seen this film. / — Yes, I've seen this film twice.*

1. (to try, to speak, Chinese?) — (never) .....
2. (to drive, a car?) — (several times) .....
3. (to break, one's arm?) — (once) .....
4. (to get, letters, from abroad?) — (never) .....
5. (to learn, poems, by heart?) — (many times) .....

3 -----

★ (to be, France?) — (never / several times) ⇒ — *Have you ever been to France? — No, I've never been to France. / — Yes, I've been to France several times.*

1. (to be, the Historic Museum?) — (once) .....
2. (to be, Australia?) — (never) .....
3. (to be, the Zoo?) — (three times) .....
4. (to be, a birthday party?) — (many times) .....
5. (to be, the Bolshoy Theatre?) — (never) .....

4 -----

★ the first time — to hear this song (I) ⇒ *It's the first time I've heard this song.*

1. the second time — to consult this doctor (I) .....
2. not the first time — to make this mistake (you) .....
3. the first time — to lie to somebody (she)? .....
4. the third time — to fall ill — this year (the child) .....
5. the first time — to help somebody (they)? .....

## Дайте ответы на вопросы, употребляя слова в скобках.

45.2

★ Have you done exercise one yet? (just) ⇒ *Yes, I've just done it.*

1. Have you learnt all the rules of English grammar yet? (yet) .....
2. Have you done many exercises yet? (already) .....
3. Have you answered the first two questions yet? (already) .....
4. Have you learnt everything about Present Perfect yet? (so far) .....
5. Have you finished exercise two yet? (just) .....

Составьте предложения, в зависимости от реальной ситуации употребив глагол в утвердительной или отрицательной форме Present Perfect.

**45.3**

★ I, to see, an interesting film, this month ⇒ *I have seen an interesting film this month. I haven't seen any interesting film this month.*

1. My mother, to do the shopping, today .....
2. I, to read, an exciting book, this summer .....
3. My friend, to catch cold, this month .....
4. I, to visit, my grandparents, this week .....
5. I, to make, progress in English, this year .....

**45.4**

Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в форме Present Perfect.

**1** -----

1. .... (you, ever, to be) to any exotic country?
2. It's not the first time you ..... (to argue), is it?
3. I ..... (to hear) a lot about this book but I ..... (not, to read) it so far.
4. I ..... (already, to finish) the picture. You may look at it.
5. Where ..... (you, to be)? — I ..... (to be) to the bank.
6. This is the most boring holiday I ..... (ever, to have).
7. I ..... (to be) so busy this week that I ..... (not, even, to watch) TV.
8. It's too early to call him. He ..... (not, to wake up) yet.
9. I ..... (never, to see) a sunrise in all my life. It must be beautiful!
10. I ..... (just, to hear) the news! It's awful!

**2** -----

1. This is the third time you ..... (to speak) to Mr. Campbell. What's your impression of him?
2. I'm so hungry! I ..... (not, to eat) anything today! — But why?
3. .... (you, to be) to the theatre this month? — Oh, yes, actually I ..... (to be) there twice this month.
4. As far as I know they ..... (to sell) their car because they need money badly.
5. I'm afraid he can't help you. He ..... (to leave) for Vienna.
6. .... (you, not to get) my telegram yet? — No, sorry. What's the matter?
7. We ..... (to buy) a computer at last! Now it will be easier for me to work.
8. Stop reminding me of this letter! You ..... (already, to tell) me about it twice!
9. The problem is too complicated! I ..... (not, to clear up) all the details so far.
10. .... (you, to have) a holiday this summer? — No, not yet. But I'm going on holiday in August.

**3** -----

1. .... (you, ever, to be) to the circus? — Sure, and I'd like to go again.
2. What ..... (to happen)? — I ..... (to lose) my purse with all the money!
3. Is it the second time your brother ..... (to get) married? — Why? He ..... (never, to be) married before.
4. You ..... (to take) too many pictures! There's no place for all of them in the photo album.

5. I ..... (*just, to explain*) everything to you. What else do you want?
6. It's the third glass of beer you ..... (*to drink*) today. Isn't it enough?
7. .... (*your Dad, to return*) from his business trip yet? — He is coming this evening.
8. This is the most dangerous, accident my brother ..... (*ever, to have*).
9. The plant ..... (*to grow*) too large. I'm afraid I'll have to cut it.
10. .... (*you, to prepare*) everything for the party? — Yes, almost everything is ready.

**Исправьте ошибки.****45.5**

1. Have you ever been at the Tretyakov Gallery? .....
2. Have you already done your homework? .....
3. This is the fourth time you are asking me the same question. ....
4. I've just took this book from the library. ....
5. I met him only once. ....
6. He hasn't never got a bad mark. ....
7. Has Mary written the letter so far? .....
8. I've been very tired today. ....
9. I had a hard day today. ....
10. How many times have you see this film? .....

**Переведите.****45.6****1** -----

1. Я никогда раньше не бывала в этом магазине.
2. Это самая красивая мелодия, которую я когда-либо слышала.
3. Ты уже позавтракала? — Нет, я только собираюсь завтракать. Я только что встала.
4. Почему они до сих пор не починили машину?
5. Я ему дважды звонила, но его еще нет дома.
6. Ты читал сегодня газеты? — Нет еще.
7. Они уже переехали, но я их еще не навещала.
8. Вот твоя рубашка. Я ее постирала.
9. Эта пятая пара обуви, которую она купила в этом месяце. — А зачем ей так много?
10. Сколько раз вы проверяли этот документ? Там очень много опечаток!

**2** -----

1. Вы когда-нибудь путешествовали автостопом? — Нет. А вы?
2. Вы впервые посадили эти цветы?
3. Этим летом я совсем не отдохнула!
4. Наконец-то ты пришел! Где ты был?
5. Это самая тяжелая работа, которую мне когда-либо приходилось делать.
6. Что случилось? Ты такая бледная!
7. Кошка уже не в первый раз рвет мои занавески! — А ты пробовала ее наказывать?
8. Почему ты никогда не рассказывала мне об этом?
9. Вы когда-нибудь бывали на севере страны? — Да, я бывала там на экскурсиях несколько раз.
10. Уже очень поздно, а дети до сих пор не вернулись. Я очень волнуюсь!

1. Present Perfect обозначает также действие, которое началось до момента речи и продолжалось вплоть до него или все еще продолжается.

I *'ve known* her all my life.

Я знаю ее всю жизнь.

2. В этом значении (так же, как и в *Unit 45*) Present Perfect употребляется только в контексте настоящего времени. В предложении, как правило, есть следующие слова и обороты:

- слова **lately** или **recently**

He *has been* very nervous *lately*.

Он очень нервничает в последнее время.

We *have made* great progress *recently*.

В последнее время мы добились больших успехов.

- указание на весь период протекания действия с предлогом **for** (**for an hour, for many years, for the last few days, for a long time, for ages** и т. п.)

I *haven't spoken* to him *for the last two days*.

Я не разговаривал с ним в последние два дня.

She *hasn't had* a proper rest *for a long time*.

Она давно не отдыхала как следует.



В вопросе о том, сколько длится действие, также употребляется Present Perfect.

*How long have you been* married?

Сколько вы женаты?

— Oh, for five years already!

— О, уже пять лет.

- указание на момент, с которого действие началось. Этот момент обозначается словом **since**, которое может быть:

- \* предлогом с

He *hasn't called* me *since* September.

Он не звонил мне с сентября.

- \* наречием *с тех пор*

He moved to a new flat in September and *hasn't called* me *since* (*ever since*).

Он переехал на новую квартиру в сентябре и с тех пор (с тех самых пор) не звонил мне.

- \* союзом *с тех пор, как*

He *hasn't called* me *since* he moved to a new flat.

Он не звонил мне с тех пор, как переехал на новую квартиру.



Обратите внимание на распределение времен в главном и придаточном предложениях:

в главном ⇒ Present Perfect;

в придаточном ⇒ Past Indefinite.

**Составьте утвердительные или отрицательные предложения о себе.****46.1**

★ I, to spend, a lot of money, lately ⇒ *I have spent a lot of money lately. / I haven't spent much money lately.*

1. I, to be, very busy, lately .....
2. My Dad, to have, problems at work, recently .....
3. My friend, to make, progress in English, lately .....
4. My Granny, to be ill, lately .....
5. I, to learn, useful things, recently .....

**Составьте вопросы с How long.****46.2**

★ She is ill. ⇒ *How long has she been ill?*

1. John has a cold. ....
2. Mary is in love with Bruce. ....
3. I know their secret. ....
4. The Pitts have a car. ....
5. Nick is on holiday. ....
6. Mr. Jones is my boss. ....
7. I hear some strange noises. ....
8. I see what you mean. ....
9. Mum has a bad headache. ....
10. Brian is at home. ....

**Ответьте на вопросы в Present Perfect, используя слова в скобках.****46.3**

★ When did you play the piano last? (*for ages*) ⇒ *I haven't played the piano for ages.*

1. When were you at the cinema last? (*for several months*) .....
2. When did you travel by plane last? (*since last summer*) .....
3. When did you see your classmates last? (*since I left school*) .....
4. When did you write a letter last? (*for many years*) .....
5. When did you speak to Mary last? (*since we quarrelled*) .....
6. When did you give a party last? (*for a month*) .....
7. When did you hear from Tom last? (*for the last few days*) .....
8. When did you go for a walk last? (*since last weekend*) .....
9. When did you buy flowers last? (*for ages*) .....
10. When did you phone your friend last? (*since Monday*) .....

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя Present Perfect с since или for.****46.5**

★ I was at the theatre on November 3 last. ⇒ *I haven't been to the theatre since November 3.*

★ It's a month since I ate ice-cream. ⇒ *I haven't eaten ice-cream for a month.*

1. She took her temperature in the morning. ....
2. I last rode a bicycle about ten years ago. ....
3. Pete visited us in May last. ....
4. She arrived in London on Saturday. ....
5. Rachel and Simon got married five years ago. ....
6. It's three weeks since I consulted the doctor. ....
7. We got a letter from Tom in autumn last. ....
8. It's two years since we were at the seaside. ....
9. We had our last English class before the teacher fell ill. ....
10. He got into prison in 1980. ....



**Вставьте *since* или *for*.****46.5**

1. He has phoned me twice ..... my birthday.
2. Sue has been my best friend ..... a long time.
3. The child has had a sore throat ..... a few days.
4. She's been at home ..... 6 o'clock in the evening.
5. She's been on a business trip ..... a month.
6. The window has been open ..... evening.
7. They have lived here ..... their marriage.
8. I haven't eaten anything ..... two days.
9. It's been sunny ..... early morning.
10. Michael has been Ann's husband ..... at least five years.
11. The rains have lasted ..... three months!
12. This problem has existed ..... the beginning of the century.
13. I've known the news ..... he returned.
14. Helen has changed a lot ..... that time.
15. Nothing interesting has happened ..... the last week.

**Исправьте ошибки.****46.6**

1. I know Ben since my childhood. ....
2. Since when did you start to work? .....
3. George has been the best student since he has entered the University. ....  
.....
4. The children have changed a lot in the last time. ....
5. Mr. Brown hasn't been at work for last week. ....
6. Mr. Brown hasn't been at work since the last week. ....
7. How long do you own this flat? .....
8. I took part in some competitions recently. ....
9. Alice has been our secretary for several last years. ....
10. They've been to Paris since Tuesday. ....

**Переведите.****46.7**

- 1** -----
1. Я давно знаю Ричарда. Мы соседи уже пять лет.
  2. Сто лет тебя не видела! Как поживаешь?
  3. Мы не виделись с 1986 года. Боюсь, я ее не узнаю.
  4. В каких странах вы побывали в последнее время?
  5. Миссис Дент очень больна. Она уже две недели в больнице.
  6. Я была очень занята в последние несколько дней, но теперь могу отдохнуть.
  7. Я не ездила за город с тех пор, как начала здесь работать.
  8. Сколько вы с Хелен дружите? — О, с детства!
  9. Мы в Лондоне уже несколько дней. Мы уже многое увидели.
  10. Он уехал зимой, и с тех пор я его не видела.

**2** -----

1. В последнее время он как-то странно себя ведет. Интересно, что случилось.
2. Сколько у тебя уже эта картина? Я ее раньше не видела.
3. Мама очень нервничает с тех пор, как узнала эти новости.
4. Этот человек здесь уже полчаса. Он кого-то ждет?
5. Зачем ты накупил так много книг в последнее время?
6. С какого времени вы здесь живете?
7. Я не просила ее о помощи с тех пор, как мы поссорились.
8. В понедельник погода испортилась, и с тех самых пор дедушка не выходит на улицу.
9. Сколько раз он писал тебе с тех пор, как уехал?
10. Фрэнк в прекрасной форме. Он уже много лет не болел.

**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**

- Вспомогательный глагол **to be** в Present Perfect + причастие настоящего времени (-ing форма).

**have (has) been**

+

**-ing**

- Орфографические правила образования причастия настоящего времени см. в *Unit 40*.  
Mary *has been learning* English for two years.  
They *have been watching* TV all day.
- Вопросительная форма образуется при помощи **have (has)**.  
*Has he been working* here long?  
*Have you been doing* anything special lately.



Present Perfect Continuous, как правило, не употребляется в отрицательных предложениях. Вместо него употребляется Present Perfect.

Ann *hasn't played* the piano much lately.

**2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ**

- Действие, которое началось до момента речи и продолжалось до него или все еще продолжается. В этом значении Present Perfect Continuous употребляется с теми же словами и оборотами, что и Present Perfect: **lately, recently, since, for ...** (см. *Unit 46*).

My Dad *has been trying* to fix the bicycle since morning.

She's *been sleeping* for two hours already.

The students *have been working* hard lately.

- Действие, которое происходило непосредственно перед моментом речи и отражается на настоящей ситуации или объясняет ее.

Ally's eyes are red. She *has been crying*.



Глаголы, не имеющие форм Continuous, не употребляются в Present Perfect Continuous.

В указанных значениях они образуют Present Perfect (см. *Unit 46*).

**Отреагируйте, используя слова в скобках.  
Употребите глаголы в Present Perfect Continuous.**

47.1

- ★ Why is Lucy looking so tired? (*to work hard, lately*) ⇒ *She has been working hard lately.*
1. Why are Pete and Tom looking at each other so angrily? (*to argue and quarrel, for at least an hour*) .....
  2. Why is your Mum looking so pale? (*to suffer from a headache, all day*) .....
  3. Why is the room in a mess? (*the children, to play, for the last two hours*) .....
  4. You look much thinner! Have you lost weight? — Yes, (*to diet, lately*) .....
  5. (*on the phone*) Liz, you sound busy. — (*to do the housework, since morning*) .....
  6. Have you come to any conclusion? — Not yet, but (*to think about the problem, since you told me about it*) .....
  7. I think now you can sing this song with the player. — Oh, I'm not sure, (*to listen to it, for half an hour*), but I can't get several words. ....

**Постройте вопрос с *How long*, употребляя Present Perfect Continuous.**

47.2

- ★ Nick is reading a magazine. ⇒ *How long has he been reading it?*
1. Mrs. Clown is waiting for you. ....
  2. The children are watching TV. ....
  3. The Tyrons are walking in the park. ....
  4. Mary is cleaning the flat. ....
  5. William is doing his homework. ....
  6. George is having dinner. ....
  7. Sarah and her friend are talking on the phone. ....

**Переведите.**

47.3

1. Они обсуждают какой-то вопрос уже целый час. Неужели он действительно так важен?
2. Где Сэм? — Он в комнате. Он делает уроки с тех пор, как вернулся из школы.
3. Мэри много занимается на пианино в последнее время. Завтра у нее концерт.
4. Сколько ты уже учишь это стихотворение?
5. Ребенок плачет с тех пор, как его мама ушла на работу. Я не знаю, что делать.
6. Этот цветок не растет с тех пор, как изменилась погода.
7. Чем ты занимался в последнее время?
8. Мой брат сейчас в Австралии. Он путешествует уже целый месяц.
9. Ты давно меня ждешь? — Нет, минут пять.
10. Наши соседи все утро кричат друг на друга! Интересно, в чем дело.
11. С каких пор ты здесь работаешь?
12. В последнее время я не пользуюсь этим словарем.
13. Кто пользовался моим словарем? Почему он не на месте?
14. Почему ты так долго готовишь этот салат? — В нем много ингредиентов.
15. Моя сестра слишком долго лежала на солнце, поэтому у нее красная кожа.

- 1.** Present Perfect делает акцент на завершении и результате действия.  
Present Perfect Continuous делает акцент на самом действии или его продолжительности.

<p>➤➤ Mr. Priestly <i>has planted</i> five apple trees today. Сегодня мистер Пристли посадил пять яблонь.</p>	<p>Mr. Priestly <i>has been planting</i> apple trees <i>all day</i> today. Мистер Пристли сегодня весь день сажал яблони.</p>
---	---

- 2.** Если в предложении есть указание на то, сколько раз совершалось действие, употребляется только Present Perfect.


<p>➤➤ I've <i>read</i> this book <i>two or three times</i>. Я читала (прочла) эту книгу два или три раза.</p>	<p>I've <i>been reading</i> a lot lately. В последнее время я много читаю.</p>
---	--

- 3.** Present Perfect употребляется в вопросах **how much, how many, how many times** о завершенных действиях. Present Perfect Continuous употребляется в вопросах **how long** о действиях, которые еще продолжаются.

<p>➤➤ <i>How many pages</i> of this magazine <i>has</i> he <i>read</i>? Сколько страниц этого журнала он прочел?</p>	<p><i>How long has</i> he <i>been reading</i> this magazine? Сколько он читает этот журнал?</p>
--	---

- 4.** Для описания очень давно или постоянно продолжающейся ситуации предпочтительно употребление Present Perfect.

<p>➤➤ She <i>has lived</i> in this town <i>all her life</i>. Она живет (прожила) в этом городке всю жизнь.</p>	<p>Our neighbour <i>has been living</i> here <i>for just a few days</i>. Наш сосед живет здесь всего несколько дней.</p>
--	--

-  Обратите внимание, что разница в значении Present Perfect и Present Perfect Continuous, как правило, находит отражение и в русском переводе.

Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в форме Present Perfect или Present Perfect Continuous.

48.1

1. — She ..... (to eat) a lot of sweet things lately.  
— How many sweets ..... (she, to eat) today?
2. — What ..... (you, to do) all day?  
— I ..... (to revise) the material for my exam.  
— ..... (you, to revise) everything?
3. I ..... (to hear) your promises so many times! I don't believe you any more!
4. — Oh, there's paint in your hair!  
— I ..... (to paint) the ceiling in my room.
5. How long did it take you to make such a wonderful dinner? You ..... (to cook) so many dishes!
6. The book is so interesting! I ..... (to read) for three hours. I ..... (to read) almost all of it.
7. Mum ..... (to have) a rest in her room since she returned from work. Don't disturb her.
8. — You're breathing with difficulty! What's the matter?  
— I ..... (to walk) very fast.
9. — Nick ..... (to make) real progress lately.  
— Oh, yes, he ..... (to work) hard this term.
10. — I ..... (to know) Mr. Jackson for so many years!
11. The weather ..... (to be) awful lately. It ..... (to rain) for several weeks!
12. — How long ..... (your sister, to think) over Pete's proposal?  
— Oh, for several days.  
— Well, ..... (she, to decide) anything?

Переведите.

48.2

1. Эта пожилая леди так долго выбирает подарок! — Неужели она еще ничего не выбрала?
2. Я жду звонка от Фрэнка с трех часов, а он до сих пор не позвонил.
3. Я очень довольна нашей новой няней. — Сколько она у вас работает?
4. Я знаю своих соседей целую вечность. Они милые люди.
5. В последнее время Элис очень рассеяна. Ты не знаешь, что с ней случилось?
6. Мы не разговариваем друг с другом с тех пор, как поссорились.
7. Ник копит деньги на новый плеер с тех пор, как увидел рекламу, но пока он еще недостаточно накопил.
8. Я уже давно хочу купить новый компьютер.
9. Ты принимал участие в каких-нибудь соревнованиях в последнее время?
10. Мой брат целый день сегодня слушает громкую музыку! — А ты что делала все это время?
11. У него эта болезнь с детства. Но в последние несколько дней ему хуже.
12. Сколько занятий ты пропустил в этом месяце?
13. Мы много раз поднимали этот вопрос, но в последнее время мы его не обсуждали.
14. Она покупает много новых вещей с тех пор, как вышла замуж. У нее богатый муж.
15. По-моему, Дик курит больше обычного в последнее время. Сегодня с утра он выкурил уже 10 сигарет!

Present Perfect (Present Perfect Continuous) никогда не употребляется в следующих случаях:

- с указаниями точного времени *yesterday, last night (week, year, month ...), the other day, just now, a week (a minute, a month ...) ago, in 1990, etc.*

He **finished** school *two years ago*.

My Dad **returned** home very late *last night*.

- в вопросах, начинающихся с *when, what time* и т. п.

When **did** the child **fall ill**?

What time **did** you **have** lunch?

- когда речь идет о происхождении чего-либо, об открытиях, изобретениях и т. п.

Who **gave** you this advice?

The French **invented** the cinema.

- когда указания точного времени нет, но оно подразумевается

I've discussed the project with my boss. — What **did** he **say**? (= What did he say *during the discussion*?)

I **didn't know** my Granny. (= She is dead. We didn't meet *while she was alive*.)



Независимо от наличия слов и оборотов, характерных для Present Perfect, это время нельзя употребить в контексте прошедшего времени.

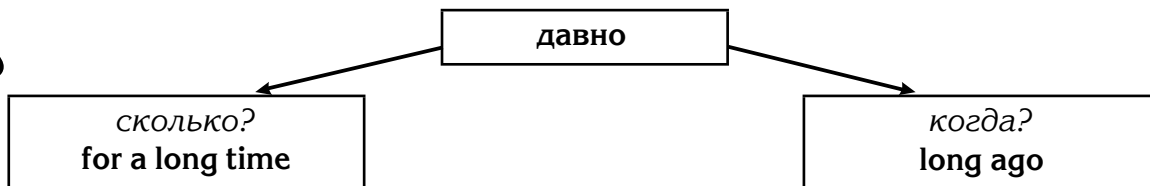


She **has been working** at school for many years.  
Она работает в школе много лет.  
(= и сейчас продолжает работать)

I've **been** to the Zoo twice.  
Я дважды была в зоопарке.  
(= на данный момент, до сих пор)

She **worked** at school for three years and then quit.  
Она проработала в школе три года, а затем уволилась. (= сейчас там не работает)

I **was** in the Zoo twice in my childhood.  
В детстве я дважды была в зоопарке.  
(= когда была ребенком)



Они давно женаты.  
They **have been married** for a long time.  
Я давно читаю эту книгу.  
I've **been reading** the book for a long time.

Они давно поженились.  
They **got married** long ago.  
Я давно читал эту книгу.  
I **read** the book long ago.

Употребите глаголы в форме *Present Perfect*  
(*Present Perfect Continuous*) или *Past Indefinite*.

49.1

- 1** -----
- Mr. Jones ..... (*not, to speak*) to me since he ..... (*to return*) from his trip.
  - Mr. Jones ..... (*to speak*) to me when he ..... (*to return*) from his trip.
  - She ..... (*to cook*) for the company for about two years. Everybody thinks her dinners are wonderful.
  - She ..... (*to cook*) for the company for about two years. Then she ..... (*to have*) a baby and ..... (*to leave*) the job.
  - I ..... (*already, to buy*) everything necessary for the party.
  - I ..... (*already, to buy*) everything necessary for the party on the way home.
  - I ..... (*to know*) this poem for a long time.
  - I ..... (*to know*) this poem long ago. But I can't remember it now.
  - When ..... (*you, to send*) him the letter?
  - Since when ..... (*you, to send*) him letters?
  - I ..... (*to read*) this book three or four times. I like it very much.
  - I ..... (*to read*) this book three or even four times in my childhood.
  - How long ..... (*you, to stay*) there?
  - How long ..... (*you, to stay*) here?

- 2** -----
- ..... (*you, to sleep*) well? — Oh, yes, thanks. I ..... (*to have*) a wonderful dream.
  - Why ..... (*you, to take*) the pill? Do you have a headache?
  - This woman ..... (*to spend*) several hours here. — What does she want? — I have no idea. She ..... (*to refuse*) to speak to me.
  - I ..... (*to see*) Nick before classes today.
  - She ..... (*to travel*) to many countries since she ..... (*to get*) this new job.
  - I ..... (*just, to pass*) the most difficult exam in my life. — How ..... (*you, to prepare*) for it?
  - ..... (*he, to take part*) in the concert?
  - Where ..... (*you, to get*) this rare book? I ..... (*to look*) for it in shops for ages.
  - He ..... (*to be*) my best student.
  - She ..... (*to get up*) very early this morning.

- 3** -----
- They ..... (*to be*) our neighbours for five years from 1999 till 2004.
  - ..... (*you, to walk*) with the baby today? — Yes, we ..... (*to take*) a walk in the morning. — How long ..... (*you, to walk*)? — For about two hours.
  - How ..... (*your first family party, to go*)? — I'm afraid it ..... (*to be*) a bit boring. But we ..... (*to improve*) since then.
  - He ..... (*to study*) medicine for three years. Then he ..... (*to give*) it up and ..... (*to leave*) for India. Nobody ..... (*to hear*) from him ever since.
  - He ..... (*to tell*) stories all evening. — Do you think he's going to tell more? — Oh, sure, he seems to know no end of them.
  - How many jokes ..... (*she, to tell*) you at the party?
  - Who ..... (*to compose*) the music to this opera?
  - How long ..... (*you, to be*) here? ..... (*you, to eavesdrop*)?
  - We ..... (*not, to meet*) for the last two weeks.
  - Where ..... (*you, to spend*) your holiday this year?



**Исправьте возможные ошибки.**

**49.2**



★ Have you met before? — **RIGHT**



★ I've heard the news the other day. — I **heard** the news the other day.



- 1** -----
1. I've just talked with him and he hasn't told me anything about it. ....
  2. I have found this coin in our garden. ....
  3. It's the first time I see him. ....
  4. I haven't had a good holiday for ages. ....
  5. I am not married so far. ....
  6. Have you heard the bell ringing? ....
  7. The first Olympic Games took place in Ancient Greece. ....
  8. They divorced for a long time. ....
  9. How many pages have you read today? ....
  10. How did it happen? ....

- 2** -----
1. I've already heard this legend when I was on an excursion in Italy. ....
  2. I've already been in this theatre. ....
  3. Have you lunch so far? ....
  4. We spoke on the phone for about an hour yesterday. ....
  5. He is very friendly since we helped him. ....
  6. It's a week since she has made a new dress. ....
  7. He has left by the first train this morning. ....
  8. I saw him at my friend's birthday party. ....
  9. Who gave you this toy, Charlie? ....
  10. Since when were you his assistant? ....

- 3** -----
1. I did nothing for the last two days. ....
  2. This sportsman was very famous. He has won ten gold medals. ....
  3. Have you visited your relatives lately? — Oh yes, I went to see my aunt on Saturday. ....
  4. I heard this joke several times. It doesn't seem funny any longer. ....
  5. He concealed the truth from us all this time! ....
  6. How long are you growing flowers? ....
  7. How long ago did you start growing flowers? ....

8. Why have you said it? .....
9. I didn't see Tom for two years. ....
10. The film began at 6 o'clock and lasted for two hours. Everybody has enjoyed it. ....

Переведите.

49.3

- 1** -----
1. Сегодня я проконсультировалась у другого врача. — И что он тебе посоветовал?
  2. Я уже был на этой экскурсии два года назад.
  3. Кто изобрел компьютер?
  4. Я недавно вернулась домой. — Ты уже поужинала?
  5. О чем ты написала в сочинении?
  6. В последние несколько дней об этом происшествии больше не было новостей.
  7. Мы давно дружим. — А когда вы познакомились?
  8. Ты когда-нибудь была за границей? — Да, много раз. В прошлом году мы с мужем ездили в Италию.
  9. Ты знаешь, сколько сражений выиграл Наполеон?
  10. Сколько ты здесь работаешь?
- 2** -----
1. Как давно ты начала здесь работать?
  2. Сколько гостей ты пригласил? — 15. Но, возможно, не все смогут прийти.
  3. С тех пор как родители уехали, я очень скучаю по ним.
  4. Вы когда-нибудь слышали об этой певице? — Да, она очень известна. Один раз я слышала ее концерт по радио. — И что она исполняла?
  5. Это третья двойка, которую ты получил по английскому. В чем дело? За что ты ее получил?
  6. Сколько ты сегодня спал? — Около 6 часов.
  7. Уже 12 лет, как она окончила университет.
  8. Это самая невероятная история, которая со мной произошла.
  9. Они давно спорят.
  10. Они давно поссорились. — Разве они еще не помирились?
- 3** -----
1. Мистер Спарк ушел. — А куда он пошел?
  2. Он что-то обдумывал примерно полчаса, затем быстро оделся и вышел.
  3. Сколько ты заплатила за эту картину?
  4. Она в отпуске с понедельника. — А зачем она взяла отпуск осенью?
  5. Он раньше много путешествовал, и с тех пор пишет книги о разных странах.
  6. Это канадцы придумали хоккей?
  7. Я уже дважды пыталась посмотреть этот фильм, но каждый раз засыпала в первые же полчаса. Не могу понять, почему он получил первую премию на конкурсе.
  8. Вы давно пришли? Сколько вы меня ждете?
  9. Пит не звонил мне с тех пор, как мы встретились на дне рождения Кейт. — Да он уже больше месяца в больнице! — Как?! Что случилось?
  10. Я уже 15 минут здесь. Ты раньше никогда не опаздывала. — Извини, я не виновата. Я попала в пробку.

**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**



Орфографические правила образования причастия настоящего времени см. в *Unit 40*.

My friend and I **were playing** chess when the telephone rang.

I **wasn't doing** anything special when he called.

What **were** you **doing** at 6 o'clock yesterday?

**2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ**

- Действие, которое происходило в определенный момент или период времени в прошлом, который может быть выражен:

\* точным указанием времени (*from 5 till 6 yesterday, at three o'clock yesterday, etc.*)

*At seven o'clock yesterday I was watching TV.*

\* другим действием в прошлом

Jack **was walking** down the street *when he saw Joan*.

\* контекстом или ситуацией

I met Mrs. Frank the other day. She **was reading** a paper on a bench in the park.

- Запланированное действие в ближайшем будущем в контексте прошедшего времени (в этом значении также употребляется выражение *to be going to*)

Mum prepared everything necessary for the party we **were giving** on Saturday.

I **was going to congratulate** her but it turned out that she was away.

- Часто повторяющееся действие, которое вызывает раздражение или недовольство (эмоциональный Continuous)



She **was constantly talking** about her health problems.

Составьте утвердительные или отрицательные предложения о том, что вы и ваши близкие делали в указанное время.

50.1

1. at this time yesterday — I, to walk in the park .....
2. at 8 yesterday morning — my mother, to make breakfast .....
3. at 1 o'clock yesterday — my friends, to have classes, at school (the Institute) .....
4. at 9 o'clock last night — my Dad, to watch the news program on TV .....
5. from 3 till 5 on Sunday — I, to prepare homework .....
6. from 10 till 11 on Saturday — my Mum and I, to clean the flat .....
7. at this time on Tuesday — I, to play, with my younger brother (sister) .....

Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в форме Past Continuous.

50.2

1. The street was absolutely empty and we ..... (*to drive*) very fast.
2. Did you really hear what they ..... (*to talk*) about? — I tell you it was about some robbery!
3. She was disgusting to look at! — But why! Isn't she pretty? — It wasn't that! She ..... (*always, to chew*) gum! I find it extremely unpleasant. Don't you?
4. .... (*the music, to play*) all the time from 7 till 9 in the evening?
5. When we arrived at the seaside the weather was disappointing at first. A strong wind ..... (*to blow*), the sky was cloudy and it ..... (*to drizzle*). But the next day the sun came out.
6. It sounds strange but I can't remember what I ..... (*to do*) at this time two days ago. — Perhaps you ..... (*to sleep*)?
7. It seems to me everybody ..... (*really, to enjoy*) the party when the awful news about that accident came.
8. I found the house in a mess. The light was on. The water in the bathroom ..... (*to run*), some dish ..... (*to burn*) in the oven. — Good Lord, it could have caught fire, then!
9. I asked the nurse who ..... (*to go*) upstairs to take the papers to Dr. Reed.
10. I didn't like him at all, to put it mildly. He ..... (*constantly, to bite*) his nails, which is a most annoying habit!
11. He was actually the only one who ..... (*to listen*) carefully to what I ..... (*to say*). That's why he attracted my attention at once.
12. What ..... (*she, to wear*) at the party?
13. .... (*you, not to wait*) for me at five? — But I was. Why didn't you come?
14. I can swear that fifteen minutes ago the child ..... (*to play*) on the carpet in the room. — Well, where is he now?
15. I nearly missed the bus. It ..... (*to leave*) a few minutes later.

Переведите.

50.3

1. Мистер Доули приезжал через два дня. Вся семья тщательно готовилась к его прибытию.
2. Я проснулся в 8 часов. Мама в это время завтракала, а папа уходил на работу.
3. Где ты был в 4 часа? — Гулял с собакой.
4. С ним было невозможно разговаривать! Он постоянно повторял одно и то же разными словами!
5. Детектив хочет знать, что мы делали вчера с 8 до 10 часов вечера. — Насколько я помню, ты решала кроссворды, а я вязала.
6. Всего два дня назад в это время я катался на лыжах за городом!

1. Past Continuous делает акцент на процессе действия. Past Indefinite говорит о самом факте совершения действия. При этом и Past Continuous, и Past Indefinite могут употребляться с одними и теми же указаниями времени.

<p>➤&lt; Вчера в 7 часов вечера он <i>возвращался</i> домой. At 7 o'clock last night he <b>was returning</b> home.</p>		<p>Вчера в 7 часов вечера он <i>вернулся</i> домой. At 7 o'clock last night he <b>returned</b> home.</p>
--	--	--

2. В сложных предложениях Past Continuous употребляется для описания ситуации в прошлом, а для выражения законченного действия во время этой ситуации употребляется Past Indefinite.

Just as I **was leaving** the office, Mr. Jones **arrived**.  
I **was returning** home when it **started** raining heavily.

Чтобы показать одновременность совершения действий, Past Continuous употребляется в обеих частях сложного предложения.

While she **was pouring** out the tea, I **was looking** through some magazine.



Не путайте подобные предложения с простой последовательностью действий.

<p>➤&lt; Когда позвонил Том, я <i>рассказывал</i> эту историю. When Tom <b>called</b> I <b>was telling</b> that story.</p>		<p>Когда <i>позвонил</i> Том, я <i>рассказал</i> ему эту историю. When Tom <b>called</b> I <b>told</b> him that story.</p>
--	--	--

3. С выражениями, типа «все утро», «весь вечер» употребляется и Past Indefinite, и Past Continuous.

She **watched** / **was watching** TV all evening.  
It **snowed** / **was snowing** all day.

4. В предложениях типа «Я играла на пианино 3 часа», «Он читал вчера 5 часов» употребляется только Past Indefinite.

I **played** the piano for three hours.  
He **read** for five hours yesterday.



Помните, что глаголы, обозначающие чувственное восприятие и умственную деятельность, не имеют форм Continuous (см. Unit 41).

I **didn't understand** anything at that moment yet.  
I **heard** him close the door at 6.



Обратите внимание на перевод следующих сочетаний:

Она *стояла и смотрела* в окно.  
Он *сидел и читал* газету.

She **stood looking** through the window.  
He **sat reading** a newspaper.

**Раскройте скобки, употребляя глагол в форме Past Continuous или Past Indefinite.****51.1**

1. He ..... (*to hurt*) his leg when he ..... (*to fall*) off the ladder.
2. I ..... (*to see*) that she ..... (*to enjoy*) the concert. She ..... (*to sit, to smile*).
3. Why ..... (*you, not, to open*) the door at once? — Sorry, I ..... (*not, to hear*) the bell.
4. I ..... (*to break*) the plate while I ..... (*to do*) the washing-up.
5. At two o'clock this afternoon I ..... (*to have*) lunch that's why you ..... (*not, to get*) me on the phone. What ..... (*you, to want*) to tell me? — Actually I ..... (*to call*) to tell you I ..... (*to come*) by the 7 o'clock train.
6. I ..... (*to find*) that old photo when I ..... (*to look*) through the album.
7. He ..... (*to look*) through the article for some time and then ..... (*to make*) notes.
8. They ..... (*to discuss*) the situation for about an hour at yesterday's meeting.
9. The boy ..... (*always, to fidget*)! But whenever I ..... (*to tell*) him not to, he ..... (*to stick*) out his tongue at me.
10. While the Coppards ..... (*to work*) in the garden Mr. Coppard ..... (*to have*) a heart attack and his wife ..... (*to call*) the doctor.
11. I ..... (*to know*) for sure what ..... (*to happen*) in the next room at that moment.
12. I ..... (*not, to mean*) to shout at you. I ..... (*just, to speak*) in an emotional manner!
13. When I ..... (*to arrive*) the party ..... (*to be*) in full swing. Someone ..... (*to play*) the piano and the guests ..... (*to dance*). Nobody ..... (*to notice*) me come in.
14. I ..... (*to ask*) her something but she ..... (*not, to answer*) as she ..... (*to taste*) some dish.
15. What ..... (*you, to do*) when you ..... (*to find*) the ring? — I ..... (*to call*) the police, of course.

**Переведите.****51.2**

1. Неужели никто ничего не заметил? — Нет, все смотрели телевизор и ничего подозрительного не слышали.
2. Когда зазвонил будильник, он его выключил и встал.
3. Он все утро лежал в постели и ничего не делал.
4. Я обдумывал наш план, когда мне в голову пришла прекрасная идея.
5. Когда мы слушали новости, мы еще не знали, что они значат.
6. Я не понимал ни слова. Они говорили очень быстро.
7. Пока он выступал, все его внимательно слушали.
8. В коридоре было очень шумно. Соседи что-то праздновали.
9. Когда он вернулся, мы подробно обсудили план.
10. Он говорил по телефону минуты три, затем передал трубку мне.
11. Она постоянно смотрела в зеркало! Это все больше действовало мне на нервы.
12. Холодало, и мы вернулись в город.
13. Неважно, что именно я делал в 5 часов. — А все-таки? — У меня было свидание.
14. Она плакала всю ночь. — А ты что делал в это время? — А я сидел и думал, как ей помочь.
15. Я так устала, что спала 10 часов!
16. Последний раз я видел его на вокзале. Он что-то искал в сумке и, явно, нервничал, так как не мог найти то, что ему было в тот момент нужно. — А вы не помните, как он был одет?
17. В субботу Брауны переезжали на новую квартиру, и мы зашли попрощаться с ними.
18. Дети с нетерпением ждали начала праздника. Все обсуждали подарки, которые им хотелось получить.

**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**

**had** + **причастие прошедшего времени**

Правила образования причастия прошедшего времени см. в *Unit 45*.

Вопросительная и отрицательная формы образуются при помощи вспомогательного глагола **had**.

I *had finished* working by 4 o'clock.

She *hadn't returned* yet when I called.

*Had* they *discussed* the events by the time you arrived?

**2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ**

- Действие, совершившееся до определенного момента в прошлом. Этот момент в прошлом может быть выражен:
  - \* указанием времени с предлогом **by**  
She *had written* the essay *by* 6 o'clock.
  - \* другим действием в прошлом  
By the time we *came* the children *had* already *stopped* fighting.  
He *had done* everything necessary when I *arrived*.
  - \* контекстом (когда нарушается цепочка последовательных действий и в повествовании делается шаг назад, чтобы указать на действие, имевшее место раньше)  
He *arrived* at the office, *prepared* some papers, and *went* to the meeting he *had arranged* with his boss.
- Действие, которое началось до определенного момента в прошлом и продолжалось вплоть до него или в тот момент все еще продолжалось. В этом значении Past Perfect употребляется со словами и оборотами, характерными для Present Perfect: **ever, never, just, for, since, lately, ...** (см. *Units 45, 46*).



Помните, что, в отличие от Present Perfect, Past Perfect употребляется только в контексте прошедшего времени.

She looked pale. She *had had* a headache *since morning*.

They were very close friends. They *had known* each other *for ages*.

She wanted to go to France. She *had never been* there before.

**Закончите ситуации. Составьте предложения или части предложений из данных слов, употребляя глаголы в форме Past Perfect.**

52.1

★ She was very worried. (*by midnight, her son, not, to return, yet*) ⇒ *By midnight her son hadn't returned yet.*

1. They thought they were well-prepared for the exam. (*to study, all the necessary material, by the end of the term*) .....
2. He was very fond of travelling. By the time he was thirty-five. (*to visit, 12 countries*) .....
3. They were a very happy couple. (*to be married, for 10 years*) .....
4. There was nobody on the platform. (*the train, already, to leave*) when I arrived. ....
5. I could hardly recognize her. (*not, to see, each other, since 1990*) .....

**Раскройте скобки, употребляя глагол в форме Past Perfect.**

52.2

1. Frank was in the Tretyakov Gallery last Sunday. He ..... (*never, to be*) there before.
2. She entered the room, greeted the guests, and introduced the friend she ..... (*to bring*).
3. By 6 o'clock they ..... (*not, to announce*) the results yet.
4. He ..... (*to try*) getting her on the phone since early morning but she was out.
5. By the time he was 15 he ..... (*to break*) his arm three times.
6. She ..... (*to do*) all the housework before the children returned from school.
7. Everybody was eager to get tickets for her concert. She ..... (*to be*) the most famous singer in the country for many years.
8. It was the second time you ..... (*to lie*) to me. That's why I never believed you afterwards.
9. She ..... (*to be*) very busy lately so she nearly forgot about our arrangement.
10. We ..... (*to discuss*) every detail of the plan by evening.
11. He had dinner and took out the book he ..... (*to buy*) on his way home.
12. When the police arrived the criminal ..... (*already, to escape*).
13. It was the most beautiful bunch of flowers I ..... (*ever, to get*).
14. I was surprised when she called. We ..... (*not, to speak*) for the last two months.
15. At the age of 40 he was a very experienced specialist. He ..... (*to achieve*) a lot since he started working in that field.
16. It ..... (*to get*) dark by the time we reached the place.
17. He had a good tan. He ..... (*just, to return*) from his holiday in Spain.
18. He ..... (*to smoke*) twenty cigarettes by the end of the argument.

**Переведите.**

1. К концу месяца они истратили все деньги.
2. К 28-ми годам она сделала прекрасную карьеру.
3. Когда вернулись родители, друзья Майка уже ушли.
4. Ребенку было очень интересно. Он никогда раньше не был в зоопарке.
5. Я не ожидала, что он придет вовремя. Он уже дважды опаздывал.
6. Это был как раз тот подарок, который я давно хотела получить.
7. К тому времени, как начался дождь, они уже починили машину.
8. Он приехал на станцию, купил билет и позвонил жене, как обещал.
9. Они не знали, что сказать друг другу. Они не встречались с тех пор, как развелись.
10. Для Элис все было в новинку. Она впервые была за пределами своего городка.



**1.** Если в предложении речь идет не о действии, а о состоянии, наступившем к определенному моменту в прошлом, то употребляется Past Indefinite.

➤ They *didn't know* anything by *that time* yet.

Они еще ничего *не знали* к тому времени.

They *hadn't found* anything out by *that time* yet.

Они еще ничего *не узнали* к тому времени.



Но если указано, сколько длится это состояние к определенному моменту в прошлом, обязательно употребление Past Perfect.

➤ When I arrived Nick *was* already there.

Когда я приехал, Ник *уже был* там.

When I arrived Nick *had been* there for *about an hour*.

Когда я приехал, Ник был там уже *около часа*.

**2.** Если действия представлены в их реальной последовательности, то употребляется Past Indefinite.

➤ He *lost* the key and *couldn't get* into the house.

Он *потерял* ключ и *не мог* попасть домой.

He *couldn't get* into the house because he *had lost* the key.

Он *не мог* попасть домой, потому что *потерял* ключ.

**3.** В сложных предложениях с союзами **hardly...when, scarcely...when, no sooner...than** в главном предложении употребляется Past Perfect, а в придаточном Past Indefinite. Обратите внимание на порядок слов.

➤ I *had hardly finished* the task *when* they *gave* me another one.

*Hardly had* I *finished* the task *when* they *gave* me another one.

*Едва* я закончил (*He успел* я закончить) задание, как мне дали еще одно.



Обратите внимание на перевод предложений, подобных следующим:

Она *остановилась* и *посмотрела* на витрину.

She *stopped* and *looked* at the shop window.

(*последовательные действия*)

Она *остановилась* и *разглядывала* витрину.

She *had stopped* and *was looking* at the shop window.

(*1-е действие произошло до описываемого момента, а 2-е происходило в тот момент*)

Раскройте скобки, употребляя глагол в форме Past Perfect, Past Indefinite или Past Continuous.

53.1

- 1** -----
1. She ..... (*not, to learn*) the material well enough and ..... (*to get*) a bad mark at the exam.
  2. She ..... (*to get*) a bad mark at the exam because she ..... (*not, to learn*) the material well enough.
  3. I ..... (*to know*) Sam for about two years when he ..... (*to get*) married.
  4. I ..... (*already, to know*) Sam and Rachel when they ..... (*to get*) married.
  5. We ..... (*to give*) the children their presents and they ..... (*to open*) the parcels at once.
  6. We ..... (*hardly, to exchange*) our New Year presents when the first guests ..... (*to arrive*).
  7. When the first guests ..... (*to arrive*) we ..... (*already, to give*) the children their presents and they ..... (*to open*) the parcels. They ..... (*to be*) eager to see what ..... (*to be*) inside.
  8. I ..... (*to walk*) in the park for about an hour the other day.
  9. I ..... (*to see*) a fight when I ..... (*to walk*) in the park the other day.
  10. I ..... (*to walk*) in the park and ..... (*to go*) home when I ..... (*to see*) a fight.
- 2** -----
1. At 8 o'clock yesterday I ..... (*to do*) nearly all my homework and ..... (*to listen*) to music.
  2. By the time the operation ..... (*to be*) over the doctor ..... (*to be*) so tired that he ..... (*can*) hardly walk.
  3. By the time the operation ..... (*to be*) over the doctor ..... (*to get*) so tired that he ..... (*can*) hardly walk.
  4. It ..... (*to be*) evening when I ..... (*to leave*) the building and it ..... (*to get*) dark.
  5. When I ..... (*to leave*) the building it ..... (*to get*) completely dark. I ..... (*to see*) absolutely nothing.
  6. She ..... (*to make*) a list of things she ..... (*to need*) and ..... (*to look*) it through again to make sure she ..... (*not, to forget*) anything.
  7. She ..... (*to forget*) a few things when she ..... (*to make*) a list, so she ..... (*not, to buy*) some of the things she ..... (*to need*).
  8. He ..... (*to speak*) rudely to her but he ..... (*to apologize*) afterwards.
  9. He ..... (*to apologize*) because he ..... (*to speak*) rudely to her.
  10. Nick says he ..... (*to meet*) Liz at the library a few days ago. She ..... (*to come*) to take some book for her exam and ..... (*to ask*) the librarian about it. Nick ..... (*to recognize*) her voice and ..... (*to come*) up.
- 3** -----
1. I ..... (*to meet*) Alex the day before yesterday. He ..... (*to invite*) me to his party.
  2. Hardly ..... (*she, to shut*) the door when the door bell ..... (*to ring*) again.
  3. He ..... (*to call*) to ask for advice how to choose a computer. He ..... (*to buy*) a new one.
  4. When I first ..... (*to meet*) Victor he ..... (*already, to be*) married and ..... (*to have*) two children.
  5. He ..... (*to write*) two books and ..... (*to be*) quite well-known by that time.
  6. No sooner ..... (*the children, to begin*) to play than they ..... (*to quarrel*).
  7. When the stranger ..... (*to enter*), Mrs. Harper ..... (*to drop*) the book she ..... (*to take*) out of the bookcase.
  8. By the time the police ..... (*to catch*) the robbers they no longer ..... (*to have*) the money they ..... (*to steal*).
  9. When we ..... (*to move*) here the Browns ..... (*already, to live*) in the next house.
  10. She ..... (*to hurt*) her leg when she ..... (*to get*) off the bus. Fortunately, she ..... (*not, to break*) it.

- 4** -----
1. She ..... (*scarcely, to cross*) the street when the traffic lights ..... (*to change*).
  2. The report ..... (*to be*) extremely boring. I ..... (*to listen*) to the speaker another ten minutes and ..... (*to leave*) the hall.
  3. Why ..... (*Joan, to look*) unhappy this morning? — She ..... (*to quarrel*) with Jack.
  4. We ..... (*to have*) a very good time. We ..... (*to go*) to a concert.
  5. He ..... (*to be*) an unusually gifted child. By the time he ..... (*to be*) 8 he ..... (*to know*) the multiplication tables by heart and ..... (*to read*) all the History textbooks we ..... (*to have*) at home.
  6. He ..... (*to agree*) to help only after I ..... (*to ask*) him several times. I never ..... (*to find*) out why he ..... (*to refuse*) so long.
  7. By that time the police ..... (*to have*) all the necessary information so they ..... (*to look*) for the criminals in all the places where people ..... (*to see*) them before.
  8. He ..... (*to be*) thirsty again though he ..... (*to drink*) half the bottle of juice since he ..... (*to come*) home.
  9. I ..... (*to need*) your advice at that time that's why I ..... (*to call*). I ..... (*to call*) many times for about an hour but nobody ..... (*to answer*). ..... (*you, to be*) out? — Actually I ..... (*to sleep*). Your calls ..... (*not, to wake*) me up because I ..... (*to take*) a sleeping pill.
  10. Laura ..... (*to spend*) a sleepless night and ..... (*to suffer*) from a bad headache. She ..... (*to want*) a rest badly. She ..... (*to go*) out, (*to walk*) for some time but it ..... (*not, to help*) and by 1 o'clock in the afternoon she ..... (*to be*) in bed again. Hardly ..... (*she, to start*) to fall asleep when the telephone ..... (*to ring*) and she ..... (*to get*) up.

**Исправьте возможные ошибки.**

**53.2**



- ★ He was sitting on a bench and was watching passers-by. ⇒ *He sat on a bench watching passers-by.* .....
- ★ We had done everything by dinner time. — *RIGHT* .....

- 1** -----
1. It was the first time they travelled by ship. ....
  2. Hardly I had turned around when the man disappeared. ....
  3. Though the sun came out it was still snowing. ....
  4. When I came all the documents were ready. ....
  5. She burnt her tongue when she tasted the soup. ....
  6. By the time the doctor came the patient had already been dead. ....
  7. He finished his book by December last year. ....
  8. She wanted to be an actress until she was fourteen. ....
  9. When Sue came into the room the baby was awake for a quarter of an hour. He was quietly playing with his toys. ....
  10. Alice had stayed with her grandmother for a fortnight and returned home. ....

- 2** -----
1. She was interested in nothing else but her success. She was constantly speaking about it! ....
  2. Charles left on Saturday so we came to say good-bye to him. ....
  3. By the time she had cleaned the flat she was very tired. ....
  4. How long were you staying in London? ....
  5. We had already wanted to call the police when Mr. Thompson brought our children home. ....

- |   |                          |                          |
|---|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| 6. She had forgotten her friend's address and couldn't find the house. ....               | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 7. She sat working on her computer when the light went out. ....                          | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 8. Sam took a shower and was unpacking his things when somebody knocked at the door. .... | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 9. By the time we returned the children were fast asleep. ....                            | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |
| 10. What were you doing when you woke up? .....   | <input type="checkbox"/> | <input type="checkbox"/> |

## Переведите.

53.3

**1** -----

1. Когда пришла Катя, мы обсуждали новости.
2. Когда мы обсуждали новости, пришла Катя.
3. Когда Катя уходила, мы еще обсуждали новости.
4. Когда Катя ушла, мы еще какое-то время обсуждали новости.
5. Когда пришла Катя, мы обсудили новости.
6. К тому времени, как пришла Катя, мы уже обсудили новости.
7. Когда пришла Катя, мы уже знали новости.
8. Когда пришла Катя, мы уже давно знали эту новость.
9. Когда пришла Катя, мы обсудили новости и попили чаю.
10. Когда пришла Катя, мы обсуждали новости и пили чай.
11. Когда пришла Катя, мы уже обсудили новости и пили чай.
12. Не успели мы обсудить новости, как пришла Катя.
13. Когда Катя пришла, она рассказала, что она слышала об этих новостях.
14. Что вы обсудили, когда пришла Катя?
15. Что вы обсуждали, когда пришла Катя?
16. Вы что-то обсудили к тому времени, как пришла Катя?
17. Вы уже знали что-нибудь к тому времени, как пришла Катя?

**2** -----

1. Не успели мы пообедать, как хозяйка предложила нам чай.
2. К тому времени, как ей исполнилось 30, она станцевала все классические партии и была уже известной балериной.
3. Когда она проснулась, было уже светло, настало утро.
4. Ребята были очень возбуждены. Все прочли книгу и обсуждали ее.
5. Он чувствовал, что за ним кто-то идет, но не оборачивался.
6. Мы смотрели фильм примерно полчаса. — А потом? — Потом выключили телевизор, потому что фильм был скучный.
7. К 5 часам она все приготовила и накрыла на стол.
8. Все было готово, и она ждала гостей.
9. Дождь закончился, и мы пошли гулять.
10. Дождь еще не закончился, когда мы пошли гулять.

**3** -----

1. Она по-настоящему отдыхала. Она даже не прочла ни одной газеты с тех пор, как начались каникулы.
2. Он был очень рад, так как занял первое место на соревнованиях.
3. Я опоздал. Учитель уже объяснял новое правило.
4. Я опоздал. Учитель уже объяснил новое правило, и все делали упражнение.
5. Когда мы обратились к нему за помощью, проблема уже давно существовала.
6. Едва мы вошли в зал, как погас свет, и начался фильм.
7. Я знала Мэгги лет пять, когда познакомилась с ее братом.
8. Мы уже уходили, когда он догнал нас и попросил остаться.
9. Она все еще работала в саду в это время? — Не знаю. Я ее не видела.
10. Я много раз предупреждала Дика, прежде чем в конце концов наказала его.

**1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ**

had been	+	-ing
----------	---	------

- Орфографические правила образования причастия настоящего времени см. в *Unit 40*. Вопросительная форма образуется при помощи **had**.

It was just the book he **had been looking** for so long.

Why **had** he **been looking** for the book so long before he finally found it?

- Так же, как и Present Perfect Continuous, Past Perfect Continuous, как правило, не употребляется в отрицательных предложениях. Вместо него употребляется Past Perfect.

It turned out that he **hadn't practised** the reading of the text at home.

**2. СЛУЧАИ УПОТРЕБЛЕНИЯ**

- Действие, которое началось до определенного момента в прошлом и продолжалось вплоть до него или в тот момент все еще продолжалось. В этом значении Past Perfect Continuous употребляется с теми же словами и оборотами, что и Present Perfect Continuous: **lately, since, for, ...** (см. *Unit 47*).

At midday he felt tired as he **had been working** in the garden *since early morning*.

They **had been staying** at the hotel *for three days* when they got a letter.

- Действие, которое происходило непосредственно перед определенным моментом в прошлом и каким-то образом отразилось на ситуации в прошлом.

They were wet through. They **had been walking** in the rain.



Глаголы, не имеющие форм Continuous, не употребляются в Past Perfect Continuous. В указанных значениях они образуют Past Perfect (см. *Unit 52*).



Между Past Perfect и Past Perfect Continuous существуют такие же различия в значениях и употреблении, что и между Present Perfect и Present Perfect Continuous (см. *Unit 48*).

Используя данную информацию, составьте сложные предложения. Употребите Past Perfect Continuous.

54.1

★ They worried about their children all night long. They looked very nervous. ⇨  
They looked very nervous because they had been worrying about their children all night long.

*because**when**after**who**before**because*

1. We drove for two hours. The accident happened. ....
2. The baby cried for almost an hour. He finally fell asleep. ....
3. The man suddenly fell down. He walked in front of me all the way. ....
4. Ann took the medicine for several weeks. She really felt better. ....
5. There was a sweet smell in the room. She cooked biscuits all morning. ....

Раскройте скобки, употребляя глагол в форме Past Perfect или Past Perfect Continuous.

54.2

1. The program she ..... (*to watch*) for some time suddenly stopped.
2. How long ..... (*the Smallwoods, to look*) for the house before they found the one they really liked?
3. Pete ..... (*not, to decide*) anything by Wednesday though we ..... (*to discuss*) the situation long enough.
4. We met at the Ritz. She ..... (*to work*) there since the beginning of the year.
5. I ..... (*to call*) Nick several times before I finally got through.
6. The child's curiosity annoyed me. He ..... (*to ask*) me questions all day! He ..... (*to ask*) me ten questions just for the last half an hour.
7. The man who ..... (*to follow*) me all the way turned out to be a policeman.
8. The boy was exhausted. He ..... (*not, to eat*) for three days.
9. By the time the police found the burglar he ..... (*to hide*) in the attic for three weeks.
10. The dress she ..... (*to put on*) looked wonderful.

Переведите.

54.3

1. Когда пришла Катя, мы уже полчаса обсуждали новости.
2. Машина уже ждала вас, когда прибыл поезд? — Да, правда, шофер очень нервничал, так как поезд опоздал, и он уже давно ждал меня.
3. Дети выглядели бодрыми. Они все утро катались на лыжах.
4. Она устала, так как много занималась с утра. Она выучила половину необходимого материала.
5. Мы репетировали спектакль примерно месяц, когда Джек заболел. — И сколько вы искали другого актера? — Всего несколько дней.
6. К тому времени, как прибыли пожарные, в доме уже давно пахло дымом.
7. Они красили дом два часа.
8. Они красили дом два часа, когда вдруг пошел дождь.
9. Они красили дом два часа, но потом пошел дождь и все испортил.
10. Когда они красили дом, вдруг пошел дождь.
11. Когда они покрасили дом, вдруг пошел дождь.
12. Они уже дважды покрасили дом, когда пошел дождь.
13. Они покрасили дом и обедали, когда пошел дождь.
14. Дом, который они так долго красили, ночью сгорел.

Выберите правильный вариант.

**55.1**

- 1** -----
- He ..... too long and got a headache.  
 ❶ studied                                      ❷ was studying                                      ❸ had been studying
  - ..... you ..... the concert at 5?  
 ❶ have ..... heard      ❷ were ..... hearing                                      ❸ did ..... hear
  - I wonder if they ..... in time.  
 ❶ come                                      ❷ will come                                      ❸ are coming
  - He ..... married three times when he ..... young.  
 ❶ has got; was                                      ❷ had got; was                                      ❸ got; was
  - By that time she ..... any more explanations, she ..... everything.  
 ❶ didn't need; had understood                                      ❷ hadn't needed; had understood                                      ❸ didn't need; understood
  - How long ..... you ..... this information?  
 ❶ have ..... had                                      ❷ do ..... have                                      ❸ have ..... been having
  - He ..... a word yet since he .....  
 ❶ hasn't said; has come                                      ❷ hasn't said; came                                      ❸ hasn't been saying; came
  - My friends and I ..... to the cinema this Saturday.  
 ❶ go                                      ❷ will go                                      ❸ are going
  - I'll tell him the truth as soon as he ..... me.  
 ❶ will ask                                      ❷ ask                                      ❸ asks
  - We ..... the book during several lessons and ..... an essay.  
 ❶ discussed; wrote                                      ❷ had been discussing; wrote                                      ❸ were discussing; wrote
- 2** -----
- Who ..... after your garden lately?  
 ❶ has looked                                      ❷ has been looking                                      ❸ looked
  - I was late. My friends ..... for me.  
 ❶ were already waiting                                      ❷ had already been waiting                                      ❸ already waited
  - What ..... to him in the last few days?  
 ❶ happened                                      ❷ has happened                                      ❸ is happening
  - What time ..... your classes .....?  
 ❶ are ..... starting                                      ❷ do ..... start                                      ❸ will ..... start
  - He ..... his grammar for two hours yesterday.  
 ❶ has been practising                                      ❷ was practising                                      ❸ practised
  - He ..... his passport and couldn't go away.  
 ❶ had lost                                      ❷ has lost                                      ❸ lost
  - He ..... a word. The man ..... a foreign language.  
 ❶ didn't understand; was speaking                                      ❷ didn't understand; spoke                                      ❸ wasn't understanding; was speaking
  - He was amazed when he ..... the church.  
 ❶ had seen                                      ❷ saw                                      ❸ was seeing
  - The woman was in despair. Her child .....  
 ❶ had disappeared                                      ❷ disappeared                                      ❸ has disappeared
  - I think that if Pete ..... the secret nobody will find out anything.  
 ❶ keeps                                      ❷ will keep                                      ❸ is keeping

## 3

1. .... she ..... her mind?  
 ❶ did ..... change    ❷ has ..... been changing    ❸ has ..... changed
2. I hope that the situation .....  
 ❶ soon clears up    ❷ will soon clear up    ❸ is soon going to clear up
3. It's the first time I ..... abroad.  
 ❶ am    ❷ have been    ❸ was
4. I could see Mrs. Bell through the window. She ..... the curtains and ..... them.  
 ❶ washed; hung    ❷ was washing; was hanging    ❸ had washed; was hanging
5. She ..... on the phone! No wonder you can't get through.  
 ❶ is always talking    ❷ has always been talking    ❸ always talks
6. What ..... he ..... you?  
 ❶ did ..... tell    ❷ has ..... told    ❸ has ..... been telling
7. It ..... late when he came and she ..... asleep.  
 ❶ had already been; had already been    ❷ was; was    ❸ had already been; was
8. I ..... you a present the other day.  
 ❶ bought    ❷ have bought    ❸ had bought
9. They ..... each other for many years, that's why she can't believe it.  
 ❶ know    ❷ knew    ❸ have known
10. They ..... a house of their own for about a year when they decided to move to another city.  
 ❶ had    ❷ have had    ❸ had had

Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в правильной форме.

55.2

## 1

For thirty years now I ..... (*to study*) people. I ..... (*not, to know*) very much about them. Some people ..... (*to say*) that their first impressions of a person ..... (*to be*) always right. For my part I find the longer I ..... (*to know*) people the more they ..... (*to puzzle*) me: my oldest friends ..... (*to be*) those of whom I can say that I ..... (*not, to know*) the first thing about them.

That is what I ..... (*to think*) when I ..... (*to read*) in this morning's paper that Edward Hyde Burton ..... (*to die*) at Kobe. He ..... (*to be*) a merchant and he ..... (*to be*) in business in Japan for many years. I ..... (*to know*) him very little, but he ..... (*to interest*) me because once he ..... (*to give*) me a great surprise.

After W. S. Maugham  
 "A Friend in Need"

## 2

She ..... (*to wait*) for him at the station house. He ..... (*to put*) his hands on her and ..... (*to kneel*) in front of her and ..... (*to begin*) to laugh. His eyes ..... (*to burn*). "Where ..... (*you, to be*), Deborah? Who ..... (*to give*) you the bread?"

"The lady ..... (*to give*) the bread," she said. "I had to find Martha."

"What lady ..... (*to give*) you the bread, Deborah? Where ..... (*you, to be*)? Who ..... (*to be*) Martha?"

After John Cheever  
 "The Sutton Place Story"



**3**

It was settled. Frank, with her usual decisiveness, walked out as soon as she ..... (to finish) her breakfast to send a wire, and three days later Lena Finch ..... (to arrive). Frank ..... (to meet) her at the station. She ..... (to be) in deep but not obtrusive mourning for the recent death of her husband. Frank ..... (not, to see) her for two years. She ..... (to kiss) her warmly and ..... (to take) a good look at her. "You ..... (to be) very thin, darling," she said.

Lena ..... (to smile) bravely.

"I ..... (to be) through a good deal lately. I ..... (to lose) a lot of weight."

*After W. S. Maugham "The Three Fat Women of Antibes"*  
(Одна из героинь рассказа называла себя мужским именем Frank.)

**4**

"Then, what in God's name ..... (you, to leave) her for?"

"I ..... (to want) to paint."

I ..... (to look) at him for quite a long time. I ..... (not, to understand). I thought he was mad. It must be remembered that I was very young, and I ..... (to look) upon him as a middle-aged man.

"But you ..... (to be) forty."

"That's what ..... (to make) me think it was high time to begin."

"..... (you, ever, to paint)?"

"I rather ..... (to want) to be a painter when I ..... (to be) a boy, but my father ..... (to make) me go into business because he ..... (to say) there was no money in art. I ..... (to begin) to paint a bit a year ago. For the last year I ..... (to go) to some classes at night."

"Was that where you ..... (to go) when Mrs. Strickland thought you ..... (to play) bridge at your club?"

"That's it."

"Why ..... (you, not, to tell) her?"

"I ..... (to prefer) to keep it to myself."

"Can you paint?"

"Not yet. But I shall. That's why I ..... (to come) over here. I couldn't get what I wanted in London. Perhaps I can here."

"Do you think it's likely that a man ..... (to do) any good when he ..... (to start) at your age? Most men ..... (to begin) painting at eighteen."

"I can learn quicker that I could when I ..... (to be) eighteen."

*After W. S. Maugham*  
"The Moon and Sixpence"

**5**

One morning when he ..... (to be) in Rhodes a little over a week, he happened to be coming upstairs as Betty ..... (to walk) along the passage.

"You ..... (never, to show) me your room, Betty," he said.

"Oh, come in and have a look now. It's rather nice."

She ..... (to turn) back and he ..... (to follow) her in. It was over the drawing-room and nearly as large. It was furnished in the Italian style. The bed was Venetian and beautifully painted.

"That's a couch of rather imposing dimensions for a widow lady," he said facetiously.

“It’s enormous, isn’t it? But it was so lovely, I had to buy it. It ..... (to cost) a fortune.”  
 His eye ..... (to take) in the bed-table by the side. There ..... (to be) two  
 or three books on it, a box of cigarettes, and on an ash-tray a briar pipe. Funny! What on earth  
 ..... (Betty, to have) a pipe by her bed for?”  
 “Do look at this. Isn’t the painting marvellous? I almost ..... (to cry) when I ..... (to find) it.”  
 “I suppose that ..... (to cost) a fortune too.”  
 “I daren’t tell you what I ..... (to pay).”  
 When they ..... (to leave) the room he ..... (to cast) another glance at the bed-table.  
 The pipe ..... (to vanish).

After W. S. Maugham  
 “The Human Element”

### Переведите.

**55.3**

#### 1 -----

1. Раньше я часто его здесь видела.
2. Вы его видели здесь раньше? — Да. — А когда он здесь был в последний раз?
3. К тому времени, как она должна была вернуть книгу в библиотеку, она ее еще не прочла.  
— И что же она сделала?
4. Она смотрела телевизор и листала журнал.
5. Всем понравился спектакль?
6. Она впервые слушала эту оперу. — А где она достала билеты?
7. Она уже месяц пользовалась этим лекарством, но не чувствовала себя лучше.
8. Не успели они пожениться, как развелись.
9. Вы когда-нибудь были на дискотеке? — Да, конечно, много раз, когда был подростком.
10. Она получила письмо и читала его.

#### 2 -----

1. Давно ты в отпуске?
2. Долго ты пробыла в больнице?
3. Вы сразу узнали друг друга? — Конечно, мы же виделись много раз.
4. Почему ты опять нюхаешь цветок? — Он так замечательно пахнет!
5. У нее ужасно разболелась голова, пока она слушала лекцию.
6. Сколько уже идет дождь? — Часов с 12.
7. Том думает, что даже если он нас всех приведет к себе домой, его мама не рассердится.
8. Передача начнется в 7 вечера?
9. К тому времени, как ему исполнилось 30 лет, у него уже было 2 профессии и он поменял несколько мест работы.
10. Я нигде не бываю (не выхожу) с тех пор, как сломала ногу.

#### 3 -----

1. Они давно обсуждают эту проблему.
2. Они давно обсудили эту проблему.
3. Этот дом был нашим 5 лет.
4. Этот дом — наш вот уже 5 лет.
5. У соседей была очень шумная вечеринка, и мы вызвали полицию.
6. Ну, вечно ты говоришь во весь голос!

7. Она посмотрела на часы. Было уже поздно, а сын еще не вернулся.
8. В последнее время я не очень занята и поэтому много читаю.
9. До тех пор, пока я не почию машину, мы никуда не поедем.
10. Она отдыхала 2 недели, а затем вернулась на работу.

- 4** -----
1. Дети сделали уроки и играли. Они играли уже около двух часов.
  2. К концу недели полиция прекратила расследование, хотя преступника не нашли.
  3. Она причесалась и посмотрела в зеркало.
  4. Мы везде ищем котенка с тех самых пор, как он пропал.
  5. Позвоните мне, в случае если у вас будут проблемы.
  6. Когда я подходил к остановке, пассажиры уже садились в автобус.
  7. Я понятия не имею, что в это время делала моя жена. Ее не было дома.
  8. Катя посадила цветок и поставила его на подоконник. На следующий день он погиб, так как она забыла его полить.
  9. Клиенты интересуются, когда же они получат ответ на свой вопрос.
  10. Когда-то он был самым плохим студентом в группе. Но теперь все изменилось.

- 5** -----
1. Она прочла много статей, прежде чем нашла подходящую.
  2. Она прочла много статей и нашла подходящую.
  3. Миссис Грейс сильно поправилась, так как слишком много ела в последние несколько дней.
  4. На днях я узнала потрясающую новость.
  5. Мне нужен был подарок для Хелен, так как я шла к ней на день рождения в выходные.
  6. Как дети себя вели?
  7. Я думаю над их предложением уже несколько дней, но пока не решила его принять.
  8. Опять ты делаешь эту грубую ошибку! Почему ты до сих пор не выучил правило?
  9. Я шла рассказать им про свою новую работу, но они уже все знали и как раз обсуждали ее, когда я пришла. — Кто же им рассказал?
  10. Это самое трудное решение, которое я когда-либо принимала.

# **DIRECT AND INDIRECT SPEECH**

## **SEQUENCE OF TENSES**

**ПЕРЕВОД ИЗ ПРЯМОЙ РЕЧИ  
В КОСВЕННУЮ**

**СОГЛАСОВАНИЕ ВРЕМЕН**

- 1.** Прямая речь, представляющая собой повествовательное предложение, переводится в косвенную при помощи союза **that**.

He says, "My brother knows Spanish." ⇒ He says *that* his brother knows Spanish.

- 2.** Если в прямой речи содержится общий вопрос, для перевода в косвенную речь нужен союз **if** или **whether**.

She asks, "Have you brought the book?" ⇒ She asks *if* I have brought the book.

They ask, "Did she know about it?" ⇒ They ask *whether* she knew about it.

- 3.** Специальный вопрос не требует никаких дополнительных союзов для перевода из прямой речи в косвенную. Роль союза играет вопросительное слово специального вопроса.

Tom asks, "What is your sister?" ⇒ Tom asks *what* my sister is.

Helen wonders, "Where did they hide the money?" ⇒ Helen wonders *where* they hid the money.



Помните, что в косвенном вопросе всегда прямой порядок слов (см. *Unit 34*).

- 4.** Команда или просьба переводятся в косвенную речь инфинитивом.

The teacher asks, "Close the window, Charles." ⇒ The teacher asks Charles *to close* the window.

The shop assistant says, "Don't touch it." ⇒ The shop assistant says *not to touch* it.



Обратите внимание на смысловое изменение личных и притяжательных местоимений при переводе из прямой речи в косвенную.

Alice says, "My Dad comes home very late." ⇒ Alice says that *her* Dad comes home very late.

The boys say, "We know the answer." ⇒ The boys say that *they* know the answer.

Mum asks, "Did *you* have a good time?" ⇒ Mum asks if *I* had a good time.



Если указан объект, к которому обращена прямая речь, то при переводе в косвенную речь в словах автора глагол **say** заменяется на **tell**.

My Granny often *says to me*, "Don't be lazy." ⇒ My Granny often *tells me* not to be lazy.

## Переведите в косвенную речь.

56.1

- 1** -----
1. My brother says, "You are always spending hours in the bathroom!"
  2. Brian says, "I've never been to England but I'd like to go there."
  3. Rachel says, "Tim, you must help me with the shopping today."
  4. The teacher says to the student, "You weren't attentive enough."
  5. My friends say, "We were waiting for you at the cinema at 5 o'clock."
- 2** -----
1. I ask my sister, "Did you get bad marks at school?"
  2. Mary asks her parents, "Are we going to the country on Saturday?"
  3. Little Sam wonders, "Have you brought a new toy for me?"
  4. Dad asks Lucy, "Do you understand everything in this subject?"
  5. My friend asks, "Can your brother really play the violin?"
- 3** -----
1. Nick's parents wonder, "How did you meet Helen?"
  2. The teacher asks the pupils, "Which of you can translate this sentence?"
  3. I ask Ned, "What does Alice's elder brother look like?"
  4. Mum asks me, "Where have you been all this time?"
  5. The man asks, "Why are you crying, boy?"
- 4** -----
1. Mum advises, "Call the doctor at once."
  2. My husband says to me, "Never touch this button."
  3. The teacher asks, "Children, don't make so much noise."
  4. The sick child asks, "Give me something tasty, Mum."
  5. I say to my child, "Don't speak to people in such a way."

## Переведите.

56.2

- 1** -----
1. Мой врач советует не принимать это лекарство.
  2. Дэвид говорит, что видел этот фильм, но он ему не понравился.
  3. Они интересуются, что еще сказал мистер Браун.
  4. Мама просит, чтобы я раз в неделю убирала свою комнату.
  5. Кейт спрашивает, знают ли остальные об изменениях в плане.
  6. Мистер Блэк говорит, что шел домой в это время и все видел.
  7. Моя маленькая сестра говорит, что будет врачом.
  8. Учитель всегда нас спрашивает, почему мы опоздали.
  9. Меня интересует, кто отвечает за эту работу.
  10. Сьюзан спрашивает, когда родился твой брат.
- 2** -----
1. Родители часто напоминают, чтобы я ни о чем не просила незнакомцев.
  2. Миссис Сэтлиф спрашивает, не хочешь ли ты пить.
  3. Мой сын говорит, что ему необходим компьютер.
  4. Оратор считает, что знает, о чем говорит.
  5. Эту женщину интересуется, где вы раньше жили.
  6. Наши соседи говорят, что если мы не придем к ним на вечеринку, они обидятся.
  7. Брат просит, чтобы я не сердилась на него.
  8. Когда мы встречаемся, он всегда спрашивает, как я поживаю.
  9. Мама всегда интересуется, с кем я ходила в кино.
  10. Ник спрашивает, свободны ли мы в субботу вечером.

1. Если слова автора, вводящие прямую речь, употреблены в одном из прошедших времен, то при переводе из прямой речи в косвенную кроме структуры предложения (см. *Unit 56*) меняется временная форма глагола, который был употреблен в прямой речи, а также наречия времени и указательные местоимения.

ПРЯМАЯ РЕЧЬ	КОСВЕННАЯ РЕЧЬ
<b>Present Indefinite</b> She said, "I <i>want</i> to see him <i>now</i> ."	<b>Past Indefinite</b> She said that she <i>wanted</i> to see him <i>right away</i> .
<b>Present Continuous</b> She said, "I <i>am working</i> tonight."	<b>Past Continuous</b> She said that she <i>was working</i> that night.
<b>Present Perfect</b> She said, "I <i>have met</i> Nick <i>today</i> ."	<b>Past Perfect</b> She said that she <i>had met</i> Nick <i>that day</i> .
<b>Present Perfect Continuous</b> She said, "I <i>have been working</i> at it <i>this week</i> ."	<b>Past Perfect Continuous</b> She said that she <i>had been working</i> at it <i>that week</i> .
<b>Past Indefinite</b> She said, "I <i>found</i> it out <i>long ago</i> ( <i>last week</i> )." 	<b>Past Perfect</b> She said that she <i>had found</i> it out <i>long before</i> ( <i>the previous week</i> ).
<b>Past Continuous</b> She said, "I <i>was walking</i> in the park at three <i>yesterday</i> ."	<b>Past Perfect Continuous</b> She said that she <i>had been walking</i> in the park at three <i>the day before</i> .
<b>Future Indefinite</b> She said, "I'll <i>call</i> you <i>tomorrow</i> ( <i>next week</i> )." 	<b>Future-in-the-Past</b> She said that she <i>would call</i> me <i>the next / the following day</i> ( <i>the next / the following week</i> ).

2. Видо-временная форма глагола, употребленного в прямой речи, остается неизменной при переводе в косвенную, если в прямой речи говорилось об общеизвестном факте или универсальной истине.

The lecturer *explained*, "The Sun *is* a big star." ⇨ The lecturer *explained* that the Sun *is* a big star.

3. Также остается неизменной форма глагола, употребленного в придаточном предложении времени прямой речи в одном из прошедших времен.

My brother *said*, "I *met* Chris when I *was walking* along the street." ⇨

⇨ My brother *said* that he *had met* Chris when he *was walking* along the street.

## Переведите в косвенную речь.

57.1

- 1** -----
1. "It's a wonderful view!" she exclaimed. ....
  2. "Do you agree that clothes make the man?" Ann wondered. ....
  3. "My sister stars in the new play," said Dick. ....
  4. "My neighbours are vegetarians," Mrs. Crow said. ....
  5. "What is your new house like?" my friend asked. ....
- 2** -----
1. Mrs. Pitt announced, "My daughter is going to have a baby." ....
  2. "Why is he looking for a new job?" I asked. ....
  3. "I'm taking my final exams next month," said Pete. ....
  4. "Are you doing it on purpose?" the old man wondered. ....
  5. "Who is making that awful noise?" the teacher cried. ....
- 3** -----
1. "How long have you been learning English?" asked the examiner. ....
  2. "My Mum has never travelled by plane," she said. ....
  3. "I haven't seen Patsy for ages," Jane complained. ....
  4. "You've been working really hard lately," my coach admitted. ....
  5. "Have you heard the news?" Raymond asked. ....
- 4** -----
1. "That was a wonderful party," Laura said. ....
  2. "My son graduated from Oxford University three years ago," Mr. Dent said. ....
  3. "Did you enjoy your holiday last year?" John asked. ....
  4. "Where were you yesterday? I couldn't find you," said Jane. ....
  5. "Einstein invented the theory of relativity," said the book. ....
- 5** -----
1. "What were you laughing at when I entered?" the boy asked. ....
  2. "I didn't hear anything. The music was playing quite loudly," the woman said. ....
  3. "My daughter was still sleeping at that time," Mrs. Gray said. ....
  4. "Were you playing tennis at 5, as usual?" Dad asked. ....
  5. "The man was leaving for St. Petersburg and asked to take him to the station," the taxi driver said. ....
- 6** -----
1. "I'll call you tomorrow," Mary promised. ....
  2. "If anything happens to me, you'll have to look after my children," she said. ....
  3. "I won't help you until you tell me all the truth," the lawyer said. ....
  4. "We won't have this subject next year," she complained. ....
  5. "Will you stay there long?" Mum wondered. ....
- 7** -----
1. "You won't make the child obey if you shout at him," the woman insisted. ....
  2. "I'm so sleepy that I can't think clearly now," Mary said. ....



3. "How many times have you got letters from Lady Fox?" asked the police inspector. ....
4. "Who gave you the recipe? It's so good!" my mother-in-law said. ....
5. "Paris is the capital of France," the pupil answered. ....
6. "Don't show the dog that you are afraid," Dad said. ....
7. "What are you doing tomorrow? How about going for a walk?" Nick asked. — "I can go now. I'll be ready in five minutes," I answered. ....
8. "Who will stay with the baby while you work?" Mum asked. ....
9. "I haven't had such a good time since I fell ill," the girl admitted. ....
10. "Why did you have to get up so early today?" my brother asked. ....
11. "I wasn't going to steal the pen at all. I was just looking at it!" the woman argued. ....
12. "Peter I won the war with the Swedes," the teacher said. ....
13. "What do you mean? I don't quite get you," I asked my boss. ....
14. "I was surprised but I didn't know what to say," Joan said. ....
15. "You've been wasting time again! You haven't done anything!" the teacher complained. ....
16. "Speak to that young man again," Mr. Smiley advised me. "I think he knows more than he's saying." ....
17. "What will you do if you fail your exam?" Diana wondered. ....
18. "Whose fault is it? Tell me at once!" the principal said angrily. ....
19. "Sorry, I didn't stop to speak to you yesterday. I was in a great hurry," Fred said. ....
20. "My sister is a journalist. She has interviewed many famous people," Jerry said proudly. ....
21. "Is Tim your brother or your cousin?" I asked Ann. ....
22. "I wonder what will come of your plan," said Brian. ....
23. "Jupiter is the largest planet in the solar system," the lecturer said. ....
24. "I paid attention to the boy's behaviour long ago. I think it's strange," Mrs. Barney said. ....
25. "Your sister is sleeping in her room. She asked not to disturb her," our servant said. ....

**Переведите в прямую речь.**

**57.2**

1. The man asked what I was doing there so late. ....
2. The doctor told me not to worry and added that the child would be all right. ....
3. Nick told his sister to turn down the volume of the music because he had a bad headache. ....
4. Mary said that she had seen Max the day before. ....
5. Meeting me in the park my Dad wondered how long I had been walking there. ....
6. The teacher told Charles that if he didn't tell her the truth she would have to call his parents. ....
7. My friend wondered how I got on with my mother-in-law. ....
8. My Granny said that though she had seen those photos hundreds of times it was a pleasure for her to look them through again. ....

9. The tennis coach said that my brother was too young and that he would be able to join the sports club only the following year. ....
10. Mother asked Kate if that was the boy she had got acquainted with the previous year. ....

**Вставьте *say* или *tell* в правильной форме.**

**57.3**

1. Never ..... it again.
2. He ..... me to wait a minute but returned only half an hour later.
3. They ..... that dialect was wide-spread in that part of the country.
4. I don't believe a word of what you (just) .....
5. Don't ..... me that you knew nothing.
6. .... the truth I didn't like the man from the very beginning.
7. He often pays me compliments. — What exactly ..... (he)?
8. We warned them but we ..... (not) them all the details of the situation.
9. You aren't listening to what I .....
10. She always ..... to me "You aren't quite right!", no matter what I .....

**Переведите.**

**57.4**

- 1** -----
1. Я поинтересовалась, почему у нее в доме всегда так много цветов.
  2. Фрэнк спросил, что я предпочитаю: оперу или балет, и часто ли я хожу в театр.
  3. Секретарь ответила, что мистер Кларк вернется лишь через час, и посоветовала мне не ждать его.
  4. Полицейские спросили, сколько мистер Смизерс снимает комнату в нашем доме. И что мы о нем думаем.
  5. Нэд заявил, что никогда со мной не разговаривал, так как впервые меня видит.
  6. Мой друг сказал, что вернулся позавчера, но у него не было времени позвонить раньше.
  7. Гид объяснил нам, что мы сможем попасть в музей только после того, как закончится ремонт.
  8. Мама сразу спросила, что здесь происходит.
  9. Учитель указал на карту и сказал, что Эверест — самая высокая гора в мире.
  10. Молодой человек объяснил, что последние два года работал за границей.
- 2** -----
1. Мама сказала, что спала, когда зазвонил телефон, и не успела подойти.
  2. Я извинилась и сказала, что не могу сейчас разговаривать, и попросила перезвонить позже.
  3. Мэри сказала, что в прошлом году была в Италии, но если у нее будет возможность, она обязательно съездит туда еще раз.
  4. Ребенок сказал, что хочет есть, и спросил, когда мы будем обедать.
  5. Он порекомендовал не следовать советам мистера Грэя, так как они не всегда полезны.
  6. Я поинтересовалась, действительно ли Хелен и Пит так много путешествовали, и они ответили «да».
  7. Чарли объяснил, что значат все эти вопросы.
  8. Он сказал, что уходит, но пообещал прийти на следующей неделе.
  9. Мы спросили, когда будут известны результаты эксперимента.
  10. Он извинился, что опоздал, и сказал, что на улице сильное движение и он попал в пробку.
  11. Она сказала, что не знает, как это случилось, и не может ничего рассказать.
  12. Друзья поинтересовались, чей это ребенок и почему он у меня.
  13. Все ученики хором ответили, что пятью пять — двадцать пять.
  14. Боб предупредил, чтобы я не рассказывал об этом Гарольду, даже если он будет мне угрожать.
  15. Я спросила брата, не знает ли он, сколько лет женаты Джесс и Кэролайн, но он ответил, что не знает.

1. Если в главном предложении глагол употреблен в одной из форм прошедшего времени, то форма глагола в придаточном предложении должна быть также употреблена в форме прошедшего времени.

Выбор формы глагола в придаточном предложении зависит от того, являются ли действия в главном и придаточном предложениях одновременными, предшествует ли одно другому или действие в придаточном следует за действием в главном предложении.

- Если действия в главном и придаточном предложениях одновременны, то в придаточном предложении глагол употребляется в форме *Past Indefinite* или *Past Continuous*.

Everybody *knew* why she *behaved* like that.

I *could* hardly understand what she *was talking* about.

- Если действие в придаточном предложении предшествует действию в главном, то в придаточном предложении глагол употребляется в форме *Past Perfect* или *Past Perfect Continuous*.

It *wasn't* quite clear how the accident *had happened*.

I *realized* that the man *had been watching* me for quite a long time.

- Если действие в придаточном предложении следует за действием в главном, то в придаточном предложении глагол употребляется в форме *Future-in-the Past*.

It *seemed* to her that nothing *would* ever *change* in her life.

2. Согласование времен действует не только внутри одного предложения, но и в контексте.

I *knew* what kind of man Pete's brother *was*. We *had met* several times and besides Pete *had* often *told* me about him. I *realized* that he *was* a difficult man to deal with. It *wouldn't be* easy to persuade him to join us.



Правила согласования времен не соблюдаются, если в придаточном предложении речь идет об общеизвестном факте или универсальной истине.

The guide *said* that Buckingham Palace *is* the London residence of the British Queen.

Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в правильной форме.  
Все предложения относятся к прошедшему времени.

58.1

- 1** -----
- The result ..... (to be) absolutely different from what we ..... (to expect) and we nearly ..... (to give up) the experiment but soon Victor ..... (to find) where we ..... (to make) a mistake.
  - No sooner ..... (I, to enter) the room than a young man ..... (to come) up to me with a glass of champagne. I ..... (to be) sure it ..... (to be) the first time I ..... (to see) him in my life and I ..... (not, to know) his name but half an hour later he ..... (still, to ask) me questions about my relatives and ..... (to tell) me something about his new business.
  - I ..... (to have) no idea what it ..... (to lead) to but I ..... (to decide) to have a try.
  - She ..... (to be) sorry she ..... (not, to warn) me about the changes and I ..... (to waste) so much time.
  - I ..... (to be) surprised when the doorbell ..... (to ring) because all the guests ..... (already, to arrive) and I ..... (not, to expect) anyone else.
  - It ..... (to turn out) that all the efforts we ..... (to make) for so much time ..... (to be) in vain.
  - At eleven o'clock in the evening I ..... (still, to look) through the notes I ..... (to make) at the lecture. The information ..... (to be) new to me and I ..... (to want) to make sure that I ..... (to have) no questions left.
  - She ..... (to realize) that it ..... (to be) her last chance and if she ..... (not, to use) it she ..... (to regret) it all her life.
  - On her way home she ..... (to have) a vague feeling that she ..... (to do) something wrong. But on the other hand she ..... (to be) sure she ..... (to plan) everything thoroughly.
  - Mary ..... (to hope) that during their excursion around London the guide ..... (to take) them to St. Paul's Cathedral which, as she ..... (to read), ..... (to be) the second-largest cathedral in the world.
- 2** -----
- Nick ..... (to turn off) the music he ..... (to listen) to and ..... (to go) to answer the phone. He ..... (to think) it ..... (to be) Steve but it ..... (to turn out) somebody who ..... (to dial) the wrong number.
  - It ..... (to be) obvious that she ..... (can, not) control herself. She ..... (to cry) in hysterics.
  - Sheila ..... (to like) the novel so much that everything she ..... (to read) so far ..... (to seem) ordinary and uninteresting. She even ..... (to think) she ..... (not, to like) any other book so much and that one ..... (to remain) her favourite.
  - She ..... (to enjoy) the music that ..... (to sound) on the radio. She ..... (to hear) neither the melody nor the singer before and ..... (to be) sorry she ..... (not, to know) what the song ..... (to be).
  - The blouse she ..... (to wear) ..... (to suit) her very well. It ..... (to look) very beautiful and unusual. I ..... (not, to see) anything like that before.
  - She ..... (to have) a rest after she ..... (to work) so hard all day. Right at that moment the telephone ..... (to ring) and her mood ..... (to change) for the worse at once because she ..... (not, to want) to speak to anyone and ..... (to hope) that nobody and nothing ..... (to disturb) her.
  - At the recent environmental conference scientists ..... (to point out) again that the world climate ..... (to get) warmer.
  - I ..... (to doubt) that Mr. Stevens ..... (to do) what we ..... (to want) to ask him for.

9. I ..... (*not, to trust*) Sam and ..... (*to be*) sure that sooner or later he ..... (*to show*) his true attitude to us and then everybody ..... (*to see*) that I ..... (*to be*) right.
10. The Tysons ..... (*to have*) an impression that something strange ..... (*to go on*) in the room but they ..... (*to pretend*) they ..... (*not, to notice*) it or at least ..... (*not, to pay*) attention to it.
11. I read in a reference book that the ancient Egyptians ..... (*to build*) pyramids over the tombs of dead kings and queens.
12. The book she ..... (*to find*) ..... (*to look*) very old. She ..... (*to realize*) that it ..... (*can*) be valuable, that's why she ..... (*not, to throw*) it away.
13. Brian ..... (*to look*) totally different from the man I ..... (*to expect*) to see. In fact I ..... (*to be*) disappointed because I ..... (*to imagine*) a stronger and a more handsome man. But my friend ..... (*to remind*) me that appearance ..... (*can*) be deceiving.
14. She ..... (*to begin*) to cry when she ..... (*to see*) that the flowers she ..... (*always, to look after*) so carefully ..... (*to be*) dead.
15. Mrs. Crap ..... (*never, to throw away*) anything hoping that this or that thing ..... (*to come in*) handy. As a result her flat ..... (*to be*) full of unnecessary old things she ..... (*to store*) for ages.

**Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в правильной форме.  
Сначала прочтите всю ситуацию.**

**58.2**

**1** .....  
"The radio was delivered the following afternoon. Irene was struck at once with the physical ugliness of the large gumwood cabinet. She ..... (*to be*) proud of her living room, she ..... (*to choose*) its furnishings and colours as carefully as she ..... (*to choose*) her clothes, and now it ..... (*to seem*) to her that the new radio ..... (*to stand*) among her intimate possessions like an aggressive intruder."

**2** .....  
"The maid ..... (*to give*) the children their suppers and ..... (*to supervise*) their baths when Irene ..... (*to turn on*) the radio, (*to reduce*) the volume, and (*to sit*) down to listen to a Mozart quintet that she ..... (*to know*) and ..... (*to enjoy*). The music ..... (*to come*) through clearly. The new instrument ..... (*to have*) a much purer tone, she ..... (*to think*) than the old one. She ..... (*to decide*) that tone ..... (*to be*) most important and that she ..... (*can*) conceal the cabinet behind the sofa. But as soon as she ..... (*to make*) her peace with the radio, the interference ..... (*to begin*). A crackling sound like the noise of a burning powder fuse ..... (*to begin*) to accompany the singing of the strings. Beyond the music, there ..... (*to be*) a rustling that ..... (*to remind*) Irene unpleasantly of the sea, and as the quintet ..... (*to progress*), these noises were joined by many others. She ..... (*to try*) all the dials and switches but nothing ..... (*to dim*) the interference, and she ..... (*to sit*) down, disappointed and bewildered, and ..... (*to try*) to trace the flight of the melody."

**3** .....  
"When Jim Westcott ..... (*to come*) home that night, he ..... (*to go*) to the radio confidently and ..... (*to work*) the controls. He ..... (*to have*) the same sort of experience Irene ..... (*to have*). A man ..... (*speak*) on the station Jim ..... (*to choose*), and his voice ..... (*to swing*) instantly from the distance into a force so powerful that it ..... (*to shake*) the apartment. Jim ..... (*to turn*) the volume control and ..... (*to reduce*) the voice."

## 4

“Her children ..... (to come) home from school then and she ..... (to turn off) the radio and ..... (to go) to the nursery. When Jim ..... (to come) home that night, he ..... (to be) tired, and he ..... (to take) a bath and ..... (to change) his clothes. Then he ..... (to join) Irene in the living room. He ..... (just, to turn on) the radio when the maid ..... (to announce) dinner, so he ..... (to leave) it on, and he and Irene ..... (to go) to the table. Jim ..... (to be) too tired to make even a pretense of sociability, and there ..... (to be) nothing about the dinner to hold Irene’s interest, so her attention ..... (to wander) from the food to the deposits of silver polish on the candlesticks and from there to the music in the other room. She ..... (to listen) for a few moments to a Chopin prelude and then ..... (to be) surprised to hear a man’s voice break in. “For Christ’s sake, Kathy,” he said, “do you always have to play the piano when I get home?” The music ..... (to stop) abruptly. “It’s the only chance I have,” a woman ..... (to say). “I’m at the office all day.” “So am I,” the man said. He ..... (to add) something obscene about an upright piano, and ..... (to slam) the door. The passionate and melancholy music ..... (to begin) again.

“..... (you, to hear) that?” Irene asked.

“What?” Jim ..... (to eat) his dessert.

“The radio. A man ..... (to say) something while the music ..... (still, to go on).”

*After John Cheever*  
“The Enormous Radio”

## Переведите.

58.3

1. Он понимал, что если его жена узнает, что он сделал, она никогда не простит его.
2. Рик так много лет скрывал правду, что теперь ему было трудно признаться. Он уже и сам не помнил, почему не сделал этого сразу.
3. Он не пошел на вечеринку, так как избегал встречаться с Мэган. Он не хотел, чтобы она видела, как ему стыдно за то, что он ей нагрубил.
4. По выражению лица моего секретаря я догадался, кто ей звонит. Она говорила тихо, так, чтобы никто не понял, о чем она говорит.
5. Мужчина явно не понимал, что над ним все смеются, потому что продолжал вести себя, как и раньше.
6. В имени новичка было что-то загадочное, потому что, хотя всем оно казалось простым, его никто не помнил.
7. Полицейские недоумевали, как преступнику удалось убежать из тюрьмы и где он так долго скрывается. Они были уверены, что кто-то помогает ему.
8. Ребенок плакал, и Лиз не могла его успокоить. Ей было непонятно, в чем дело, она боялась, что сделала что-то не так.
9. Все только и говорили о происшествии, которое произошло накануне. Люди обсуждали детали и гадали, каковы же будут последствия.
10. Мистер Дил был уверен, что, когда люди прочтут его книгу, он обязательно станет известен и популярен.
11. Крис удивился, что его никто не встречает, так как он давно сообщил о дате своего прибытия.
12. Все понимали, что миссис Картрайт имеет в виду, но делали вид, что все в порядке и ничего странного не происходит.
13. Передача была крайне интересная. Я узнала, например, что в 1666 году «Великий пожар» уничтожил 2/3 Лондона.
14. Рэчел написала нам обо всем, что узнала, поэтому мы имели представление о том, кто и что делал до ее приезда, а также о том, что теперь происходит в доме.
15. Было невозможно поверить, что такой спокойный и приветливый человек — на самом деле негодяй, из-за которого погибло столько людей.

**Исправьте ошибки.**

**59.1**

1. Nick tells that it's time to go. ....
2. Michael wondered what my brother looks like. ....
3. My Dad says that he would help me. ....
4. The children said that we were ready for the competition. ....
5. The man said that he saw the accident. ....
6. The teacher said that if we wouldn't study hard we would have problems at the exam. ....
7. Myra asked why had I lied to her. ....
8. Laura said me that her brother was coming to see her. ....
9. Mother told Maude that she clean her room. ....
10. My little son was very surprised when he read that the cuckoo laid its eggs in other birds' nests. ....
11. It turned out that everybody had learnt about it long ago. ....
12. I asked who was looking after his garden while he is in hospital. ....
13. He said his neighbours would return next week. ....
14. Roger asked me don't touch that picture. ....
15. My parents wondered why I hadn't called yesterday. ....

**Раскройте скобки, употребив глагол в правильной форме.  
Сначала прочтите всю ситуацию.**

**59.2**

**1** -----  
 "We're very glad to have you here, Mr. Gorin," Professor Fox said gently. "This year we .....  
 (to take) only one assistant. .... (you, to have) a pleasant summer, Mr. Gorin?"  
 "A pleasant summer?" Erik ..... (to be) silent for the time of two long breaths.  
 "No, sir," he said.  
 "What ..... (you, to say)?" Fox ..... (to ask) out of surprise.  
 "I ..... (to say) that the summer ..... (to be) pretty awful," Erik said once  
 more. "All I can say is I'm glad it ..... (to be) over," Eric went on.  
 "You see I ..... (to be) absolutely broke when Professor Hollingworth .....  
 (to tell) me that I ..... (to get) the appointment here. He ..... (to ask) me  
 to spend the summer with him and his family. But I couldn't see myself sponging on him for all that  
 time, so I ..... (to stay) there for two weeks. It ..... (to be) wonderful there.  
 But at the end of two weeks, I ..... (to leave) them saying I ..... (to go) East  
 to visit a cousin. I ..... (not, to have) any cousin, but I ..... (to get on) the  
 train because the whole Hollingworth family ..... (to come) to the station to see me off.  
 On the train I ..... (to buy) a ticket for the next town. I ..... (to get out) there  
 and ..... (to take) a lift on the highway. That fellow ..... (to drive) his car  
 to Cleveland to sell it there. He ..... (to love) the car, because you see he .....  
 (to save) so long to buy it. He ..... (to be) sad all the way and ..... (to tell) me  
 over and over how he ..... (to fix) this part and ..... (to repair) that one. But he  
 ..... (to be) out of work and had to sell the car. When we ..... (to stop) for gas,  
 I ..... (to get) into conversation with the owner of the station. He .....  
 (to offer) me a job for a place to eat and sleep. I was supposed to help him in repairs and service. One day  
 I ..... (to go) into town and a fellow ..... (to stop) me. He ..... (to be)  
 almost crazy because he ..... (to say) I ..... (to take) his job. He used to make  
 thirty a week and I ..... (to do) the work for practically nothing. He ..... (to be)

married and ..... (to have) a family, so I ..... (to move on). I ..... (not, to know) whether he ever got the job back, but I know I ..... (not, to want) it any more. Then I ..... (to wash) dishes for a while in a cafe, and when I ..... (to get) to New York, I ..... (to come up) here at once but you ..... (to be) still away on your vacation. For two weeks until yesterday I ..... (to work) in a bathhouse at an open air pool."

After Mitchell Wilson  
"Live with Lightning"

## 2

"All right, if you want the truth you can have it. I ..... (to do) it and I'd do it again. I told you I ..... (to stop) at nothing to prevent Sophie from marrying Larry. He ..... (to think) he ..... (to make) a new woman out of her. What fools men ..... (to be)! I ..... (to know) that sooner or later she ..... (to break down). It ..... (to stick out) a mile. You ..... (to see) yourself when we ..... (all, to lunch) together at the Ritz how jittery she ..... (to be). I ..... (to notice) you looking at her when she ..... (to drink) her coffee; her hand ..... (to shake) so, she ..... (to be) afraid to take the cup with one hand.

The idea ..... (to come) to me when Uncle Elliott ..... (to make) all that fuss about that damned Polish liqueur. I ..... (to think) it beastly, but I (to pretend) it ..... (to be) the most wonderful stuff I ..... (ever, to taste). I ..... (to be) certain that if she ..... (to get) a chance she ..... (never, to have) the strength to resist. That's why I ..... (to take) her to the dress show. That's why I ..... (to offer) to make her a present of her wedding dress. That day, when she was going to have the last fitting I ..... (to tell) Antoine I ..... (to have) the zubrovka after lunch and then I ..... (to tell) him I ..... (to expect) a lady and to ask her to wait and offer her some coffee and to leave the liqueur in case she ..... (to fancy) a glass. I did take Joan to the dentist's, but of course we ..... (not, to have) an appointment and he couldn't see us, so I ..... (to take) her to a newsreel. I ..... (to make up) my mind that if I ..... (to find) Sophie ..... (not, to touch) the stuff I ..... (to make) the best of things and try to be friends with her. That ..... (to be) true, I ..... (to swear) it. But when I ..... (to get) home and ..... (to see) the bottle I ..... (to know) I ..... (to be) right. She ..... (to go)."

Isabel ..... (actually, to pant) when she ..... (to finish).

"That ..... (to be) more or less what I ..... (to imagine) ..... (to happen)," I ..... (to say)."

After W. S. Maugham  
"The Razor's Edge"

## Переведите.

## 59.3

## 1

Однажды Джимми убежал из дома, когда отец и мачеха опять избили его. Он не знал, куда идет. В конце концов он оказался на улице, где никогда раньше не бывал. Ему стало страшно, и он заплакал. Он довольно долго сидел на улице. Уже стало темнеть, когда к нему подошли двое ребят и спросили, что случилось и почему он плачет. Сначала Джимми боялся их, так как впервые их видел. Но потом он рассказал им свою историю. Им стало жалко Джимми. Они понимали, что мальчик не выживет, если они оставят его одного. Ребята сказали, чтобы Джимми не плакал, и пообещали помочь ему.

## 2

Оказалось, что мистер Хопкинс — вор и все это время использовал Джимми для своих преступлений. С тех пор как Джимми понял это, он только и думал, что делать. Он вспомнил, что друзья



познаются в беде, и пошел к Рипу. Рип боялся, что, когда Джимми придет в полицию, полицейские арестуют его, так как к тому времени он принял участие во многих кражах, а полицейские знали, что Хопкинсу кто-то помогает. Ребята сидели и думали, что делать, когда пришел хозяин Рипа и спросил, что они тут делают так поздно.

**3** -----

Миссис Уинкшип и ее племянница Марта не могли удержаться от слез, когда Джимми рассказывал, как он жил и чем занимался все это время. Они решили, что мальчик останется у них, пока они не придумают, что делать.

Прошло несколько дней, и Марта вспомнила, как дядюшка Белчер как-то говорил, что ему нужен помощник. Она точно не знала, чем он занимается, но подумала, что Джимми, который пережил так много, справится с любой работой.

Сначала дядюшка Белчер не хотел брать Джимми. Он сказал, что мальчик уже слишком большой, но женщины уговорили его забрать Джимми. Они и представить себе не могли, куда они на самом деле посылают мальчика и что там с ним случится.

# THE PASSIVE VOICE

ПАССИВНЫЙ ЗАЛОГ

## 1. ОБРАЗОВАНИЕ

- Вспомогательный глагол **to be** в соответствующей временной форме + причастие прошедшего времени смыслового глагола

**be** + **причастие прошедшего времени**

- Правила образования причастия прошедшего времени см. в *Unit 45*.
- Чтобы употребить соответствующую форму пассивного залога, надо прямое дополнение конструкции в активном залоге сделать подлежащим.

The commission *discussed* my report yesterday.

My report *was discussed* yesterday by the commission.



Если необходимо указать, кем было совершено действие, используется предлог **by**.

Чтобы показать, при помощи чего совершено действие, используется предлог **with**.

The letter was written *by a boy with a pencil*.

## 2. ФОРМЫ

- **The Present Indefinite Passive** — *is (am, are) done*  
This room *is cleaned* every other day.
- **The Past Indefinite Passive** — *was (were) done*  
The room *was cleaned* on Monday.
- **The Future Indefinite Passive** — *will (shall) be done*  
The room *will be cleaned* tomorrow.
- **The Present Continuous Passive** — *is (are) being done*  
The room *is being cleaned* now.
- **The Past Continuous Passive** — *was (were) being done*  
The room *was being cleaned* at 6 o'clock yesterday.
- **The Present Perfect Passive** — *have (has) been done*  
The room *has already been cleaned*.
- **The Past Perfect Passive** — *had been done*  
The room *had been cleaned* by that time.



Обратите внимание, что в пассивном залоге, в отличие от активного, не существует форм Perfect Continuous.



Вопросительную и отрицательную формы образует первый вспомогательный глагол.

*Will* the work *be done* tomorrow?

The room *isn't being cleaned* now.

Переделайте конструкцию активного залога в пассивную, употребив глагол в соответствующей форме.

60.1

- 1** -----
1. Everybody loves this dish. ....
  2. Have they collected all the necessary information? .....
  3. Nobody will ever buy such an ugly picture. ....
  4. The police caught this criminal a year ago. ....
  5. The doctor was examining a patient when I came. ....
  6. The noise frightened the children. ....
  7. We had spent all the money by the end of our vacation. ....
  8. Will they raise prices again? .....
  9. Our neighbours are growing new flowers this year. ....
  10. They use this word in several meanings. ....
- 2** -----
1. What did they say about the exam? .....
  2. They haven't found a way out yet. ....
  3. Why did they conceal the truth? .....
  4. My brother is still repairing his car. ....
  5. It turned out that Mary had organized a new show. ....
  6. I won't leave such important documents at the office. ....
  7. How many times has she used the mincer since she bought it? .....
  8. Did you know that they were watching you? .....
  9. My daughter breaks something every time she washes the dishes. ....
  10. She didn't make the children help her in the garden. ....

Переведите.

60.2

- 1** -----
1. Новый театр еще не построили, не так ли?
  2. Когда будет опубликована ваша книга?
  3. Такие открытки обычно посылают ко дню рождения.
  4. Такую же мелодию исполняли, когда я вернулась с работы.
  5. Ваши вещи вовремя упаковали? — Да, спасибо.
  6. В доме был идеальный порядок. Все было расставлено по местам, пол вымыт, а занавески выстираны.
  7. Чей доклад сейчас обсуждается?
  8. Ника давно не видели.
  9. Фрукты едят перед едой.
  10. Мы попали в театр, так как билеты давно были заказаны.
- 2** -----
1. Тихо! Сообщают важные новости.
  2. Как давно ремонтируется эта квартира?
  3. Это было сказано специально для тебя.
  4. Его не вылечат, если он не ляжет в больницу.
  5. Этот пирог легко готовится.
  6. Мне это не показалось. — Ну, неужели за тобой действительно следили?
  7. Не было потеряно ни минуты. Были сделаны все необходимые приготовления.
  8. Машину не красят. Ее уже сушат.
  9. Имя уже выбрали к тому времени, как родился ребенок?
  10. Я боялась, что ошибку все равно заметят.

**1. Прямая пассивная конструкция**

- Прямое дополнение конструкции в активном залоге становится подлежащим конструкции в страдательном залоге. Со следующими глаголами употребляется только эта конструкция:

to announce	to dictate	to read	to sell
to buy	to explain	to recommend	to sing
to describe	to introduce	to repeat	to suggest
to devote	to mention	to report	to write

She *bought new toys* for the children. ⇒ *New toys were bought* for the children.

The teacher *will dictate* the task to you. ⇒ *The task will be dictated* to you by the teacher.



Обратите внимание на разницу в построении русского и английского предложений:

*The rule was repeated* to them twice. ⇒ *Им дважды повторили* правило.



Если в предложении нет прямого дополнения, то для построения пассивной конструкции с указанными глаголами используется безличное предложение.

*It was explained to us* what to do. ⇒ *Нам объяснили*, что делать.

**2. Косвенная пассивная конструкция**

- Прямое или косвенное дополнение конструкции в активном залоге становятся подлежащим конструкции в страдательном залоге. Такую конструкцию могут образовывать глаголы

to give, to offer, to pay, to promise, to send, to show, to tell
--

They *gave me* really good *advice*. ⇒ *I was given* really good advice.  
 ⇒ Really good *advice* *was given* to me.

**3. Предложная пассивная конструкция.**

- Предложное дополнение конструкции в активном залоге становится подлежащим конструкции в пассивном залоге. Предлог сохраняет свое место сразу после глагола.

They *are talking about their holidays*. ⇒ *Their holidays are being talked about*.



Неопределенно-личные предложения типа «Говорят, она хороший врач»; «Слышали, как он кричал на нее»; «Видели, как она вышла из офиса» переводятся следующим образом:

She *is said to be* a good doctor.

He *was heard to* shout at her.

She *was seen to* leave the office.

**Переделайте конструкцию активного залога в пассивную.  
Дайте два варианта, где это возможно.**

61.1

- 1** -----
1. They sold the ring to some lady yesterday. ....
  2. The principal introduced our new English teacher to us. ....
  3. Haven't you agreed on all the most important details yet? .....
  4. She'll certainly show us her new picture. ....
  5. They report that a dangerous criminal is missing. ....
  6. Did the teacher explain anything new to you at the lesson? .....
  7. She didn't even send me a birthday card! .....
  8. By 5 o'clock the committee hadn't announced the winner yet. ....
  9. Professor Brand always gives these recommendations to his students. ....
  10. We never laugh at his jokes because they aren't funny. ....

- 2** -----
1. Don't disturb him. He's dictating a very important letter to his secretary. ....
  2. She was describing the accident to passers-by when the police arrived. ....
  3. Oh, dear! She's been waiting for me for a quarter of an hour already. ....
  4. What are they looking for? .....
  5. Some stranger offered his help when I fell down in the street. ....
  6. When did he write this book? .....
  7. He speaks in such a low voice that nobody ever listens to him. ....
  8. Mr. Brown is buying a new car. ....
  9. Every woman is pleased when somebody pays her a compliment. ....
  10. They haven't bought anything new lately. ....

**Переведите. Дайте два варианта, где это возможно.**

61.2

- 1** -----
1. Мне прочли лишь отрывок из его нового рассказа, но он меня сразу заинтересовал.
  2. Его доклады всегда слушают с большим вниманием.
  3. Вам объяснили, как пройти к театру?
  4. Ему уже послали телеграмму.
  5. Почему этот факт упомянули дважды к концу беседы?
  6. Сейчас просматривают наши контрольные работы. — А когда объявят оценки?
  7. Мне пообещали, что подумают над моим предложением.
  8. Ученикам несколько раз повторили задание, но некоторые его так и не поняли.
  9. Какой фильм показывали вчера детям?
  10. Сообщают, что визит будет нанесен в начале месяца.

- 2** -----
1. Когда я пришел, по радио пели мою любимую песню.
  2. Вы уверены, что вам рассказали всю правду?
  3. Это тот самый мюзикл, о котором сейчас так много говорят?
  4. Как тебе понравилась вечеринка, на которую тебя пригласили Смиты?
  5. Кто вам порекомендовал этого врача?
  6. Чему посвящена эта книга?
  7. Нам не объяснили ни преимуществ, ни недостатков этого метода.
  8. Ты не знаешь, над чем они так долго смеются?
  9. Президенту сразу сообщили новости.
  10. Где его ждали в это время?

**Исправьте возможные ошибки.**

**62.1**



- ★ Has the baby be fed yet? ⇒ *Has the baby been fed yet?* .....
- ★ Why wasn't I sent for at once? ⇒ *RIGHT* .....

- 1** -----
1. There's something wrong with the piano. It is been tuned now. ....
  2. When will be the picture finished? .....
  3. The boy was made to stay after classes. ....
  4. The plan we agreed looked perfect. ....
  5. They were recommended to call the police. ....
  6. You'll have to wait. The documents are looking through. ....
  7. She was looked at with curiosity when she entered. ....
  8. Mary was sure she had been watched all the way. ....
  9. Who was the book written? .....
  10. The message was written by a pencil. ....

- 2** -----
1. The question has been being discussed for two hours already. ....
  2. What were you being explained when the principal entered? .....
  3. He was seen leave the building at 8 o'clock. ....
  4. It was arranged that the incident would never be mentioned in the family. ....
  5. She was said to go home at once. ....
  6. This event has been much spoken lately. ....
  7. He was promised another day off on Friday. ....
  8. What are these cakes made of? .....
  9. The child was bought new shoes yesterday. ....
  10. The children are always read a good-night tale by their Granny. ....

**Раскройте скобки, употребив правильную форму пассивного залога.**

**62.2**

- 1** -----
1. What's going on here? What's all that noise? — Sorry! My flat ..... (to redecorate).
  2. If the work ..... (not, to finish) by evening, you'll be in trouble.
  3. By the time I left the problem ..... (not, to solve) though it ..... (to discuss) actively for quite a long time.
  4. Why ..... (this information, ever, to use)? It's so interesting!
  5. Such clothes ..... (not, to wear) now. They are old-fashioned.
  6. Don't worry. Nobody will notice such a tiny spot. It ..... (not, to pay attention to).
  7. She suddenly realized that she ..... (to listen to) in complete silence.
  8. She ..... (not, to introduce) by the hostess and felt embarrassed as she herself didn't know anybody.
  9. I'll take a picture of you when you ..... (to give) the prize.
  10. What was that book about? — It ..... (to devote) to the writer's brother who ..... (to kill) in the war.

**2**

1. He ..... (to offer) this job several times. — What made him refuse it?
2. I ..... (to tell) that the problem ..... (not, to consider) yet but when it was I ..... (to inform) immediately.
3. They say a new play ..... (to rehearse) by the school theatre. — Oh, yes, all the parents and teachers ..... (already, to invite).
4. The girl was crying because she ..... (to make fun of) by her classmates.
5. It was the third time the name ..... (to mention) and I wondered who the man was.
6. I was sure that if the figures ..... (to check) properly the mistake ..... (to find) easily.
7. I'm fed up. I ..... (to keep) waiting for half an hour! I'm not going to stay here any longer.
8. Now that the situation ..... (to study) thoroughly what ..... (to do) to improve it?
9. This is the only thing that ..... (to talk about) for several days.
10. I doubted if the child ..... (to look after) properly though I ..... (to promise) complete care.

**Переведите.****62.3****1**

1. Если в следующем году нам будут преподавать еще один иностранный язык, я выберу английский. На нем говорят во многих странах.
2. Кто вам сказал, что его обокрали? Его сильно избили, но ничего не украли.
3. Я включил телевизор. Показывали какой-то старый фильм.
4. Оказалось, что его не пригласили на вечеринку, так как не нашли его телефон.
5. Что тебе подарили на день рождения? — Ничего. Меня пока еще никто не поздравил.
6. Нам объяснили, что это печальное событие никогда не обсуждается в семье и поэтому на наши вопросы никто не ответит.
7. Ваше платье глядят. Подождите, пожалуйста, минутку.
8. Мне кажется, это пустяковый инцидент. Почему ты думаешь, что о нем будут говорить?
9. Мне просто продиктовали инструкции. — Разве вам не объяснили, для чего это все?
10. Ник поинтересовался, на какой день отложили встречу и почему ему не сказали об этом.

**2**

1. Когда будут слушать следующего выступающего? — Не знаю. Он еще не пришел. Все его ждут.
2. Мне никогда ничего подобного не предлагали. Я не знаю, что делать.
3. Никто тебе не поверит. Над тобой только посмеются.
4. На ее уроках ничего не повторяется дважды. Ученики прекрасно понимают ее объяснения.
5. Почему документы так долго просматривают? Что-то не так?
6. Почему ты не можешь понять такой простой вещи? Сколько раз тебе это объясняли?
7. Если полиция пообещает ей защиту, она расскажет, кем было совершено преступление.
8. Что тебе порекомендовал врач?
9. К этому времени было прооперировано 5 пациентов.
10. Письмо было написано в спешке, поэтому его было трудно читать.



- Э** -----
1. Вам сообщат, когда продадут вашу машину. Вам пришлют письмо.
  2. Хотя мне описали мистера Смита, я не смогла его узнать, пока нас не представили друг другу.
  3. Наш рейс уже объявили?
  4. Было ясно, что такую красивую вещь очень быстро купят. За нее заплатят любые деньги.
  5. Я не разобрал, чье имя упомянули. Я только догадался, что за кем-то посылают.
  6. Нашу помощь приняли с благодарностью, но фактически она была не нужна.
  7. Ему надо дать время подумать. Такие решения сразу не принимаются.
  8. Обо всем договорились задолго до встречи. Почему план вдруг изменили?
  9. Если не сделать укол в течение часа, пациент может умереть.
  10. Не входите! Проводится репетиция.

# **SUBJUNCTIVE MOOD**

**СОСЛАГАТЕЛЬНОЕ  
НАКЛОНЕНИЕ**

В английском языке форма глаголов в предложениях нереального условия зависит от того, к какому времени относится действие, выраженное данным предложением.

**1. Действие относится к настоящему или будущему**

**В придаточном предложении**

форма, сходная с Past Indefinite

If I knew his number I **would** phone him.

**В главном предложении**

would + инфинитив смыслового глагола

Если бы знал его номер, я бы ему позвонил.

**2. Действие относится к прошлому**

**В придаточном предложении**

форма, сходная с Past Perfect

If I **had known** his number I **would have phoned** him long ago.

**В главном предложении**

would + перфектный инфинитив смыслового глагола

Если бы знал его номер, я бы ему давно позвонил.

**3. Действие относится к прошлому**

**В придаточном предложении**

форма, сходная с Past Perfect

If you **had prepared** everything beforehand we **wouldn't** wait for you now.

**В главном предложении**

would + инфинитив смыслового глагола

Если бы ты приготовил все заранее, мы бы тебя сейчас не ждали.

*Действие относится к настоящему*

**4. Действие относится к настоящему**

**В придаточном предложении**

форма, сходная с Past Indefinite

If I knew his address I **would have written** him a letter long ago.

**В главном предложении**

would + перфектный инфинитив смыслового глагола

Если бы знал его адрес, я бы давно написал ему письмо.

*Действие относится к прошлому*

**5. Оборот if I were you соответствует русскому на вашем месте.**

If I **were** you I **would** do it now.

На вашем месте я бы сделал это сейчас.

If I **were** you I **would have done** it long ago.

На вашем месте я бы давно это сделал.



В предложениях с придаточными нереального условия правила согласования времен не соблюдаются.

If I *ate* less I *wouldn't be* so fat.

He said that if he *ate* less he *wouldn't be* so fat.

**6. Оборот but for соответствует русскому если бы не ...**

**But for** the bad weather we **would go for** a walk now.

Если бы не плохая погода, мы бы пошли сейчас погулять.

**But for** the bad weather we **would have gone for** a walk yesterday.

Если бы не плохая погода, мы бы вчера пошли погулять.

**Употребите глагол в форме сослагательного наклонения.**

63.1

**Ситуация относится к настоящему времени.**

★ If I knew his telephone number I **would ring** him up now. (*to ring*)

★ If I **knew** English I would speak to them. (*to know*)

1. If Jack were a polite man he ..... in such a way. (*not, to behave*)
2. If Barbara ..... to my birthday party I would be so pleased. (*to come*)
3. If I weren't tired I ..... you. (*to join*)
4. He ..... ill so often if he went in for sports. (*not, to fall*)
5. I would go to the sea-side if I ..... afford a holiday now. (*can*)
6. If you ..... ready he wouldn't be so annoyed. (*to be*)
7. You ..... better if you walked more. (*to feel*)
8. If I ..... a cold I would take part in the competition. (*not, to have*)
9. I wouldn't be angry with you if you ..... me all the time. (*not, to interrupt*)
10. I ..... the house if it weren't so large. (*not, to sell*)

**Употребите глагол в форме сослагательного наклонения.**

63.2

**Ситуация относится к прошедшему времени.**

★ If I had found him at home I **would have told** him the news. (*to tell*)

★ If so many years **hadn't passed** I would have recognized him. (*to pass*)

1. If I hadn't been rude to him yesterday we ..... (*not, to quarrel*)
2. If she ..... away some important papers I wouldn't have been angry. (*not, to throw*)
3. I wouldn't have taken a taxi if I ..... so much luggage. (*not, to have*)
4. He ..... his way if you had explained to him how to get there. (*not, to lose*)
5. They ..... if you had told them the truth. (*to help*)
6. He wouldn't have lost his way if you ..... him. (*to meet*)
7. If you ..... the police they would have arrested him. (*to call*)
8. If they hadn't been in a hurry they ..... to drive you to the station. (*not, to refuse*)
9. I ..... everything to you if you had asked me. (*to explain*)
10. If you ..... me for advice I would have advised you to stay at home. (*to ask*)

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя сослагательное наклонение.**

63.3

1. She is unhappy because he doesn't love her. ....
2. She was so happy yesterday because he told her he loved her. ....
3. Glen stayed at home because the weather was bad. ....
4. Molly doesn't trust him because she doesn't know him well. ....
5. He didn't argue because he didn't know the subject well. ....
6. I didn't drink the coffee because it wasn't tasty. ....
7. The child learned the poem quickly because it was easy. ....
8. I read a lot because I want to know a lot. ....
9. I took the cat home because it looked unhappy. ....
10. I don't watch TV because I don't have much time. ....

**Постройте предложения по образцу.**

63.4

★ I don't walk much. ⇒ *If I were you I would walk more.*

★ I've sold my car. ⇒ *If I were you I wouldn't have sold my car.*

1. I didn't go there. ....
2. I ate a lot yesterday. ....

3. I don't learn English. ....
4. I always trust people. ....
5. I told him the truth. ....
6. I didn't buy that bag. ....
7. I smoke a lot. ....
8. I don't eat much fruit. ....
9. I didn't have a holiday last year. ....
10. I'm angry with him. ....

Соедините две части предложения в одно сложное по образцу.

**63.5**

**1** -----

- |                             |  |
|-----------------------------|--|
| ① <i>Graham is friendly</i> | A. she quarrelled with her husband     |
| ② Richard is nervous        | B. he shouted at his child             |
| ③ Bill is economical        | C. <i>he has made a lot of friends</i> |
| ④ Bess is bad-tempered      | D. she forgave me                      |
| ⑤ My chief is loyal         | E. he gave me a day off                |
| ⑥ My mother is kind         | F. he has saved a lot of money         |

★ *If Graham weren't friendly he wouldn't have made so many friends.*

1. ....
2. ....
3. ....
4. ....
5. ....

**2** -----

- |                                     |                                |
|-------------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| ① <i>I have passed the exam</i>     | A. He is wet through now       |
| ② Steve hasn't saved enough money   | B. I'm thirsty now             |
| ③ Katherine hasn't cleaned the coat | C. <i>I'm the happiest man</i> |
| ④ Adam didn't take the umbrella     | D. She can't put it on         |
| ⑤ This man broke into a house       | E. He can't go on holiday      |
| ⑥ I didn't buy a bottle of water    | F. He is in prison now         |

★ *If I hadn't passed the exam I wouldn't be the happiest man.*

1. ....
2. ....
3. ....
4. ....
5. ....

Переделайте предложения, как указано в примере.

**63.6**

**1** -----

★ I didn't book a room in advance, that's why I have problems now. ⇨ *If I had booked a room in advance, I wouldn't have problems now.*

1. You didn't take the pills, that's why you feel bad now. ....
2. I didn't clean the room yesterday, that's why I have to do it now. ....
3. The film is interesting, that's why I've seen it twice. ....
4. He is a good lawyer, that's why he has earned a lot of money. ....

5. He hasn't given up smoking, that's why he feels bad. ....
6. Tom hasn't eaten anything the whole day, so he is hungry now. ....
7. You are late again. Why didn't you take a taxi? ....
8. I'm afraid of flying, that's why I didn't go there by plane. ....
9. My radio-set doesn't work and I didn't listen to the 7 o'clock news. ....
10. The bag is cheap, that's why I bought it. ....

## 2

★ There is a good film on TV today. I won't go with you. ⇒ *But for the film I would go with you.*

1. The frost is strong. We won't go skating. ....
2. I had a map. It helped me to find the place. ....
3. He gave me advice and now I know what to do. ....
4. The price was too high, so I didn't buy the car. ....
5. Only the alarm-clock woke me up. ....
6. I'm upset because of his words. . ....

### Переведите.

**63.7**

1. Если бы вы опоздали, мы бы уехали без вас. Хорошо, что вы пришли вовремя.
2. Я бы давно закончил работу, если бы он мне помог.
3. Я бы относился к нему лучше, если бы он не солгал.
4. Если бы не туман, рейс бы не отменили.
5. На вашем месте я бы обсудил этот вопрос со всеми.
6. Если бы Стив был честным человеком, он бы давно сказал нам правду.
7. Если бы он был более опытным водителем, аварии не произошло бы.
8. На вашем месте я бы давно позвонил ему.
9. Если бы у меня были деньги, я бы вам одолжил нужную сумму.
10. Если бы он хотел остаться у нас на прошлой неделе, он бы остался.
11. Я бы навестил сегодня Джейн, если бы не заболел.
12. Если бы не он, я бы не знал, что происходит.
13. На вашем месте я бы не заставлял ребенка учить это стихотворение наизусть.
14. Если бы книга не была такой дорогой, я бы ее вчера купил.
15. Что бы ты делал, если бы отстал от поезда?
16. Он сказал, что если бы у него не болела нога, он бы сыграл с нами.
17. Я не стал извиняться. Что бы ты сделал на моем месте?
18. Если бы ты купил билет, тебя бы не оштрафовали.
19. Ваш ребенок не получил бы двойку, если бы вы уделяли ему больше внимания.
20. Молли сказала, что на месте Тима она бы ходила в шапке.
21. Если бы ты купила те туфли, ты могла бы их сейчас надеть.
22. На ее месте я бы попробовала сделать это еще раз.
23. Ребенок сказал, что если бы мама купила ему эту игрушку, он был бы счастлив.
24. Я бы искупался, если бы не было так холодно.
25. На твоем месте я бы не разрешала сыну переходить дорогу одному.
26. Я бы вчера не опоздал, если бы не попал в пробку.
27. Если бы не жара, цветы бы не засохли.
28. На вашем месте я бы давно бросил курить и бегал по утрам.
29. Мистер Кейн давно бы повысил тебя, если бы ты был более ответственным.
30. Я бы не торопился, если бы они меня не ждали.
31. Если бы ты не пропустил лекцию, ты бы не спрашивал меня сейчас об этом.
32. Она сказала, что посидела бы с маленьким Крисом, если бы не была больна.
33. Если бы у тебя был миллион долларов, что бы ты делал?
34. Если бы не его приезд, я бы с вами встретился сегодня.

В дополнительных придаточных предложениях, зависящих от глагола **wish**, глагол-сказуемое имеет форму *сослагательного наклонения*.

- Если действие относится к *настоящему* или *будущему* времени, то употребляется форма, сходная с Past Indefinite.

I wish I *knew* where he is.

*Хотел бы я знать, где он. (Жаль, что я не знаю, где он.)*

I wish he *didn't come*.

*Хотелось бы, чтобы он не приходил. (Жаль, что он придет.)*

- Если действие относится к *будущему*, то может также употребляться форма **would do**:

I wish he *would come* soon.

*Мне хочется, чтобы он скорее пришел.*

- Кроме того, форма **would do** используется для выражения или недовольства, когда говорящий хочет, чтобы кто-то перестал что-то делать.

I wish he *wouldn't throw* his things all over the place.

*Мне бы хотелось, чтобы он не разбрасывал повсюду свои вещи.*

- Если действие относится к *прошлому*, то употребляется форма, сходная с формой Past Perfect.

I wish I *had known* where he was yesterday.

*Жаль, что я не знал, где он был вчера.*

I wish he *hadn't said* it.

*Жаль, что он это сказал.*

- В придаточных дополнительных предложениях после *wish* глагол **to be** чаще употребляется в форме множественного числа **were**. В разговорной речи возможно употребление формы **was**.

I wish I *were* you.

*Хотел бы я быть на вашем месте.*



Обратите внимание на разницу между английским и русским предложениями.

I wish it *weren't* so hot.

*Жаль, что так жарко.*

I wish I *hadn't spent* so much money on flowers.

*Жаль, что я потратила так много денег на цветы.*

**Закончите предложения. Отнесите ситуацию к настоящему.****64.1**★ He is busy now. I wish ... ⇒ *I wish he weren't busy now.*

1. My boss says I'm often late for work. He wishes .....
2. It's a pity but it's not my car. I wish .....
3. The day is so gloomy today. I wish .....
4. I don't have a house of my own. I wish .....
5. Paul's wife is a bad cook. Paul wishes .....
6. Ron doesn't speak German well. He wishes .....

**Закончите предложения. Отнесите ситуацию к прошлому.****64.2**★ My wife didn't wake me up. I wish..... ⇒ *I wish my wife had woken me up.*

1. I bought a new suit yesterday. I wish .....
2. He has just got married. I wish .....
3. I didn't hear him singing. I wish .....
4. She wasn't pleased with my work. I wish .....
5. I ate too much for dinner. I wish .....
6. Jack didn't spell the word correctly. He wishes .....

**Переделайте предложения, используя слова и выражения из таблицы.****64.3**★ I feel bad. ⇒ *I wish I felt fine.*

1. I closed the window when I was leaving. I wish .....
2. I'm tired. I wish .....
3. He told me a lie. I wish .....
4. The sofa is too expensive. I wish .....
5. It was a rainy day yesterday. I wish .....
6. I've had my hair cut. I wish .....
7. I drank tea for breakfast. I wish .....
8. The train is slow. I wish .....
9. We are enemies. I wish .....
10. I was shy at school. I wish .....

*to go on holiday*  
*friends*  
*coffee*  
*leave it open*  
*cheaper*  
*active*  
*sunny*  
*let it grow*  
*fast*  
*the truth*  
*fine*

**Переведите.****64.4**

1. Жаль, что мы с моим другом часто ссоримся.
2. Жаль, что он так изменился.
3. Хотелось бы мне знать его адрес.
4. Жаль, что полиция не поймала преступников.
5. Хотелось бы, чтобы ты не тратил так много денег.
6. Жаль, что я не умею водить.
7. Жаль, что никто не встретил его в аэропорту.
8. Жаль, что машина сломалась. Мы могли бы поехать туда на машине.
9. Хотелось бы, чтобы он не менял свои планы так часто.
10. Жаль, что вы не повторили это правило.



**UNIT 65** ПОВТОРЕНИЕ (Units 63–64)

Ответьте на вопросы, употребляя сослагательное наклонение. Ситуация относится к настоящему.

**65.1**

★ What would you do if you felt bad? ⇒ *If I felt bad I would take pills.*

1. What would you do if you had a talent for writing? .....
2. What would you do if you had more money? .....
3. What would you do if you were in love? .....
4. What would you do if you saw a hat you like? .....
5. What would you do if your friend were in trouble? .....

*take pills*  
*write a book*  
*buy a new car*  
*get married*  
*buy it*  
*help him*

Ответьте на вопросы, употребляя сослагательное наклонение. Ситуация относится к прошедшему.

**65.2**

★ What would you have done if he asked you for help yesterday? ⇒  
 ⇒ *If he had asked me for help I would have helped him.*

1. What would you have done if they had asked you to stay? .....
2. What would you have done if yesterday had been your birthday? .....
3. What would you have done if he had asked you to dinner last week? ....
4. What would you have done if he had told you a lie yesterday? .....
5. What would you have done if they had arrived on Tuesday? .....

*to help*  
*to leave all the same*  
*to give a party*  
*to go*  
*to believe*  
*to meet*

Отреагируйте на предложенные ситуации отрицательно при помощи *If I were*.

**65.3**

★ Tom hit Jack and Jack hit him back. ⇒ *If I were Jack I wouldn't have hit Tom back.*

1. Mr. Stone found treasure and handed it over to the authorities. ....
2. Mr. Smith inherited a large sum of money and bought a house. ....
3. Mrs. Brown always tells people what to do. ....
4. Mr. Steel went to the sea-side but didn't swim in the sea. ....
5. We don't go in for sports. ....
6. Mr. Crook wrote a novel and then burnt it. ....
7. He misses lectures very often. ....
8. Mr. Clark bought a picture but then sold it. ....
9. He doesn't even try to understand the problem. ....
10. He smokes a lot. ....

Отреагируйте на высказывания при помощи *wish*.

**65.4**

1  
 ★ I want to be a housewife. ⇒ *I wish I didn't work.*

1. I am lonely.
2. My TV-set doesn't work.
3. Her garden is not very nice.
4. I haven't got a camera.
5. I'm not very beautiful.

*not to work*  
*to have more friends*  
*can afford a new TV-set*  
*to take better care of it*  
*can take pictures*  
*to be a model*

## 2

★ I don't like this mirror. (*buy*) ⇒ *I wish I hadn't bought it.*

1. This food is bad. Why have I come to this restaurant?
2. I went riding and fell down.
3. I saw the match. My favourite team lost.
4. I dyed my hair but now I don't like the colour.
5. I failed the driving test because I didn't know the rules well.
6. The floor is dirty but I don't have the time to wash it.

**buy***go to another restaurant**not to ride so fast**not to switch on the TV-set**to choose another colour**to learn the rules better**to wash it yesterday*

## Закончите предложения, употребляя сослагательное наклонение.

65.5

1. It's raining and I can't go for a walk. But for .....
2. I don't have an umbrella and that's why I'm wet. If .....
3. I'm not rich and I didn't stop at the Ritz. If .....
4. I don't know anything about gardening. I wish .....
5. It's noisy. I wish .....
6. The bus is overcrowded. I wish .....
7. The team made a mistake so they didn't win. But for .....
8. He failed the exam and he is upset. If .....
9. It was slippery and he broke his leg. If .....
10. I didn't win the first prize. I wish .....
11. I had a headache and left the party early. But for .....
12. I don't trust him. I wish .....
13. It's not dark and we'll find the way. If .....
14. Because of the heavy snowfall the flight was cancelled. But for .....
15. He doesn't learn all rules and that's why he makes mistakes. If .....

## Переведите.

65.6

1. Жаль, что я не знаю, как его зовут.
2. Если бы я был голоден, я бы что-нибудь съел.
3. Тебе бы не было сейчас так плохо, если бы ты не ел так много за обедом.
4. Если бы ты был более осторожен вчера, у тебя не было бы неприятностей сегодня.
5. Жаль, что сейчас зима.
6. Если бы я знал, где он, я бы вам сказал.
7. Если бы не он, она не нашла бы работу.
8. Я бы играл в теннис, если бы мне это нравилось.
9. На вашем месте я бы постарался его понять.
10. Жаль, что я не умею плавать.
11. Если бы он больше читал, он бы больше знал.
12. Он сказал, что если бы знал эту песню, то спел бы ее сейчас.
13. Если бы не твоя помощь, у меня бы были неприятности.
14. Жаль, что он такой ленивый.
15. Если бы она любила собак, она давно бы купила собаку.
16. Если бы вы здесь не курили, у меня бы не болела голова.
17. На вашем месте я бы купил тот галстук.

18. Жаль, что они проиграли.
19. Если бы он не знал французский, он бы не перевел этот рассказ.
20. Она сказала, что если бы это было просто, она бы все сейчас сделала.
21. Жаль, что ты выбросил письмо.
22. Жаль, что она не прочла эту книгу.
23. Если бы он жил недалеко от меня, я бы его давно навестил.
24. Жаль, что ты на меня сердился.
25. Если бы не его помощь, я бы опоздал сейчас.
26. Если бы он не был сегодня в плохом настроении, он бы не был так груб.
27. Хотелось бы, чтобы вы повторили все правила к экзамену.
28. Жаль, что мне приходится каждый день так рано вставать.
29. Жаль, что вы не пригласили его присоединиться к экскурсии.
30. Если бы не его советы, я бы не знал, что мне делать тогда.
31. Если бы не сильный мороз, можно было бы покататься на лыжах.
32. Я бы встретился с ним вчера, если бы не задержался на работе.
33. Куда бы вы поехали прошлым летом, если бы у вас была возможность?
34. Что бы вы предприняли, если бы были директором школы?
35. На его месте я бы не стал рассматривать этот вопрос вчера.
36. Если бы ты купил подарок на прошлой неделе, ты бы сейчас не нервничал.
37. Она бы обратилась к нам вчера, если бы не была такой застенчивой.
38. Жаль, что вы пропустили так много занятий.
39. Хотелось бы, чтобы он был более настойчив. Тогда он давно добился бы своего.
40. Что бы вы делали, если бы у вас было больше свободного времени?

# **MODAL VERBS**

**МОДАЛЬНЫЕ ГЛАГОЛЫ**

**1.** Модальный глагол **can** и его форма прошедшего времени **could** выражают:

- способность или умение

He *can* read.

Он *умеет* читать.

He *could* read before he was five.

Он *умел* читать, когда ему не было пяти.

I *couldn't* pronounce the word correctly.

Я *не мог* произнести слово правильно.

- возможность, создаваемую обстоятельствами

You *can* buy there anything you want.

Ты *можешь* купить там все, что хочешь.

I *couldn't* phone him before nine.

Я *не мог* позвонить ему до девяти.

- разрешение, запрещение

You *can't* smoke here.

Здесь *нельзя* курить.

Can I ask you a question?

Могу я задать вам вопрос?

You *can* use my phone.

Можете позвонить от меня.

Форма **could** может употребляться в контексте настоящего времени в значении вежливой просьбы.

*Could you* answer my question?

Вы *не могли бы* ответить на мой вопрос?

*Could you* tell me the time?

Не *подскажите*, который час?

**2.** Поскольку **can** имеет только две временные формы, **can** (для настоящего времени) и **could** (для прошедшего времени), для выражения будущего времени вместо **can** используется оборот **to be able to**, который употребляется во временах группы Perfect и после модальных глаголов.

➤ I *can* phone him today.

I *could* phone him yesterday.

**BUT!** I'll *be able to* phone him in the evening.

Я *смогу позвонить* ему вечером.

I *haven't been able to* sleep well lately.

В последнее время я *не могу хорошо спать*.

He *might be able to* do it.

Возможно, он *может это сделать*.



Форма **could** как форма прошедшего времени указывает только на **возможность** совершения действия в прошлом. Для того, чтобы показать, что действие было или не было совершено в прошлом, следует употреблять глагол **to manage** или оборот **to be able to**.

I *could* get him on the phone.

Я *мог* до него дозвониться.

I *managed to* get him on the phone.

Я *сумел (мне удалось)* до него дозвониться.

I *wasn't able to* start the car.

Мне *не удалось* завести машину.

Закончите ситуации при помощи глагола *can* в правильной форме.  
Используйте словосочетания в таблице.

66.1

★ *Can you show me the way?* I'm a stranger here.

- ..... you ..... ? I'm cold.
- You ..... here. Look for another place to park your car.
- I ..... when I was three. My father taught me.
- She ..... . She is afraid of water.
- I ..... yesterday. I didn't remember his number.
- We ..... him. He is a liar.
- She ..... . She was in a hurry.
- ..... you ..... him? I think he is speaking English.

*park your car*  
***show me the way***  
*ride a bicycle*  
*understand*  
*trust*  
*wait for us*  
*close the window*  
*swim*  
*phone*

Заполните пропуски при помощи *can, could, to be able to*.

66.2

- I ..... drive now but next year I ..... drive.
- Last year he ..... speak English as well as he ..... speak this year.
- I've never ..... remember his name.
- I ..... cook a month ago but I'm taking a course and next month I .....to cook.
- She might ..... baby-sit but I'm not sure of that.
- ..... I help you? Do you need help?
- .....you do the shopping in the evening? The fridge is empty.
- ..... skate when you were six?

Переведите, употребляя глаголы *can* или *manage*.

66.3

- Я не сумел сдать экзамен, так как был не очень готов.
- Дети не могли разбить вазу. Их не было дома.
- Я не могла с ней спорить.
- Я старалась с ней не спорить, но не смогла.
- Ты мог сделать это без моей помощи?
- Как ты смог сделать это без моей помощи?
- Дети не смогли повторить слово, так как оно было трудным.
- Я мог повторить все еще раз, но не захотел.

Переведите.

66.4

- Могу я задать вам вопрос?
- Я не смогу прийти вовремя.
- Тед не смог прочесть слово.
- Я не мог этому поверить.
- Ребенок должен уметь есть сам.
- Она не может хорошо работать в последнее время.
- Я смогу купить что-нибудь на ужин.
- Она не умеет ездить верхом.
- Кто сможет ответить на вопрос?
- Я никогда не могла с ним спорить.
- Как давно вы умеете плавать?
- Как вам удалось починить радио?



## Составьте вопросительные предложения, используя слова в скобках.

67.1

★ He is unpunctual. (*he, to come in time*) ⇒ **Can he have come in time?**

1. She is lazy. (*she, to do the work, yet*) .....
2. He is very polite (*he, say it, yesterday*) .....
3. It's early. (*they, to be at home*) .....
4. The book is not interesting. (*you, read it, yet*) .....
5. They don't know the city well. (*they, to live here, long*) .....
6. The story is so long. (*she, to type it, yet*) .....
7. It's early. (*he, to sleep, now*) .....
8. I didn't tell him about it. (*he, to know it*) .....
9. (*he, to watch TV, all this time*)? It's bad for his eyes.....
10. It's raining. (*he, to walk, now*) .....
11. He has a good memory. (*he, not to learn the poem*) .....
12. She has always been very kind-hearted. (*she, not to give you a present for your birthday*) .....

## Составьте отрицательные предложения, используя слова в скобках.

67.2

★ He doesn't know French. (*he, translate the text*) ⇒ **He can't have translated the text.**

1. They didn't earn much money last year. (*they, to buy this house*) .....
2. He is your friend. (*he, to fail you, last week*) .....
3. He is lazy. (*he, to be a good student*) .....
4. She is airsick. (*she, to go by plane, last year*) .....
5. He is an honest boy. (*he, to tell a lie, now*) .....
6. The ground is dry. (*it, to rain, half an hour ago*) .....
7. It's snowing. (*they, to play football, now*) .....
8. She doesn't look tired. (*she, to work, the whole day*) .....
9. The water is cold. (*they, to swim, all this time*) .....
10. I saw him leaving. (*he, to wash his car*) .....
11. The doctor forbade him to smoke. (*he, not to give up smoking*) .....
12. She is very clever. (*she, not to understand you*) .....

## Переведите.

67.3

1. Неужели он говорит по телефону?
2. Не может быть, чтобы она вчера не пришла.
3. Ребенок не может быть голоден.
4. Неужели она уже три часа готовит обед?
5. Неужели он не сказал вам об этом?
6. Не может быть, чтобы Свифты не прислали письмо.
7. Неужели он с утра играет на пианино?
8. Не может быть, чтобы они с утра решали этот вопрос.
9. Неужели они все еще сдают экзамены?
10. Неужели Стив с утра катается на велосипеде?
11. Не может быть, чтобы Каролина проиграла матч.
12. Не может быть, чтобы он вам не помог.
13. Неужели Шарон все еще моет окна?
14. Не может быть, чтобы мистер Кларк пропустил заседание.
15. Не может быть, чтобы Дон и Кейт не поженились.



1. Модальный глагол **must** (+ инфинитив без **to**) имеет только одну форму, которая употребляется только *в настоящем времени* и не изменяется в косвенной речи.

You *must* come at once.

Ты *должен* немедленно прийти.

He said that I *must* come at once.

Он сказал, что я *должен* немедленно прийти.

- Если действие относится к прошлому или будущему, то долженствование передается глаголом **to have to**.

I *had to* do it at once.

Я *должен был* (мне пришлось) сделать это немедленно.

I *ll have to* do it at once.

Я *буду должен* (мне придется) сделать это немедленно.

- **Must** может выражать

- \* обязанность, долг (с точки зрения говорящего)

I *must* tell you about it.

Я *должен* вам об этом рассказать.

*Must* I do it alone?

Я *должен* делать это один?

- \* личностный категорический запрет

You *mustn't* stop to speak with strangers.

Ты *не должна* останавливаться и разговаривать с незнакомыми людьми.

- \* настойчивый совет

You *must* read the book.

Ты *должен* прочитать книгу.

You *mustn't* phone him.

Ты *не должен* ему звонить. / *Не надо* ему звонить.

2. В своем модальном значении глагол **to have to** употребляется во всех видо-временных формах и выражает *обязанность или необходимость, обусловленную обстоятельствами*.

I *ll have to* stay at home tomorrow.

Мне *придется* остаться завтра дома.

I *had to* stay at home yesterday.

Мне *пришлось* вчера остаться дома.

I *have to* stay at home every evening.

Мне *приходится* сидеть дома каждый вечер.

I *ve had to* stay at home the whole week.

Мне всю неделю *пришлось* сидеть дома.

- Вопросительная и отрицательная формы глагола **to have to** образуются с помощью вспомогательного глагола *to do*.

I *don't have to* go to work today.

Сегодня мне *не надо* идти на работу.

*Did you have to* stay at home yesterday?

Вчера тебе *пришлось* сидеть дома?

3. У модального глагола *must* есть также эквивалент **to be to**, который употребляется в двух формах — Present и Past Indefinite, и может выражать:

- предварительную договоренность или обязанность

We *were to* meet at five.

Мы *должны были* встретиться в пять.

Who *is to* come?

Кто *должен* прийти?

- указания и распоряжения

The medicine *is to be* taken after meals.

Лекарство *нужно* принимать после еды.

Children *are not to* leave the school without their teacher's permission.

Детям *не позволено* покидать школу без разрешения учителя.

Употребите глагол *must* или *have to* в правильной форме.

68.1

1. He says I ..... tell him the truth.
2. He ..... to drive last year.
3. He said I ..... win the game.
4. I ..... look for another job next month.
5. I ..... wake up early yesterday.
6. .... I type this article now?
7. I was late because I ..... type an article.
8. I'll prove it and you ..... admit I'm right.
9. The house was too small for them and they .....look for another house last year.
10. I ..... leave in an hour.

Заполните пропуски глаголами *must, have to, be to* в правильной форме.

68.2

1. As we had agreed I ..... meet him at 7.
2. I know I ..... do the work myself. It's my duty.
3. Susan says I ..... drive her to the station. She thinks it's my duty.
4. The baby -sitter was ill and Ellen ..... look after the child herself.
5. "You ..... look after the children properly, feed them and take them for a walk," Mrs. Swift said to the baby-sitter.
6. The guide ..... meet the group and take them to the hotel yesterday.
7. The children didn't understand the rule and the teacher ..... explain it again.
8. "You ..... cross the road alone," the mother said to the child.
9. I ..... take the umbrella because the forecast was bad.
10. The bell had gone and I ..... answer the question.
11. I didn't know I ..... to work extra hours. We hadn't agreed on that.
12. "When ..... (I) return the book?" Steve asked the librarian.
13. I ..... interrupt the speaker because I didn't get the point.
14. You ..... shout at children.
15. I ..... sell the car one of these days. It keeps breaking down.

Переведите.

68.3

1. Он должен прийти через десять минут.
2. Я думаю, ты должна сделать всю работу сама.
3. Мне придется снова с ним встречаться.
4. Она настаивала, и мне пришлось согласиться.
5. Как мы договорились, он должен был зайти за мной вечером. (*to call for me*)
6. Ты не должен обращать внимания на его замечания. Он невоспитанный человек.
7. Он выглядел несчастным, и Деборе пришлось его простить.
8. Что я должен делать, когда приедут гости?
9. Он позвонил нам, и нам пришлось его пригласить.
10. Это прекрасный рассказ. Вы должны его напечатать.
11. Сейчас он должен быть в Калифорнии, а через день — в Колорадо.
12. Ты не должен смеяться над тем, что он говорит. Это разумно.
13. «Куда поставить чемодан?» — спросил таксист мисс Кейн.
14. Тебе придется ехать туда снова?
15. Ты не должен стирать этот свитер в горячей воде.

**1.** Модальный глагол **must** может выражать *предположение, в котором говорящий практически уверен*. В этом значении **must** употребляется только в *утвердительных предложениях*. Инфинитив смыслового глагола употребляется так же, как с глаголом **can** (см. *Unit 67*).

- **must do**

He *must* get up very early.

*Должно быть, он рано встает.*

He *must* know about it.

*Должно быть, он знает об этом.*

- **must be doing**

He *must be* reading.

*По-видимому, он читает.*

- **must have done**

He *must have* already come.

*Вероятно, он уже пришел.*

- **must have been doing**

He *must have been* waiting for already an hour.

*Он ждет уже, должно быть, час.*

**2.** Предложения типа

*Он, должно быть, не пришел.*

*Он, вероятно, нечестный человек.*

*Дон, должно быть, опять не понял свою жену.*

— можно перевести следующим образом:

He *must have failed* to come.

He *must be* a **dishonest** person.

Don *must have misunderstood* his wife again.



Не путайте предложения типа *Он должен был ...* с предложениями типа *Он, должно быть, ...*

He *had to* do it himself.

*Ему пришлось это сделать самому.*

He *must have* done it himself.

*Он, должно быть, сделал это сам.*

— Caroline is so happy. John *must have* proposed to her.

— Oh, I'm sure he *had to* propose to her. She wanted to marry him so much.

**3.** Для выражения предположения, относящегося к будущему, употребляется **to be (un)likely to**.

He *is likely* to pass his exam.

*Должно быть / Наверное, он сдаст экзамен.*

He *is unlikely* to come.

*Вряд ли он придет.*

## Закончите ситуации, используя слова в скобках.

69.1

- ★ He looks so upset. (*he, to fail his exam again*) ⇒ **He must have failed his exam again.**
- The manager let Susan go yesterday. (*she, to look ill*) .....
  - Robert is sleeping. (*he, to be tired*) .....
  - Why isn't Jill at home? What has she been doing? (*she, to ride a bicycle, two hours*) .....
  - You can't use the telephone now. (*Barbara, to talk on the phone*) .....
  - Professor Dane seems to know everything about malaria. (*he, to study malaria, ten years*) .....
  - John is afraid to go to school. (*he, not to do his homework, yesterday*) .....
  - The children are in the sitting-room. (*they, to watch TV*) .....
  - My sister and her friend are getting married. (*they, to be in love*) .....
  - What is Mother doing in the kitchen? (*she, to make dinner*) .....
  - Is Mrs. Bone still in the garden? — Yes. (*she, to work in the garden, since morning*) .....

## Переведите.

69.2

- 1** -----
- Нам пришлось взять такси.
  - По-видимому, он взял такси.
  - Вероятно, он сказал им правду.
  - Ему пришлось сказать им правду.
  - Ему пришлось продать машину.
  - Должно быть, он продал машину.
  - Наверное, он не придет на вечер.
  - Не похоже, чтобы они выиграли завтра.
  - Должно быть, он тебе напишет.
  - По-видимому, погода изменится.
  - Похоже, что они поедут в отпуск на днях.
  - Должно быть, она не пригласит Стива.
- 2** -----
- Он, вероятно, никогда здесь раньше не был.
  - Должно быть, она попросила его о помощи.
  - Мы ждем автобуса, должно быть, уже полчаса.
  - Скорее всего, они не будут покупать такой дорогой дом.
  - Похоже, что ты очень ленив.
  - По-видимому, он не купил для нее подарок.
  - Они поссорились. Должно быть, она где-нибудь плачет.
  - Вероятно, он опоздал на поезд.
  - Должно быть, он не посмотрел этот фильм.
  - Дети, вероятно, сейчас обедают.
  - Мне пришлось говорить речь.
  - Похоже, они поедут в Африку.
  - Они ссорятся, должно быть, уже час.
  - Вероятно, ей не удалось приготовить хороший обед.
  - Стив, должно быть, пишет упражнения.

1. Модальный глагол **may** и его форма прошедшего времени **might** соответствуют русскому *можно, можешь, ...* и выражают:

- возможность, создаваемую обстоятельствами

You *may* get there by bus.

Ты *можешь* добраться туда на автобусе.

Here you *may* buy the book at a low price.

Здесь ты *можешь* купить эту книгу по низкой цене.

В этом значении **may** употребляется только в утвердительных предложениях.

- разрешение и запрещение

You *may* come in.

Вы можете войти.

May I ask you a question?

Могу я задать вам вопрос?

May I wait here? — Yes, you *may*.

Могу я подождать здесь? — Да, можете.

You *may* not smoke here.

Здесь нельзя курить.



Следует помнить, что форма **may not** является официальной, поэтому для выражения *запрещения* лучше выбирать форму **can't**.

May I smoke here? — No, you *can't*.

2. Форма **might**:

- является *формой прошедшего времени* и употребляется при переходе из прямой речи в косвенную —

He said I *might* get there by bus.

- делает просьбу более вежливой —

*Might* I come in?

- может выражать *упрек* или *неодобрение* —

You *might* write him a letter.

*Мог бы* написать ему письмо.

You *might* have written him a letter long ago.

*Мог бы* давно написать ему письмо.

You *might* have packed the suitcase yesterday. Now we are likely to miss the train.

*Мог бы* упаковать чемодан вчера. Теперь мы скорее всего опоздаем на поезд.

**Составьте вопрос-просьбу.****70.1**

★ Mrs. Snow feels bad. She wants her boss to let her leave her office earlier.  
What does she say? ⇒ *May I leave earlier?*

1. Ted is tired and needs a day off. What does he say? .....
2. Mr. Newton is nervous and wants to speak to the pilot. He asks the stewardess: .....
3. You want to use the telephone but the line is busy. Mary has been talking for forty minutes. What do you say? .....
4. Your car has broken down and you must meet a friend at the airport. Ask your neighbour to let you have his car. ....
5. You don't like your room at the hotel. You want to have another room. What do you say? .....

**Восстановите предупреждающие надписи.****70.2**

★ Children under 16 ... to see the film. ⇒ *Children under 16 may not see the film.*

1. You ... to take dogs to the restaurant. ....
2. Children under 7 ... to enter unless they are with an adult. ....
3. Alcoholic drinks ... to be sold to people under 18. ....
4. Students ... to smoke in the classrooms. ....
5. You ... to enter wearing a hat. ....

**Отреагируйте, выразив упрек.****70.3**

★ Pete is not ready. ⇒ *He might be ready*

★ I haven't cleaned the windows. ⇒ *You might have cleaned the windows.*

1. Catherine didn't buy anything for supper. ....
2. Trevor isn't very polite. ....
3. The workers haven't painted the fence yet. ....
4. Steve didn't help them. ....
5. Roberta isn't in time again. ....

**Переведите.****70.4**

1. Можно задать вам вопрос?
2. Если у тебя отпуск, ты можешь поехать в Австралию.
3. Мог бы купить цветы вчера.
4. Могла бы вставить пораньше.
5. Можете оставить багаж здесь.
6. Здесь нельзя громко разговаривать.
7. Могу я подождать Ника в офисе?
8. Можете держать книгу до вторника.
9. Мог бы предупредить меня заранее.
10. Могла бы делать это немного быстрее.
11. Когда приедете в Лондон, можете остановиться у нас.
12. Мог бы предложить нам войти.

**1.** Модальный глагол **may (might)** может выражать *предположение, основанное на неуверенности*. В этом значении **may** встречается в утвердительных и отрицательных предложениях. Инфинитив смыслового глагола употребляется так же, как с глаголом **can** (см. *Unit 67*).

• **may (not) + do**

He may be at home.

Возможно, он дома.

He may not know about it.

Он может об этом не знать.

What do you think his girlfriend looks like?

She may be pretty.

She may be tall.

She may have long hair.

• **may (not) + be doing**

He *may be reading*.

Возможно, он читает.

He *may not be writing* a letter.

Может быть, он не пишет письмо.

What may Pamela be doing now?

She may be walking in the park.

She may be visiting her friends.

• **may (not) + have done**

He *may have come*.

Наверное, он пришел.

He *may not have done* it.

Может быть, он этого не делал.

How could he react

He may have shouted.

He may have laughed.

• **may (not) + have been doing**

He *may have been waiting* for us all this time.

Может, он ждет нас все это время.

He *may not have been doing* anything all this time.

Может, он ничего с утра не делает.

What has he been doing today.

He *may have been reading*.

He *may have been visiting* friends?

**2.** Употребление формы **might** выражает еще меньшую степень уверенности.

He *might be reading*.

Возможно, он читает.

(Но я совсем в этом не уверен).



В вопросительных предложениях типа «Может быть, он спит?» следует употреблять модальный глагол **can**.

Can he be sleeping now?

Может быть, он сейчас спит?

Can he be working now?

Может быть, он сейчас работает?

## Выразите предположение, используя слова в скобках.

71.1

- ★ She didn't come. (*she, to forget, the meeting*) ⇒ **She may have forgotten about the meeting.**
1. Why is she so unhappy? (*she, to quarrel with her boyfriend*) .....
  2. Let's not call on Mark. (*he, to be busy*) .....
  3. Why didn't you tell Steve you were not coming? (*he, to wait for you, all this time*) .....
  4. Why hasn't Kate arrived yet? (*she, to miss the train*) .....
  5. I haven't seen Derrick for a long time. (*he, to stay with his friends all this time*) .....
  6. Why is the child hungry? (*he, not to have dinner*) .....
  7. I wish I had gone to the party. (*they, to dance now*) .....
  8. What are they doing here? (*Tom, to invite them*) .....
  9. Where is he? (*he, to have a rest*) .....
  10. I've been trying to get Ellen on the phone since morning. (*she, to work in the library, since morning*) .....

Переделайте предложения, употребляя *can* или *may*.

71.2

- ★ Perhaps he is joking. ⇒ **He may be joking.**
- ★ Is it possible that he is angry? ⇒ **Can he be angry?**
1. Perhaps she is angry. ....
  2. Is it possible that he is washing his car? .....
  3. Is it possible that he has returned? .....
  4. Perhaps he is playing tennis. ....
  5. Perhaps he has been working in the garden all this time. ....
  6. Is it possible that she has been wearing these shoes for five years? .....
  7. Perhaps he has misunderstood you. ....
  8. Is it possible that he has lost his job? .....
  9. Is it possible that she is badly ill? .....
  10. Perhaps they have been discussing the plan since morning. ....

## Переведите.

71.3

1. Возможно, он уже купил новые часы.
2. Может быть, она делает покупки все это время.
3. Наверное, она нашла новую работу.
4. Возможно ли, чтобы они переехали?
5. Возможно, дети купаются.
6. Может быть, он потерял бумажник.
7. Возможно, она не хочет вас видеть.
8. Наверное, он не знает, куда идти.
9. Могло ли что-нибудь случиться?
10. Возможно, учитель сейчас проверяет работы.
11. Возможно, он не объяснил ей, что делать.
12. Возможно ли, чтобы он не объяснил ей, что делать?



- 1.** Модальный глагол **need** может употребляться как модальный и как смысловой. Как модальный глагол, **need** имеет только одну форму, которая не изменяется в косвенной речи. Он встречается в отрицательных и иногда в вопросительных предложениях и переводится как *надо / не надо*.

You *needn't* go there.

Тебе *не* нужно туда идти. (незачем)

**Need** I go there?

Мне *нужно* туда идти? (Зачем мне туда идти?)

Shall I speak louder? — No, you *needn't*.

Мне говорить громче? — Нет, *не* нужно. Я вас хорошо слышу.

I can hear you well.

Must I tell him about it? — No, you *needn't*.

Я должен сказать ему об этом? — *Не* нужно.

Your train leaves in two hours. You *needn't* hurry.

Shall I make a copy? — No, you *needn't*. We have enough copies.

- 2.** Глагол **need** может сочетаться с перфектным инфинитивом смыслового глагола. В этом случае он показывает, что действие было совершено напрасно.

You *needn't have gone* there.

Тебе *не* нужно (не к чему) *было* ходить туда.



Обратите внимание на разницу между *needn't have done* и *didn't have to do*.

You *needn't have come*.

Вам *не надо* было *приходить*.  
(Но человек пришел.)

We could sent you the answer by post.

I *didn't have to come* as they sent me the answer by post.

Мне *не надо* было *приходить*...  
(и я не пошел).

- 3.** Если действие относится к будущему, то, как правило, употребляется *will have to*.

I'll *have to* meet him.

Мне *нужно* *будет* его встретить.

- 4.** Смысловый глагол **need** всегда сочетается с существительными. Для построения отрицательной и вопросительной форм требуется вспомогательный глагол **to do**.

I *don't need* this pen now. You may take it.

*Did* you *need* any help?

Закончите ситуации по образцу. Используйте слова из таблицы.

72.1

a)

★ The fridge is full. ⇒ *You needn't buy any food.*

1. I'm all right. You .....
2. I understand everything. You ..... anything.
3. I've put the address down. You ..... it.
4. The child is well. He .....
5. The car is clean. You ..... it.

<i>repeat</i>
<i>wash</i>
<i>take pills</i>
<b><i>buy</i></b>
<i>remember</i>
<i>worry</i>

b)

★ What is he doing here? ⇒ *He needn't have come.*

1. I only asked you to read the text. You ..... it.
2. I could drive you to the station. You ..... by taxi.
3. You could stay with us. You ..... a room at this hotel.
4. I've made a cake. You ..... one.
5. I spoke with him yesterday. You ..... him.

<b><i>come</i></b>
<i>book</i>
<i>phone</i>
<i>translate</i>
<i>go</i>
<i>buy</i>

Переведите.

72.2

1. Тебе не нужно просить его о помощи. Я тебе помогу.
2. Ей не нужно оплачивать счет. Ее муж его оплатил.
3. Погода прекрасная. Тебе не нужно было брать зонт.
4. Мне не надо было встречаться с ним, так как Анна согласилась сделать это за меня.
5. Ребенку не нужно надевать шапку. Тепло.
6. Мне нужно встать завтра рано. Мне нужно встретиться с ним в 7.
7. Тебе не нужно было покупать велосипед. Я мог отдать тебе свой.
8. Мне не надо было ему ничего объяснять, он сам все знал.
9. Тебе не нужно было искать такси. Я же вызвала такси.
10. Мне нужно будет отвезти туристов в гостиницу.
11. Дэвид сказал, что мне не надо было приносить эти книги. Они у него есть.
12. Тебе не нужно идти в магазин. Я все купил.
13. Нам писать упражнения? — Нет. Выучите слова.
14. Ей нужно будет подождать.
15. Запереть дверь? — Нет. Скоро придет отец.
16. Вам не надо было брать с собой так много теплой одежды. Здесь тепло в октябре.
17. Мне не надо было брать с собой много теплой одежды, потому что я знал, что там тепло в октябре.

1. Модальный глагол **should** может выражать *долженствование, совет* или *рекомендацию*. **Should** употребляется в утвердительных, вопросительных и отрицательных предложениях.

- Если действие относится к настоящему или будущему времени, то употребляется форма **should do**.

You *should speak* to him.

Тебе *следует* с ним поговорить.

Should I *speak* to him?

Мне *надо* с ним поговорить?

(Я должен? Мне следует?)

You *shouldn't go* there alone.

Тебе *не следует* идти туда одному.

You *should always remember* my words.

You *shouldn't forget* what I've just said. Then you won't be in trouble again.

- Если действие относится к прошлому, то употребляется форма **should have done**. В утвердительных предложениях эта форма означает, что действие не произошло, хотя было желательно.

You *should have told* me about it. Why didn't you?

Тебе *следовало* рассказать мне

об этом. (Ты должен был. Надо было.)

You *should have put* on something warm.

- В отрицательных предложениях эта форма означает, что действие произошло, хотя было нежелательно.

You *shouldn't have told* him about it.

*Не надо было* ему об этом говорить.

(*Не следовало. Ты не должен был.*)

➤◀ You *shouldn't have run* so much.

Не надо было так много бегать.

(упрек)

|| You *needn't have run*. You've still got plenty of time.

|| Не надо было бежать. У тебя еще полно времени.

- В вопросительных предложениях эта форма показывает, что говорящий не уверен, правильно ли он поступил.

Should I *have told* him about it?

Мне *надо было* ему об этом рассказать?

Should I *have warned* you about my arrival?

Закончите ситуации при помощи *should, shouldn't* и глаголов из таблицы.

73.1

★ You see Jack is busy. ⇒ You *shouldn't disturb* him.

1. The old man is afraid to cross the street. You ..... him.
2. You don't know the rules well. You ..... everything.
3. He is a liar. You ..... him.
4. His lectures are interesting. You ..... them.
5. The house looks ugly. You ..... it.
6. Nobody wants you here. You ..... here.
7. The girl is too young. She ..... make-up.
8. He has apologized. You ..... him.

revise  
forgive  
**disturb**  
believe  
use  
pain  
return  
miss  
help

Закончите ситуации при помощи *should have, shouldn't have* и глаголов из таблицы.

73.2

★ You look awful. ⇒ You *should have gone to bed earlier*.

1. We can't take photos. We ..... a camera.
2. The letter is for me. You ..... it.
3. You look tired. You ..... on holiday.
4. He is a foolish man. You ..... to him.
5. They are in love. They ..... long ago.
6. I have a stomach ache. I ..... so much.
7. The shop is already closed. We ..... earlier.
8. If you felt bad you ..... a doctor.

to take  
**to go to bed**  
to go  
to see  
to get married  
to listen  
to eat  
to come  
to read

Переведите.

73.3

1. Тебе не стоило покупать эти туфли.
2. Тебе надо было его подождать.
3. Нам следует быть к нему более внимательными.
4. Вам не следовало опаздывать.
5. Тебе не стоит просить у них денег.
6. Ты не должен был уезжать так рано.
7. Нам надо было выбрать другой подарок.
8. Мне не надо было идти на собрание, так как его отменили. (*to cancel*)
9. Вам не надо было приходить. Собрание отменили.
10. Вам не стоило приходить. Никто вас не ждал.
11. Не надо было заставлять их ждать. (*to keep somebody waiting*)
12. Надо было все ему объяснить.
13. Не надо с ним спорить
14. Тебе следует больше работать.
15. Не стоит над ним смеяться.

Зачеркните неправильный вариант.

**74.1**

- 1** -----
1. As we had agreed I *was to / had to* speak to him myself.
  2. He turned up and I *was to / had to* introduce him to the other guests.
  3. I'm giving a party. You *must / are to* come.
  4. Are you strong enough? Will you *have to / be able to* cross the river.
  5. It's urgent. You *will have to / be able to* do it as soon as possible.
  6. You *are not to / mustn't* sleep at lectures. It's impolite.
  7. I live in the suburbs. I *must / have to* take a train every day.
  8. You *may / can* stay here as long as you can. I don't mind.
  9. Even if you want to see him you *shouldn't / needn't* call on him now.
  10. It's not your fault. You *shouldn't / needn't* apologise.
  11. I tried to open the box but I *couldn't / didn't manage to*.
  12. I *could / managed to* learn it but I didn't have enough time.
  13. You *shouldn't / needn't* add any more salt. It's bad for you.
  14. You *shouldn't / needn't* add sugar to the tea. It's sweet.
  15. You *shouldn't / don't have to* drink so much beer. You will put on weight.
  16. You *don't have / needn't* bother. Everything is ready.
  17. You *may not / shouldn't* enter after the bell goes.
  18. Shall I get in touch with them? — No, you *needn't / shouldn't*.
  19. Etiquette said that they all *had to / were to* shake hands.
  20. Roger came in and Mr. Smith *had to / was to* rise to shake hands.
- 2** -----
1. Alice can't ride well. She *must have had / could have had* little practice.
  2. Carrie expects them today. They *mustn't have gone / can't have gone* to a show.
  3. *Can they have forgotten / may they have forgotten* about the party?
  4. I don't know where they are. They *can be / may be* on holiday in Switzerland. They *can be skiing / may be skiing* there.
  5. It's so hot. The ice-cream *should have melted / must have melted*.
  6. You are so slow. You *may have decide / might have decided* what to do.
  7. He *can't be staying / mustn't be staying* at this hotel.
  8. *May he be studying / Can he be studying* Geography? He doesn't seem to be interested in it.
  9. That's a terrible colour. You *must have painted / should have painted* it green.
  10. I could do it. You *needn't have bothered / mustn't have bothered*.
  11. They *should have got acquainted / may have got acquainted* when Alice was on holiday.
  12. They are great friends. They *can't have quarreled / may have quarrelled*.
  13. It's 8 o'clock. He *must have arrived / had to arrive* at the airport.
  14. He looks unhappy. He *must have got hurt / should have got hurt*.
  15. He was rude and I *should have made / had to make* him leave. — You were right.
  16. Everybody will come at 7. You *needn't have come / didn't have to come* so early.
  17. I *needn't have made / didn't have to make* a speech. Liz did it.
  18. I need him now. He *shouldn't have left / mustn't have left* so early.
  19. He never leaves before five. He *shouldn't have left / can't have left*.
  20. You are too hot-tempered. You *needn't have quarrelled / shouldn't have quarrelled* with him.

## Переведите.

74.2

**1**

1. Думаю, мне надо лечь спать рано.
2. Париж — прекрасный город. Ты должен его посмотреть.
3. Ты должен поливать цветы два раза в неделю.
4. Тебе не следует быть таким болтливым.
5. Должно быть, вы большой романтик.
6. Не может быть, чтобы он говорил это серьезно.
7. Тебе следовало быть более дружелюбным.
8. Неужели у него много друзей?
9. Возможно, она безработная.
10. Мог бы получше с ним ладить.

**2**

1. Мог бы прийти домой раньше.
2. Возможно, они в отпуске.
3. Неужели они влюблены все это время?
4. Он, должно быть, уже полчаса принимает душ.
5. Возможно, там с утра идет дождь.
6. Не может быть, чтобы он так сильно изменился.
7. Неужели он все это время ищет работу?
8. Не может быть, чтобы он катался сейчас на лыжах.
9. Должно быть, ты шутишь.
10. Возможно, она принимает ванну.

**3**

1. Неужели он все это время играет в футбол?
2. Вам придется ехать на автобусе.
3. Мне приходится носить очки.
4. Могу я представить вам свою жену?
5. Могу я вам помочь?
6. К вечеру вы должны перевести 20 страниц.
7. Вы не должны подчиняться полицейскому.
8. Ему предстояло играть против Свифта.
9. Мне не нужно брать много багажа.
10. Он, должно быть, работает на ферме с детства.

**4**

1. Должно быть, он ее не предупредил.
2. Он не сможет влезть на это дерево.
3. Вам придется принести лестницу.
4. Тебе следует забыть об этом.
5. Вы не можете оставить его сейчас.
6. Без стука не входить.

7. Они не могли не предупредить его.
8. Боюсь, я не смогу вам помочь.
9. Можно, я использую эту коробку?
10. Вас подвезти? — Нет, не нужно.

**5** -----

1. Мне бы хотелось уметь говорить так же хорошо, как ты.
2. Помогите мне, пожалуйста.
3. Возможно, он пытался с вами связаться, но не смог.
4. Должно быть, его задела ваши слова.
5. Он, должно быть, все это время делал все возможное, чтобы добиться успеха.
6. Вряд ли вы поговорите с ним в ближайшее время.
7. Не может быть, чтобы он не пришел на конференцию.
8. Неужели он участвовал в этом ограблении?
9. Может быть, он играет в компьютерные игры.
10. Не может быть, чтобы они говорили все это время.

# **VERBALS**

**НЕЛИЧНЫЕ ФОРМЫ ГЛАГОЛА**



**1. Формы герундия**

Герундий является неличной формой глагола, которая обладает свойствами существительного и глагола.

<b>Active</b>	<i>doing</i>	<i>having done</i>
<b>Passive</b>	<i>being done</i>	<i>having been done</i>
	<b>Indefinite</b> (выражает действие, происходящее одновременно с действием глагола-сказуемого)  She likes interviewing people. She likes being interviewed.	<b>Perfect</b> (выражает действие, которое произошло раньше действия глагола-сказуемого)  He regretted having told them the truth. He regretted having been told the truth.

**2. Функции герундия в предложении:**

- подлежащее  
*Reading is useful.* Чтение полезно. / Читать полезно.
- дополнение  
I like *singing*. Я люблю пение. / Я люблю петь.
- обстоятельство  
On *arriving* in London he went to the hotel. Приехав в Лондон, он отправился в гостиницу. / Когда он *приехал* в Лондон, он отправился в гостиницу.
- определение  
I had the pleasure of *reading* the book by this author. Я с удовольствием *прочел* книгу этого автора.
- часть сказуемого  
His hobby is *reading* adventure books. Его хобби — *чтение* приключенческих романов.

**2. После глаголов forget, remember, deny, excuse, thank, regret для выражения прошлого часто употребляется Indefinite Gerund:**

They *regret going* to the party.

- После глаголов **need, want, require, deserve** и притяжательного **worth** употребляется Active Gerund, хотя значение пассивное.  
*My shoes need repairing.*

**3. Употребление притяжательных местоимений с формами герундия для указания на субъект действия**

I don't mind *opening* the window.

Я не возражаю против того, чтобы *открыть* окно.

I don't mind *his (him) opening* the window

Я не возражаю против того, чтобы *он открыл* окно.

Why do you insist on *leaving*?

Почему вы настаиваете на *отъезде*?

Why do you insist on *her leaving*?

Почему вы настаиваете на *ее отъезде*?

## 1. Употребите герундий в функции подлежащего.

75.1

★ It's very convenient to go there by car. ⇒ *Going there by car is very convenient.*

1. It's so uncomfortable to sleep on the floor. ....
2. It's great to meet old friends. ....
3. It's impolite to speak in a loud voice. ....
4. It's always useful to think. ....
5. It's boring to clean the flat. ....
6. It's interesting to teach. ....
7. It's exciting to travel to other countries. ....
8. It's simple to give advice. ....
9. It's not always clever to take other people's advice. ....
10. It's inconvenient to have much luggage. ....
11. It wasn't easy to follow the man. ....
12. It made him nervous to speak before a large audience. ....

## Употребите герундий в форме страдательного залога.

75.2

★ I like visiting other people. ⇒ *I like being visited by other people.*★ I don't mind sending him there. ⇒ *I don't mind being sent there.*

1. I avoid visiting strangers. ....
2. I remember asking him for help. ....
3. He was tired of asking questions. ....
4. I'm looking forward to showing them the place. ....
5. The manager objects to doing this work now. ....
6. They insist on letting him in. ....
7. I avoid asking for help. ....
8. Do you mind telling us how to do it? ....
9. Why are you afraid of asking him questions? ....
10. Why do you object to showing them the letter? ....
11. I don't mind leaving him alone. ....
12. He objected to forcing me to do it. ....

## Постройте предложения по образцу, употребляя герундий.

75.3

★ I can phone him. I don't mind it. ⇒ *I don't mind phoning him.*★ You can phone him. I don't mind. ⇒ *I don't mind your phoning him.*

1. She can come later. We don't mind. ....
2. I will help him. I don't mind. ....
3. They can visit me. I don't mind. ....
4. You can turn on the volume. I don't mind. ....
5. Can I turn on the TV set? Do you mind? ....
6. Can you switch off the light? Do you mind? ....
7. Can she talk to him? Do you mind? ....
8. Can I tell them about the plan? Do you mind? ....
9. She can take the papers. I don't mind. ....
10. They can play together. I don't mind. ....

**1.** Герундий употребляется после следующих глаголов и выражений:

to mind doing	Do you mind opening the door?
to keep doing	She kept laughing.
to avoid doing	Avoid walking alone in the dark.
to deny doing	He denies robbing the bank.
to imagine doing	Just imagine spending a holiday there.
need doing	The floor needs washing.
can't help doing	I couldn't help laughing.
to be worth doing	The exhibition is worth visiting.
to feel / not to feel like doing	I don't feel like talking.
It's no use doing	It was no use speaking with him.
what's the use of?	What's the use of arguing?
to be used to doing	He is used to getting up late.
to be fond of	I'm fond of swimming.
to be tired of	I'm tired of waiting.
to be (in)capable of	He is capable of doing the work.
to be interested in	He is interested in talking to you.
there are a lot of ways of doing	There are a lot of ways of doing it.
his manner (way, habit) of doing	I hate his manner of speaking.

**2.** Герундий употребляется после следующих предлогов:

before	Please phone me <i>before coming</i> .
after	<i>After talking</i> to him let me know.
on	<i>On arriving</i> in the city he went to the hotel.
without	He sat down <i>without saying</i> anything.

**3.** Герундий употребляется после следующих глаголов с предлогами:

to go on	He went on speaking.
to dream of	I'm dreaming of spending a week at the sea.
to look forward to	I'm looking forward to seeing them.
to give up	She gave up smoking.
to object to	I object to your coming late.
to insist on	He insists on leaving.

**Перепишите предложения, используя данные глаголы и выражения.**

76.1

 ★ Don't drive in rainy weather. ⇒ *Avoid driving in rainy weather.*

1. I think it's great to swim in cold water. ....
2. It's useless to speak with him. ....
3. He always interrupts people. ....
4. He says he didn't see Jack on Friday. ....
5. I can't live without music. ....
6. He is still talking. ....
7. Just suppose that you live in a big house. ....
8. The man says he didn't steal anything. ....
9. She repeats the same thing all the time. ....
10. It's useless to phone him. ....
11. I always play tennis on Sunday with pleasure. ....
12. I try not to meet him. ....
13. You can learn a foreign language in different ways. ....
14. He always listens to loud music. ....

to avoid  
to be fond of  
it's no use  
to have a habit of  
to deny  
to imagine  
to keep  
to imagine  
to deny  
to keep  
It's no use  
to enjoy  
to avoid  
there are many ways of  
to be in the habit of

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя герундий с предлогом.**

76.2

 ★ He read the letter and hid it. ⇒ *On reading the letter he hid it.*

1. She said it and turned red. ....
2. First read the instruction and then open the box. ....
3. When I came to London I decided to call on my friend at once. ....
4. He took a decision and felt better. ....
5. He entered the room and greeted everybody. ....
6. First read the book then see the film. ....
7. He left the house and took a taxi. ....
8. He did his morning exercises and then took a shower. ....
9. He arrived at the airport and checked in. ....
10. He bought a ticket and got on the train. ....

on  
on  
before  
on  
after  
on  
before  
on  
after  
on  
on

**Постройте предложения при помощи *can't help doing*.**

76.3

 ★ The story was funny. He ..... ⇒ *He couldn't help laughing.*

1. She was so irritated that she .....
2. Jack's behaviour was so awful that I .....
3. He is my friend, so I .....
4. The man was so pleasant that she .....
5. The letter was so disrespectful that she .....
6. The dress was so nice that the girl .....
7. The bag is so cheap that I .....

to laugh  
to shout  
to be angry  
to tell him the truth  
to smile  
tear it  
to put it on at once  
to buy it

**Постройте предложения, употребляя *need doing*.**

76.4

 ★ The dishes are dirty. .... ⇒ *They need washing.*

1. The car has broken down. ....
2. The question is difficult. ....
3. The suit is dirty. ....
4. The clothes are wet. ....
5. The work is urgent. ....
6. The story has no end. ....

to wash  
to repair  
to discuss  
to dry-clean  
to dry  
to do  
to finish

**Постройте предложения, употребляя *worth doing*.**

**76.5**

★ the exhibition, to visit ⇒ *The exhibition is worth visiting.*

1. the book, to read .....
2. the film, to see .....
3. the question, to discuss .....
4. the subject, to study .....
5. the country, to visit .....

**Постройте предложения, употребляя *without doing*.**

**76.6**

★ You can't do this work and not get your clothes dirty. ⇒  
*You can't do this work without getting your clothes dirty.*

1. He didn't say anything when he was leaving. ....
2. She didn't greet anybody when she entered. ....
3. He didn't ask permission but just sat down. ....
4. When she was speaking she didn't even turn her head. ....
5. He listened carefully and didn't interrupt me. ....
6. The man sat down and didn't take off his hat. ....
7. It's difficult to sit for a long time if you can't move. ....
8. The child was playing with his toys and didn't pay attention to what was going on. ....

**Соедините предложения, употребив герундий.**

**76.7**

★ I want to get this information. I'm interested in it. ⇒ *I'm interested in getting this information.*

1. Steve has a dream. He wants to have a house in the country. ....
2. Let's phone him at once. I insist on it. ....
3. Why must we go there? What's the use of it? .....
4. I often eat at restaurants. I'm fond of it. ....
5. We'll meet him soon and we are looking forward to it. ....
6. Mark couldn't hurt the child. He is incapable of it. ....
7. I don't ride my bike in the park any more. I've given it up. ....
8. Let's go by plane. I don't object. ....
9. Susan can't stay here anymore. She is tired. ....
10. Barbara likes playing tennis. She is fond of it. ....

**Переделайте предложения, употребив *go on doing*.**

**76.8**

★ Let him read further. ⇒ *Let him go on reading.*

1. He greeted us and translated the text further. ....
2. Though a police car was following him he drove on. ....
3. Nobody was listening but he spoke and spoke. ....
4. I wouldn't like to argue any more. ....
5. Though he was tired and cold he swam and swam. ....

**Переделайте предложения, употребив *to be used to doing*.**

**76.9**

★ I always jog in the morning. ⇒ *I'm used to jogging in the morning.*

1. He always reads in bed. ....
2. They always eat late. ....
3. Jack always enters the room without knocking. ....
4. He always looks up all words in a dictionary. ....
5. Winifred always tells lies. ....

## Переведите.

76.10

**1** -----

1. Хорошо быть счастливым.
2. Я не против того, чтобы меня критиковали.
3. Он занят. Он разговаривает по телефону.
4. Она избегает встречаться со мной.
5. Ребенок с нетерпением ждет похода в зоопарк.
6. Почему вы настаиваете на том, чтобы она вернулась?
7. Он продолжил писать, не глядя на нас.
8. Мне нравится играть в теннис.
9. Эту информацию нужно проверить.
10. Есть разные способы, чтобы объяснить ему, что он не прав.

**2** -----

1. Мне не хочется выходить из дома.
2. Придя домой, он сразу позвонил родителям.
3. К сожалению, он не способен запомнить сразу столько слов.
4. Неужели она бросила танцевать?
5. Он взял эти бумаги, не спросив разрешения.
6. Поговорить с ним очень интересно.
7. Я возражаю против того, чтобы со мной так разговаривали.
8. Какой смысл обсуждать это сейчас?
9. Я с нетерпением жду, когда меня представят этому человеку.
10. Эту передачу стоит посмотреть.

**3** -----

1. Я не привык к тому, чтобы мне говорили, что делать.
2. Его манера есть раздражает всех.
3. Я не против того, чтобы он позвонил мне.
4. Я устал от того, что она всем недовольна.
5. Он отрицает, что ходил туда.
6. Он вышел из зала, не дожидаясь окончания спектакля.
7. Он достиг многого упорным трудом.
8. Я люблю слушать музыку.
9. Он бросил искать работу в этом городе.
10. Траву надо подстричь.

**4** -----

1. Вы заинтересованы в том, чтобы получить эту работу?
2. Прежде чем пользоваться этим феном, прочти инструкцию.
3. Грабители забрались в дом, разбив окно.
4. Я привык жить в большом городе.
5. Я боюсь, что она сделает это в любом случае.
6. Вы возражаете против того, чтобы мы присоединились к вам.
7. Она настояла на том, чтобы заплатить за покупки.
8. Тебе не хочется переехать в другое место?
9. Нет смысла волноваться сейчас.
10. Не стоит брать такси.

**1. Инфинитив** — неопределенная форма глагола, отвечающая на вопрос «Что делать?» или «Что сделать?»

- Формальным признаком инфинитива является частица **to**, которая в некоторых случаях не употребляется (после модальных глаголов, вспомогательных глаголов и др.):

He wants *to read* it. — He *can read*. — He *doesn't read* well.

	Active	Passive
<b>Indefinite</b>	<i>to do</i>	<i>to be done</i>
<b>Continuous</b>	<i>to be doing</i>	–
<b>Perfect</b>	<i>to have done</i>	<i>to have been done</i>
<b>Perfect Continuous</b>	<i>to have been doing</i>	–

- Временные формы инфинитива выражают действие, происходящее одновременно с действием глагола-сказуемого, либо предшествуют ему.

He wanted *to ask* somebody about it.      Он хотел спросить кого-нибудь об этом. (*одновременность*)

He wanted *to be asked* about it.      Он хотел, чтобы его спросили об этом. (*одновременность*)

He pretended *to be reading* a newspaper.      Он делал вид, что читает газету. (*продолжительность действия в настоящем*)

He pretended *to have been reading* a book for some time.      Он сделал вид, что некоторое время читал газету. (*продолжительность действия в прошлом*)

He is happy *to have been invited* to the party.      Он рад, что его пригласили на вечер. (*предшествование*)



Если глаголы **to make**, **to let** употреблены в действительном залоге, то за ними следует инфинитив без частицы **to**.

Если глаголы **to make** и **to let** употреблены в страдательном залоге, то за ними следует инфинитив с частицей **to**.

▶◀ They *made me say* it.      ||      I *was made to say* it.

- После выражений **I would rather**, **I/You had better** употребляется инфинитив без частицы **to**.

*I'd rather go* skating.

*You'd better do* it now.

- Запомните ряд глаголов, после которых употребляется инфинитив:

to promise	to force	to forbid	to learn	to fail	to seem
to agree	to offer	to teach	to order	to get	tend
to refuse	to decide	to arrange	to afford	to claim	pretend
to advise	to plan	to hope	to manage	to appear	etc.

He seems *to have plenty* of money.

They claim *to have solved* the problem.

Постройте предложения, употребляя необходимые формы инфинитива.

77.1

★ It seems to me he is reading. ⇨ *He seems to be reading now.*

- 1** -----
1. It seems she has completed the work. ....
  2. It appears that they know nothing. ....
  3. She claims that she saw him yesterday. ....
  4. The child pretends that he is sleeping. ....
  5. Jack pretends that he understood the task very well. ....
  6. It appears that he is very clever. ....
  7. He claims that he can speak English. ....
  8. It seems to me you have had your hair cut. ....
  9. She claims she has lost the papers. ....
  10. It seems to me that they are listening to music. ....

- 2** -----
1. He pretends that he is working hard. ....
  2. It seems to me that she is a good manager. ....
  3. It appeared it was a funny story. ....
  4. It seems to me he is telling the truth. ....
  5. She claims that she has sold it for fifty pounds. ....
  6. It seems to me that the letters have been signed. ....
  7. It appeared that everybody was ready. ....
  8. The boy pretended that he was crying. ....
  9. It seems to me that the book is translated into almost all languages. ....
  10. They claim that they don't understand anything. ....

Раскройте скобки, употребляя глаголы в форме инфинитива с частицей *to* или без нее.

77.2

- 1** -----
1. I can't afford ..... (*stay*) at such an expensive hotel.
  2. I think I'll manage ..... (*do*) the work tomorrow.
  3. You'd better ..... (*spend*) the evening at home.
  4. Who taught you ..... (*skate*)?
  5. I can't make the child ..... (*go*) to bed.
  6. They agreed ..... (*help*) us.
  7. I'd rather ..... (*go*) to the cinema.
  8. I was let ..... (*visit*) the sick man.
  9. Tell him ..... (*come*) at once.
  10. Let him ..... (*have a look*) at the photo.

- 2** -----
1. The doctor forbade him ..... (*smoke*).
  2. You'd better ..... (*help*) them now.
  3. Make him ..... (*clean*) the flat.
  4. He failed ..... (*get*) Sam on the phone.
  5. I can't let you ..... (*go*) there alone.
  6. The child was made ..... (*learn*) the poem.
  7. He refused ..... (*work*) with us.
  8. I advise you ..... (*visit*) this exhibition.
  9. Jack decided ..... (*not, answer*) the letter.
  10. The man was made ..... (*pay*) the fine.



1. Инфинитивные обороты часто употребляются вместо придаточных предложений с конструкциями

- **there is / there are**

There are a lot of books to read.  
There are a lot of books *for you* to read.  
There is a lot of place *for you* to walk.

- **... have ...**

He has a lot of books to read.  
He has a lot of books *for you* to read.  
We have some pictures *for you* to see.

- **this is / these are**

This is a good film to see.  
This is a good film *for you* to see.  
These are nice stories *for you* to read.

- |         |
|---------|
| ... too |
|---------|

 + 

adjective
-----------

 + 

infinitive
------------

He is too weak to walk.  
The book is too dull for me to read.



Обратите внимание на отсутствие **it** в конце предложения.

- |           |
|-----------|
| Adjective |
|-----------|

 + 

enough
--------

 + 

infinitive
------------

This subject is interesting enough to study.  
These books are easy enough for the child to read.



Обратите внимание на отсутствие **it** в конце предложения.

- |                                    |
|------------------------------------|
| ... the first ( second, last, ...) |
|------------------------------------|

 + 

infinitive
------------

He was the first to notice it.  
She was the last to come.

- **to have something done**

I want to have my hair cut.  
I must have my suit cleaned.



I must cut my hair.  
Мне нужно подстричься.  
(Я сделаю это сама.)



I must have my hair cut.  
Мне нужно подстричься.  
(Кто-то другой сделает это для меня.)

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя инфинитивные обороты.****78.1**★ I have a lot of work that I must do. ⇨ *I have a lot of work to do.*

1. There are a lot of things that you must wash. ....
2. This is an interesting film that any child can see. ....
3. This is an interesting subject that one can study. ....
4. They had a lot of things that they could discuss. ....
5. Judy learned about it last. ....
6. There are other facts that can prove this theory. ....
7. There is some news that you must know. ....
8. Frank told his father the pleasant news first. ....
9. He has a friend that he can ask for advice. ....
10. There are some papers that must be typed. ....
11. I have some money that can be invested. ....
12. This is the material that should be revised. ....
13. He got to the finishing line right after David. ....
14. These are the things he must repair. ....

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя конструкцию *too + adjective + infinitive*.****78.2**

1. The weather is so bad that we won't go to the country. ....
2. The article is so difficult that he can't translate it. ....
3. The day is so hot that it is impossible to stay in town. ....
4. The dress is so expensive that it can't be worn every day. ....
5. The mountain is so high that you won't be able to climb it. ....

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя конструкцию *adjective + enough + infinitive*.****78.3**

1. The rule was difficult. The child could hardly understand it.
2. The car is expensive. I can't buy it. ....
3. The house is small. Such a big family can't live in it. ....
4. The shoes are tight. The child can't wear them. ....
5. The passage is difficult. It can hardly be learned by heart. ....

**Переведите.****78.4**

1. Мне нужно починить часы.
2. Ей нужно почистить пальто.
3. Он прибыл первым.
4. Она сделала работу последней.
5. Она сшила себе новое платье.
6. Ему нужно перевести эту статью. Он не знает немецкий.
7. Это был третий вопрос, который мы должны были решить.
8. Мне нужно почистить ботинки.
9. Ты подстриглась?
10. Она почистила пиджак?
11. Когда Смиты отремонтировали дом?
12. Вам уже сшили новое платье?

После некоторых глаголов в английском языке может употребляться как инфинитив, так и герундий, причем значение высказываний будет разным.

- **stop doing**  
перестать что-либо делать  
  
He *stopped reading*.  
Он *перестал* читать.
- **like doing (= to enjoy)**  
делать что-то с удовольствием  
  
I *like swimming*.  
Я *люблю плавать*.
- **remember doing**  
прошрое действие  
I *remember speaking* to him.  
*Помнится*, я с ним разговаривал.
- **regret doing**  
сожалеть о сделанном  
I *regret telling* her the truth.  
Мне *жаль*, что я сказал ей правду.
- **allow doing**  
разрешено, позволено  
Do they *allow smoking* here?  
Здесь *разрешено курить*?
- **be busy doing**  
быть занятым чем-нибудь  
He *is busy reading*.  
Он *занят*, он *читает*.
- **try doing**  
способ совершения действия  
If you can't remember a word,  
*try writing it ten times*.  
Если не можете запомнить слово,  
*попробуйте написать его десять раз*.
- **be (to get) used to doing**  
привычка к чему-либо  
I'm *used to living* in a small flat.  
Я *привык жить* в маленькой квартире.
- **stop to do**  
прекратить какое-то действие  
для определенной цели  
He *stopped to read* an advertisement.  
Он *остановился*, чтобы прочитать  
объявление.
- **like to do (= to think it right)**  
делать что-то, так как это правильно  
I *like to come* in time.  
Я *люблю* (т. к. считаю правильным)  
*приходить* вовремя.
- **remember to do**  
настоящее или будущее действие  
*Remember to talk* to him.  
Не *забудь* с ним поговорить.
- **regret to do**  
сожалеть, что приходится делать  
I *regret to tell* you that this is the truth.  
Мне *жаль* вам это *говорить*, но это  
правда.
- **allow somebody to do**  
разрешать кому-то делать что-то  
I *don't allow my son to smoke*.  
Я *не разрешаю сыну курить*.
- **be busy to do**  
быть занятым для чего-нибудь  
He *is too busy to read*.  
Он *слишком занят*, чтобы *читать*.
- **try to do**  
усилия, потраченные на действие  
I *couldn't remember the word no matter  
how hard I tried to remember it*.  
Я не мог запомнить слово, как  
*ни старался*.
- **used to do**  
регулярное действие в прошлом  
I *used to live* in a small flat.  
Раньше я *жил* в маленькой квартире.

## Раскройте скобки, употребляя инфинитив или герундий.

79.1

1. I used .....(*do*) the shopping in this shop when I lived here.
2. I haven't yet got used to .....(*live*) in this house.
3. I'm trying .....(*explain*) to you the point. Why aren't you listening?
4. Stop .....(*shout*). I can hear you very well.
5. On his way to the office he often stops .....(*talk*) to this man or that.
6. I remember .....(*have*) a rest there. It's a really wonderful place.
7. Please, remember .....(*send*) them an invitation card.
8. She is used to .....(*drink*) coffee in the morning.
9. I tried .....(*speak*) Italian with him but I failed. My Italian is too bad.
10. Try .....(*speak*) French with him. You are good at French, aren't you?
11. He stopped .....(*show*) a stranger the way to the nearest bank.
12. While living in England I used .....(*read*) this newspaper in the morning.
13. I didn't like .....(*open*) the letter as it wasn't addressed to me.
14. Many dentists don't allow .....(*chew*) gum.
15. The doctor doesn't allow me .....(*drive*).

## Заполните пропуски, используя слова из таблицы.

79.2

1. Please stop ..... silly questions.
2. He stopped ..... the toy the child had dropped.
3. I remember ..... to him. He is an interesting man.
4. Remember ..... him at the station.
5. He lives in the suburbs and he is used to ..... a train to go to work and back.
6. When I lived in the suburbs I used . ..... by train to work and back.
7. I tried not ..... to what he was saying but it was impossible.
8. — I can't stand his presence any more. — Try ..... all his remarks.
9. She regrets ..... the child. She thinks it wasn't his fault.
10. She is busy ..... in the garden.
11. I'm too busy ..... for them. I don't want to be late.
12. I regret ..... you that he has fallen ill.
13. I don't like ..... everything to him but he expects an explanation.
14. The mother didn't allow the child ..... so many sweets.
15. I like ..... when I'm tired.

<i>to meet</i>
<i>to pay attention</i>
<i>to ask</i>
<i>to ignore</i>
<i>to punish</i>
<i>to talk</i>
<i>to pick up</i>
<i>to take</i>
<i>to go</i>
<i>to work</i>
<i>to wait</i>
<i>to tell</i>
<i>to explain</i>
<i>to eat</i>
<i>to stay in bed</i>

## Переведите.

79.3

1. Раньше я пила много кофе, а теперь нет.
2. Не забудь выключить свет, когда будешь уходить.
3. Я помню, что оплачивал этот счет.
4. Вчера я пытался до него дозвониться, но не смог. Попробуй сделать это вечером.
5. Я привык читать газеты по утрам.
6. Ты не пожалеешь, если отдохнешь там.
7. Лектор не разрешает пропускать занятия.
8. Учитель не разрешает детям пропускать занятия.
9. Он остановился, чтобы прочитать объявление.
10. Перестаньте шептаться.

Причастие (The Participle) — это неличная форма глагола, совмещающая в себе свойства глагола, прилагательного и наречия.

### 1. Формы причастия

<b>Active</b>	<i>doing</i>	-	<i>having done</i>
<b>Passive</b>	<i>being done</i>	<i>done</i>	<i>having been done</i>
	выражает действие, одновременное с действием глагола-сказуемого	выражает действие, одновременное или предшествующее глаголу-сказуемому	выражает действие, предшествующее глаголу-сказуемому

The boy *playing* in the garden is my son's friend.

The question *being discussed* now is important.

He put the *typed* texts on the table.

*Having taken* what he wanted he left the room.

*Having been told* to come later he didn't know what to do.

Мальчик, *играющий* в саду — сын моего друга.

Вопрос, *который* сейчас обсуждается, важный.

Он положил *отпечатанные* тексты на стол.

*Взяв* то, что ему было нужно, он вышел из комнаты.

*Так как* ему сказали прийти позже, он не знал, что делать.

### 2. Отрицательная форма причастия

*Not knowing* the truth he felt unconcerned.

*Not having found* the book he rang up his friend.

*Не зная* правды (так как он не знал правды), он не волновался.

*Не найдя* книгу, он позвонил другу.



Русскому действительному причастию прошедшего времени в функции определения в английском языке соответствует придаточное определительное.

Человек, *звонивший* вам вчера, скоро будет здесь.

The man *who phoned* you yesterday will soon be here.

**Употребите причастия в форме настоящего времени действительного залога.****80.1**★ She was sitting and watching the sunset. ⇒ *She sat watching the sunset.*

1. The man who is sitting at the window is waiting for you. ....
2. As he was a rich man he could buy the car. ....
3. As she was ill she had to stay at home. ....
4. As she was proud of her son she often spoke about him. ....
5. What is the name of the man who is talking to Jack? .....
6. As he was late he took a taxi. ....
7. The child who was crying looked unhappy. ....
8. At last I found the page which was missing. ....
9. As he was interested in the subject he read a lot of books about it. ....

**Употребите причастия в форме страдательного залога.****80.2**★ He took some photos of a church, which was built in the 15<sup>th</sup> century. ⇒ *He took some photos of a church built in the 15<sup>th</sup> century.*

1. He took the camera, which was broken, and threw it away. ....
2. He was looking at the pictures, which had been drawn by the child. ....
3. The thing, which she had forgotten, was again fresh in her memory. ....
4. They are looking for some treasure, which is hidden here. ....
5. The lanterns, which were lit, showed them the way. ....
6. The bird, which had been shot, fell down. ....
7. He likes to wear clothes, which have worn out. ....
8. He saw a note, which had been written in a hurry. ....
9. He looked through the composition the child had written. ....

**Употребите причастия в форме прошедшего времени действительного залога.****80.3**★ As I hadn't phoned him back I had to apologise. ⇒ *Not having phoned him back I had to apologise.*

1. I left the luggage at the airport and went to the restaurant. ....
2. As he hadn't found the necessary papers he felt angry. ....
3. As he hadn't read the book he couldn't discuss it. ....
4. As they hadn't taken a decision they turned to him for help. ....
5. She made dinner and decided to have a rest. ....
6. As he hadn't bought tickets he couldn't join them. ....
7. As he had broken his car he had to go by bus. ....
8. He finished the article and went to bed. ....
9. As he had given up smoking he felt better. ....

**Употребите причастия в форме страдательного залога.****80.4**★ He was being followed and felt uneasy. ⇒ *Being followed he felt uneasy.*

1. As he hadn't been introduced to the other guests he felt a stranger. ....
2. As she was being looked at she felt confused. ....
3. He had been taught good manners and that was why he was admired by everybody. ....
4. The clothes, which are being sold here, are expensive. ....
5. As the cup was broken it was of no use. ....
6. He hadn't been asked to come in and felt hurt. ....
7. As the flowers had been kept without water for a long time they faded. ....
8. As the house was being reconstructed it was empty. ....
9. As he had not been told the truth he didn't know how to act. ....

Конструкция «сложное дополнение» состоит из двух частей:

существительное в общем падеже или местоимение  
в объектном падеже, обозначающее лицо или предмет

+

инфинитив смыслового  
глагола или причастие



После следующих глаголов и выражений инфинитив употребляется с частицей **to**:  
*to want, I'd like, to expect, to know, to like, to hate, etc.*

На русский язык Complex Object, как правило, переводится дополнительным придаточным предложением с союзами *что, чтобы, как*.

I want **you to close** the window.

Я хочу, чтобы ты закрыл окно.

He expects **us not to be late**.

Он предполагает (ожидает),  
что мы не опоздаем.

После глаголов **to make, to let** употребляется инфинитив **без** частицы **to**.

Make **him go** there. Let **me pass**.

После глаголов **to hear, to see, to notice, to feel, to watch** глагол употребляется в форме:

- *инфинитива без частицы to*, если следует подчеркнуть факт восприятия действия вплоть до его завершения.

I heard **him come in**.

Я слышал, как он вошел.

I saw **him buy** a newspaper.

Я видел, как он купил газету.

He noticed Roger **pick up** something  
from the floor.

Я заметил, как Роджер поднял что-то  
с пола.

- *причастия (doing)*, которое подчеркивает длительность действия.

I heard **him coming in**.

Я слышал, как он входил.

I saw **him buying** a newspaper.

Я видел, как он покупал газету.

I noticed **Roger picking up** something.

Я заметил, как Роджер поднимал что-то  
с пола.

I watched **the children playing**.

Я наблюдал, как дети играют.



Если глаголы **to see, to hear, to notice, to feel** употреблены не в своем прямом значении, после них употребляется дополнительное придаточное предложение.

I hear (that) *they have just moved to a  
new flat.*

Я слышал, (что) они только что  
переехали на новую квартиру.

I saw (that) *he didn't understand  
anything.*

Я видел, (что) он ничего не понимает.

I felt *that he was wrong.*

Я чувствовал, что он не прав.

Придаточное предложение также употребляется вместо Complex Object в предложениях типа *Ты слышал, как он поет? Ты видел, как она рисует?*

Did you hear *how* he sings?

Ты слышал, как она поет?

Did you see *how* she draws?

Ты видел, как она рисует?

## Постройте Complex Object при помощи глаголов из таблицы.

81.1

★ He is very clever. We know *him to study* a lot.

1. Why have you closed the window? I want ..... it.
2. Why didn't Steve buy anything on his way home? I'd like .....
3. When are they to come? — We expect ..... on Tuesday.
4. She is very pretty. I like .....
5. Nick is sometimes so impolite. I hate ..... like that.

*to study*  
*to behave*  
*to open*  
*to smile*  
*to do the shopping*  
*to arrive*

## Употребите Complex Object после глаголов make и let.

81.2

★ Why aren't the children sleeping? Make *them go to bed*.

1. Why is he waiting in the street? Let .....
2. David is lying again. Make .....
3. I haven't heard about it yet. Let ..... the article.
4. The child doesn't know the rules. Make ..... them.
5. Alice knows English very well. Let ..... the text.

*go to bed*  
*to tell the truth*  
*to translate*  
*to learn*  
*to come in*  
*to read*

## Постройте Complex Object при помощи глаголов из таблицы.

81.3

★ Why did you punish the child? I heard *him crying*.

1. Steve tries to keep fit. I saw ..... in the park yesterday.
2. I like children and I like to watch .....
3. She was cold. I felt her .....
4. They have made it up. I heard ..... in the next room.
5. I'm sure Mrs. Smith is not at home. I saw ..... the house.

*to leave*  
*to cry*  
*to play*  
*to shiver*  
*to jog*  
*to laugh*

## Употребите Complex Object после глаголов see, hear, notice, watch.

81.4

★ Ask Mark to lend you the book. I saw *him buy it*.

1. He must be at home. I saw ..... the house.
2. I know it from Jeremy himself. I heard ..... it.
3. I think Pamela feels bad. I noticed ..... a pill.
4. The child is cruel. I watched ..... a stone at a dog.
5. Carol must have broken a cup again. I heard ..... in the kitchen.

*fall down*  
*to throw*  
*to take*  
*enter*  
*to buy*  
*to say*

## Переведите.

81.5

1. Я слышал, как он играл на пианино.
2. Ты когда-нибудь слышал, как он играет на скрипке?
3. Я слышал, что Джеймс сдал последний экзамен.
4. Ты когда-нибудь видел, как она держит ручку?
5. Я видела, как она что-то пишет.
6. Мать видела, что с сыном что-то не так.
7. Я видел, как он взял что-то со стола.
8. Мы слышали, как он нам что-то крикнул.



Переделайте предложения, как показано в примере.

**82.1**

★ I won't go on holiday this year. I can't afford it. ⇒ *I can't afford to go on holiday this year.*

★ The child was sleeping. The mother watched him. ⇒ *The mother watched the child sleeping.*

- 1** -----
1. We'll go to the theatre on Friday. I'm looking forward to it. ....
  2. Paul bought some flowers. Jane saw it. ....
  3. I can wait for you. I don't mind. ....
  4. I turned off the light when I was leaving. I remember it. ....
  5. I can earn my own living. I'm capable of it. ....
  6. He was crossing the street at the red light. I saw it. ....
  7. I didn't remind him of the meeting. I forgot. ....
  8. I always have dinners in a restaurant. I enjoy it. ....
  9. Don't make him angry. Try to avoid it. ....
  10. The child read well. Did you hear? .....

- 2** -----
1. You must break eggs to make an omelette. You can't make it without it. ....
  2. It's wonderful to stay at an expensive hotel. Just imagine it. ....
  3. He opened the door and came into the room. I heard it. ....
  4. It's a nice place to have a rest. I know it. ....
  5. You must see the play. It's worth that. ....
  6. I won't go to the disco. I don't feel like that. ....
  7. Even if he doesn't want to answer the question make him. ....
  8. Don't advise him anything. It's no use. ....
  9. I overheard what you said. I just couldn't help it. ....
  10. She picked up something and put it into her pocket. I noticed it. ....
  11. He will apply for the job. I advised him. ....
  12. You will meet the president. I've arranged it. ....
  13. He hasn't recovered after the illness. He doesn't seem to. ....
  14. Did you lock the door? Do you remember? .....
  15. The bell was ringing. I heard it. ....

Исправьте ошибки, где это необходимо.

**82.2**

- 1** -----
1. Would you like *come* with us?
  2. Remember *leaving* him a note.
  3. I want the porter *taking* my luggage to the carriage.
  4. They don't let us *park* cars here.
  5. They don't allow us *park* cars here.
  6. They don't allow *talking* loudly here.
  7. The manager is too busy today *receiving* anybody.
  8. The inspector asked me *show* my ticket but I failed *do* it.
  9. The inspector asked me *pay* the fine but I refused *paying*.
  10. I'm used to *work* with the radio on.

- 2** -----
1. The father kept *buying* the boy toy guns.
  2. Do you mind *to keep* silence for a moment?
  3. I'd rather *to go* by train.
  4. James expected the director *to see* him at once.
  5. I heard waves *to beat* against the shore.
  6. Do you feel like *to walk*? — I'd rather *to go* by bus.
  7. When I was younger I used *to going* on holiday three times a year.
  8. I hate this district. I'm afraid of *been robbed*.
  9. If he needs it so much let him *to have* it.
  10. I noticed him *walking* towards me and stopped *to shake* hands.

## 3

1. After *spend* a week in the cottage she began to enjoy *to live* in the country.
2. It's no use *to argue* with him. He is incapable *to see* anyone else's point of view.
3. Avoid *staying* in the sun. It's too hot.
4. His words are worth *to remember*.
5. Why did you give up *to work* for the company?
6. He agreed *come* without *thinking*.
7. I know I promised *calling* on him but somehow I failed *do* it.
8. On *arrive* at the station I managed *finding* a porter at once.
9. The coat needs *to clean*. You'd better *to take* it to the cleaner's.
10. I couldn't help *pay* attention to his words.

## Переведите.

82.3

## 1

1. Я хочу, чтобы вы подождали меня после занятий.
2. Я не ожидал, что он забудет о твоём дне рождения.
3. Он отказался выкурить сигарету, так как бросил курить.
4. Няня сказала детям поиграть в саду, и сидела, наблюдая за тем, как они играют.
5. Я видел, как всходило солнце.
6. Перестань кричать. Я запрещаю тебе кричать.
7. Я слышал, как они говорили по-английски.
8. Я слышал (знаю), что вы говорите по-английски.
9. Я не мог не попросить его остаться.
10. Учитель заставил мальчика сделать упражнение еще раз.

## 2

1. Он почувствовал, как врач дотронулся до больной ноги.
2. Я наблюдал за тем, как Майк пытался научить ребенка кататься на коньках.
3. Она хочет, чтобы гости пришли вовремя.
4. Я слышал, как проехала машина.
5. Я видел, что ему плохо.
6. Я не разрешаю здесь курить. Я устал напоминать тебе об этом.
7. Я видел, как ты на него посмотрела.
8. Он заставил меня встать рано.
9. Наконец-то она перестала говорить мне, что мне делать.
10. Я не разрешаю ребенку гулять одному.

## 3

1. Кажется, он хороший специалист. Советую тебе его нанять.
2. Я привык жить один.
3. Все знали, что он прекрасный друг.
4. Машину надо помыть. Не забудь это сделать.
5. Я надеюсь (ожидаю), что он поймет наши проблемы.
6. Она не может позволить себе оставаться здесь долго.
7. Дети с нетерпением ждали поездки к морю.
8. Я заметила, как Джек ударил Билла.
9. Он любит смеяться над другими.
10. Мне не понравилось, как Джордж разговаривал с клиентом.
11. Есть разные способы заставить ребенка быть вежливым.
12. Мы видели, как она вышла из комнаты.
13. Перестань волноваться. Я устроил тебе встречу с хорошим врачом.
14. Я слышал, как он задавал этот вопрос.
15. Я настаиваю на том, чтобы вы отказались от их идеи.

**1. Still** переводится на русский язык как *еще, все еще, пока еще*.

- В утвердительных предложениях **still** указывает на то, что действие продолжается.

He is *still* here.

Он *все еще* здесь.

He is *still* reading.

Он *все еще* читает.

- В отрицательных предложениях **still** переводится на русский как *все еще не...* и делает предложение более эмоциональным.

He *still* hasn't taken a decision.

Он *все еще не* принял решение.

He *still* doesn't know what to do.

Он *все еще не* знает, что делать.

**2. Yet** совпадает по значению со **still**, но употребляется в отрицательных предложениях и переводится на русский язык как *пока еще не...*

He hasn't come *yet*.

Он *пока еще не* пришел.

He isn't here *yet*.

Его *пока еще нет*.

➤◀ He is *still* absent.  
Он *все еще* отсутствует.



He hasn't come *yet*.  
Он *еще не* пришел.

- В вопросительных предложениях **yet** переводится на русский как *уже*.

Is he here *yet*?

Он *уже* здесь?

Has he come *yet*?

Он *уже* пришел?

**3. Already** употребляется в утвердительных предложениях и переводится на русский как *уже*.

He *already* knows about it.

Он *уже* знает об этом.



Иногда **already** употребляется в вопросительных предложениях и придает высказыванию оттенок удивления.

Has he come *already*?

Он *уже* пришел? (Так скоро?)

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя yet или still.****83.1**★ Charlie is still at school. (*to come home*) ⇒ **He hasn't come home yet.**★ Mr. Stain hasn't gone to bed yet. (*to read*) ⇒ **He is still reading.**

1. They haven't finished dinner yet. (*to sit at the table*) .....
2. The Meadows haven't decided where to go yet. (*to discuss*) .....
3. Mark is still watching TV. (*to go to bed*) .....
4. My father is still fishing. (*to catch fish*) .....
5. David hasn't switched off his PC yet. (*to play computer games*) .....
6. Leo is still using the car. (*to sell*) .....

**Переделайте предложения, употребляя yet или already.****83.2**★ He isn't still watching TV. (*to go to bed*) ⇒ **He has already gone to bed.**★ She has already made dinner. (*to cook*) ⇒ **She isn't still cooking.**

1. She isn't still playing the piano. (*to go for a walk*) .....
2. He hasn't written the book yet. (*to collect information*) .....
3. The workers aren't still repairing the roof. (*to leave*) .....
4. The mother isn't still washing the dishes. (*to do the washing up*) .....
5. Sally has already made up her mind. (*to think*) .....
6. Is he still riding his bicycle? — No, he (*to fall down*) .....

**Поставьте предложения в вопросительную и отрицательную формы.****83.3**

1. They have already bought a new house. ....
2. The children have already built a house. ....
3. The painter has already finished the picture. ....
4. The baby has already fallen asleep. ....
5. Winter has already begun. ....

**Вставьте still, already или yet.****83.4**

1. It's cold. Winter has ..... come.
2. It hasn't stopped snowing ..... It's ..... snowing.
3. I haven't met my parents-in-law ..... I'm ..... going to meet them.
4. Have you spoken to the manager ..... ? — No, not .....
5. He isn't ..... waiting. He has ..... left.
6. They haven't got a letter ..... They ..... expect it.
7. We have ..... sent them an invitation. But we haven't got an answer .....
8. They aren't ..... on holiday. They have ..... returned.

**Переведите.****83.5**

1. Она еще не умывалась.
2. Майкл еще не ученик. Он все еще ходит в детский сад.
3. Мальчик все еще пишет перевод. Он его еще не написал.
4. Они все еще его ждут? Разве он еще не пришел?
5. Они уже помирились. Они уже не спорят.
6. Как! Вы уже готовы?! — Да, я уже готов.
7. Вы уже покрасили дом? — Еще нет. Мы все еще его красим.
8. Он уже дома? — Нет, он еще работает.
9. Он все еще безработный. Он пока еще не нашел работу.
10. Он уже написал тест, но все еще его проверяет.

- 1. Also** употребляется в утвердительных и вопросительных предложениях и ставится перед смысловым глаголом, но после глагола **to be**.

I'm also busy.

We were also hungry.

**BUT!**

He has also come.

I also know Steve.

I can also do it.

- 2. Too** употребляется в утвердительных и вопросительных предложениях и всегда ставится в конец предложения.

I want to go there *too*.

Do you want to see him *too*?

**Too** также может выступать как краткое подтверждение.

I want to go there. — *Me too*.

— *Я тоже*.

- 3. Either** употребляется в отрицательных предложениях и ставится в конце предложения.

I don't know him *either*.

He can't do it *either*.

She hasn't spoken to him *either*.

- 4. Конструкция**

**SO** + **ВСПОМОГАТЕЛЬНЫЙ ГЛАГОЛ** + **ПОДЛЕЖАЩЕЕ**

служит реакцией на утверждение.

I am busy. — *So is Ellen*.

Я занят. Елена тоже.

He knows everything. — *So do we*.

Он все знает. И мы тоже.

They have just come. — *So has Ann*.

Они только что пришли. И Анна тоже.

- 5. Конструкция**

**neither** + **ВСПОМОГАТЕЛЬНЫЙ ГЛАГОЛ** + **ПОДЛЕЖАЩЕЕ**

служит реакцией на отрицание.

I am not busy. — *Neither is Ellen*.

Я не занят. И Елена тоже.

He doesn't know anything. — *Neither do we*.

Он ничего не знает. И мы тоже.

They haven't come yet. — *Neither has Ann*.

Они еще не пришли. И Анна тоже.

## Измените предложения по образцу.

84.1

а)

★ He will help you too. ⇒ *He will also help you.*

1. Margaret can drive a car too. ....
2. We live in a new house too. ....
3. They are very nice people too. ....
4. Steve has spent a lot of money too. ....
5. There are some letters for him too. ....

б)

★ I can also do it. ⇒ *I can't do it either.*

1. They are also friends. ....
2. I also like pop music. ....
3. The Smiths have also moved to a new flat. ....
4. You should also ask him about it. ....
5. I also planted some trees last year. ....

Заполните пропуски словами *too, also, either*.

84.2

1. This bag is ..... expensive.
2. This student isn't clever .....
3. I met him yesterday .....
4. My friend didn't know the answer .....
5. He has ..... changed a lot.
6. He will come to the airport .....
7. They won't agree with us .....
8. There isn't any news for us .....

## Дайте краткие подтверждения к предложениям.

84.3

★ Ann's clothes are nice. (*Amy's*) ⇒ *So are Amy's clothes.*

1. I won't have time for it on Friday. (*Kate*) .....
2. My child is clever. (*Mrs. Black's child*) .....
3. Kate has a nice voice. (*Clare*) .....
4. John hasn't finished the work yet. (*his friends*) .....
5. My parents travelled a lot when they were young. (*the Wests*) .....
6. They aren't ready. (*I*) .....
7. I've just had breakfast. (*my husband*) .....
8. I'll go to Brazil in spring. (*he*) .....
9. Don can't speak French. (*David*) .....
10. I didn't enjoy the party. (*we*) .....
11. Steve was watching TV at 8 o'clock yesterday. (*we*) .....
12. You can't explain it. (*I*) .....

## Переведите.

84.4

1. Мы тоже не знаем правды.
2. Я не знаю этого человека. — Моя подруга тоже.
3. Они тоже будут рады.

4. Я вынужден вставать рано. — И мы тоже.
5. Эта сумка дорогая. Та тоже.
6. Мой ребенок тоже окончил школу в прошлом году.
7. Я родился в Москве. — И мои родители тоже.
8. Я здесь с утра. — И она тоже.
9. Диана тоже никогда с ним не встречалась.
10. Вчера в 5 часов моих родителей не было дома. — Моих тоже.
11. Мы тоже не просили его о помощи.
12. Я не могу понять это предложение. — И моя сестра тоже.

# **KEYS TO EXERCISES**

**КЛЮЧИ К УПРАЖЕНИЯМ**



## UNIT 1

### 1.1

1. a, the
2. a, the
3. a, a, the
4. an, the, a
5. the
6. the, the
7. an, the
8. a, the
9. the
10. an, the
11. an
12. the
13. the, a, the, a
14. a, the
15. the

### 1.2

#### 1

1. the
2. the
3. -
4. the
5. -
6. the
7. -, -
8. -
9. -

#### 2

1. -
2. -, a, -, -
3. -, the
4. the
5. a
6. a, the, the
7. the
8. the, -
9. the, the, the
10. the, the
11. -, the
12. the
13. the,
14. a, a
15. the, the
16. the

## UNIT 2

### 2.1

#### 1

1. the, -
2. the
3. a
4. -, the
5. the, the, the
6. the
7. the, the
8. the, -
9. -
10. -

#### 2

1. the
2. the
3. the
4. the
5. a
6. the, -
7. an
8. the, the
9. the
10. the, the, the

#### 3

1. a
2. a, the
3. the, the
4. the, a, a
5. a, the
6. the
7. -, the
8. the
9. the, the, the,
10. the, the

#### 4

1. the, the
2. an, the
3. the, -
4. the, the
5. the, -
6. the, the, -
7. the, the
8. a, the, the
9. the, the, the
10. the, the, the
11. the, -, -

## UNIT 3

### 3.1

#### 1

1. the, -
2. -
3. -
4. -, the
5. -
6. the, a, -
7. -, -
8. -, -
9. -, the
10. the, -

#### 2

1. -, a
2. -
3. the
4. the, -
5. an
6. -
7. the, -, -
8. the, -
9. the
10. -, -, -

#### 3

1. a, an
2. -
3. -
4. -, -, the, the, the
5. a, -
6. -
7. -, -, -
8. the, a, -
9. the, -
10. -, -

#### 4

1. -, a
2. -, the
3. -, -
4. -
5. -, -
6. -, -
7. -, -
8. -
9. the, -
10. the, -

## UNIT 4

### 4.1

1. the, a
2. the, a
3. the
4. the
5. the, -
6. the, -
7. the, -
8. a, the
9. -, the
10. the, the, a
11. the, the, the
12. -, -
13. a, -, -, the
14. the, -

### 4.2

#### 1

1. The camel
2. The crocodile
3. The kangaroo
4. The mouse
5. The dog
6. The cow

#### 2

1. The sick
2. The poor
3. The unemployed
4. The old
5. The homeless
6. The young

#### 3

1. The Brazilians
2. The Canadians
3. The French
4. The Australians
5. The Mexicans
6. The Chinese

## UNIT 5

### 5.1

1. -
2. the, -, -, -
3. -
4. the
5. -
6. the, -
7. -
8. -, -, the
9. the
10. the, -, -
11. -
12. the

### 5.2

1. The English Channel
2. Europe
3. The Mississippi
4. Germany
5. The North Sea
6. North America
7. Everest
8. The Pacific Ocean
9. The Volga
10. Lake Baikal
11. The Urals
12. Asia

### 5.3

1. -, the
2. -, the
3. the, -, -, -, -
4. the, the
5. the
6. -, the
7. the
8. the
9. the, -, -
10. -, the, -
11. a, -, a
12. an, -

## UNIT 6

### 6.1

1. the
2. -

3. -, -
4. -, the
5. the
6. -, -
7. -, the
8. the, the
9. the
10. the, -
11. -, -
12. the

### 6.2

1. the Savoy
2. Wednesday, Lincoln International Airport
3. Talbot Square
4. the Capitol
5. the Tate Gallery
6. St. James's Park / St. James's Palace
7. the Science Museum
8. the Mansion House
9. the Today
10. the Statue of Liberty.

### 6.3

1. The Independent
2. The Houses of Parliament
3. Cambridge University
4. The Ritz
5. The Bank of England
6. Westminster Abbey
7. The British Museum
8. The Mall
9. Fleet Street
10. The Albert Hall
11. The Tower of London
12. Victoria Station

## UNIT 7

### 7.1

1. -----
1. the
  2. a
  3. a
  4. the, a
  5. a
  6. the
  7. a
  8. the
  9. a
  10. the

**2**

1. the
2. the
3. the
4. a, a
5. an
6. the
7. a
8. the
9. a
10. a

**7.2**

1. the daughter of a scientist
2. a distance of twenty miles
3. a glass of juice
4. a man of culture
5. a book of interest
6. a girl of thirteen
7. the collar of the shirt
8. the position of a manager
9. a sense of duty
10. the development of science
11. the bottom of the page
12. a dress of silk
13. The face of the man
14. the front of the house
15. the results of the exam

**UNIT 8**

**8.1**

1. yesterday evening
2. tomorrow afternoon
3. Monday morning
4. Sunday evening
5. for breakfast
6. a light or a heavy breakfast
7. make dinner
8. a late supper
9. in the morning
10. last night
11. to supper
12. for the summer
13. late spring
14. autumn
15. in winter
16. last winter

**8.2**

1. during the day
2. for the summer
3. in spring
4. late afternoon
5. a cold evening
6. a heavy breakfast
7. the dinner
8. midday
9. the evening
10. during the morning
11. The lunch
12. through the night
13. a rainy summer
14. Late summer

**8.3**

1. a, -
2. a
3. a
4. -, -
5. the
6. -, the
7. the
8. (the) winter
9. -, the
10. -, the
11. -
12. a
13. the, the
14. -

**UNIT 9**

**9.1**

1. town
2. prison
3. home
4. work
5. hospital
6. sea
7. church
8. school, college
9. bed
10. prison
11. school
12. hospital
13. work
14. bed

# UNIT 10

## 9.2

### 1

1. -
2. -
3. the
4. -
5. the
6. the
7. the
8. a
9. -
10. the
11. a
12. -
13. the

### 2

1. a, the
2. -
3. the
4. -
5. the
6. -
7. an, the
8. a
9. a
10. a
11. -
12. -

## UNIT 10

### 10.1

#### 1

1. a
2. -
3. the, -
4. -, -
5. -, the
6. a, the
7. -, -
8. -, the
9. the
10. the

#### 2

1. the, the
2. -, -
3. the, a, -
4. -, the
5. a
6. -, the, the, -
7. a, the, the
8. the, -
9. -
10. the, an

#### 3

1. -, the
2. the, -
3. the, the
4. a, the, the
5. a, -
6. a, a
7. the, the
8. -, -
9. the, the
10. -, -

#### 4

1. -
2. the
3. the, a, the
4. a, a
5. the, -, -
6. -, -
7. the, the
8. -, the
9. the, the
10. -, -, an

#### 5

1. -, -
2. the, the
3. -, a, the, -
4. the, the
5. the, the
6. the, the
7. -, -
8. the, the
9. -, the
10. -, -, -

**10.2**

<b>1</b>	<b>2</b>	<b>3</b>	<b>4</b>	<b>5</b>	<b>6</b>	<b>7</b>
-	-	-	-	the	the	the
-	the	a	the	the	the	-
a	-	a	the	the	-	-
a	-	-	-	the	the	-
-	the	-	the	the	-	-
the	the	the	the	the	-	the
the	the	the	-	the	the	the
-(the),	-	the	-	the	-	-
an	-	the	-	a	-	the
the	a	the	the	-	-	the
-	the	-	the	-	the	-
a	-	-	the	-	-	-
the	-	the	-	-	-	-
the	the	a	-	-	-	-
the	-	a	-	the	-	-
a	-	the	-	the	-	-
a	the	the	-	-	-	-
the	the	the	-	-	-	-
a	the	the	-	-	-	-
the	-	the	-	-	-	-
a	-	the	-	-	-	-
the	-	a	-	-	-	-
the	the	the	-	-	-	-
-	-	the	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	a	-	-	-	-	-
-	the	-	-	-	-	-
a	a	-	-	-	-	-
a	a	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
an	a	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
a	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
-	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	-	-	-	-	-	-
the	the	-	-	-	-	-
the	-	-	-	-	-	-
the	-	-	-	-	-	-

**UNIT 11**

**11.1**

- |                        |                      |
|------------------------|----------------------|
| 1. those shelves       | 11. these passers-by |
| 2. these matches       | 12. these children   |
| 3. those buses         | 13. those sheep      |
| 4. my gloves           | 14. these policemen  |
| 5. his photos          | 15. his toys         |
| 6. my studies          | 16. my teeth         |
| 7. her brothers-in-law | 17. her chiefs       |
| 8. those taxis         | 18. these potatoes   |
| 9. her radios          | 19. those roses      |
| 10. these watches      | 20. these paths      |

**11.2**

1. These aircraft are new.
2. I saw cats playing with mice.
3. I've never won prizes.
4. Do you know these ladies?
5. These are tall trees.
6. I need boxes.
7. We are going to visit these countries.
8. She has grandchildren.
9. These men are thieves.
10. I like these players.
11. I don't have ashtrays.
12. Have you ever talked to Frenchmen?
13. There are swimming pools in our town.
14. He likes his teachers.

**11.3**

1. proofs
2. cities
3. roofs
4. students
5. knives
6. geese
7. deer
8. shelves
9. lorries
10. plays
11. Irishmen
12. feet
13. pianos
14. eyes
15. umbrellas

## UNIT 12

### 12.1

#### 1 -----

1. these are
2. is
3. these, want
4. are
5. travels
6. is
7. consists
8. leaves
9. is
10. likes

#### 2 -----

1. advice
2. this is a
3. this is
4. interesting
5. these are
6. brings
7. fine
8. have
9. new
10. a bad

### 12.2

#### 1 -----

1. The police are looking for him.
2. What's the matter with his feet?
3. This is bad advice.
4. His wages are rather high.
5. This information is dated.
6. This cat doesn't catch mice.
7. Her hair isn't very long.
8. The goods are spoilt.
9. This is good news.
10. Where is the money? — It's in the wallet.
11. These people are Germans.
12. Why are your clothes on the floor? Put them in the wardrobe.

#### 2 -----

1. Physics is his favourite subject.
2. Your progress gives me pleasure.
3. These children are still little.
4. This is terrible furniture.
5. He had two sons-in-law.
6. I don't like rainy weather.
7. Where are the scissors?
8. This is heavy luggage.
9. These are dirty clothes.
10. The police know everything.
11. My watch is a bit fast.
12. His advice is always good.

## UNIT 13

### 13.1

#### 1 -----

1. much
2. a lot of
3. much
4. many
5. a lot of
6. many
7. much
8. much
9. a lot of
10. many
11. many
12. much
13. a lot of
14. much
15. much

#### 2 -----

1. little
2. a few
3. few
4. a little
5. a few
6. few

7. little
8. a little
9. few
10. a little
11. few
12. a little
13. little
14. a little
15. a few

**13.2**

1. He gave me a lot of good advice.
2. There is little petrol in the tank.
3. I'll help you if I have a few minutes.
4. I have very much news.
5. Bill has few good clothes and Ted has many.
6. I have a little money. I can lend you some.
7. I have little information about this company.
8. There are a lot of deer in this forest.
9. Little knowledge is a dangerous thing.
10. Shall I put a little sugar in your tea?
11. He drinks too much coffee.
12. In the shop there were a few watches Susan liked, so it was difficult for her to make a choice.

**UNIT 14**

**14.1**

**1** -----

1. the parents of the girl playing with my child
2. the back of the car
3. these children's parents
4. the middle of the page
5. the effect of James'(s) speech
6. my cousin's house
7. women's clothes
8. the idea of the article
9. This woman's story
10. the Wests' friends

**2** -----

1. Moscow's center / the centre of Moscow
2. The team's results / the results of the team

3. These doctors' practice
4. last year's holiday
5. Yesterday's visitor
6. the rules of the game
7. this country's economy / the economy of this country
8. These passengers' seats
9. these people's demands
10. my sister-in-law's books
11. John and Sharon's children
12. these newspapermen's question
13. my children's toys
14. Martin's and Carol's papers

**14.2**

**1** -----

1. These professors' lectures are interesting.
2. These policemen's wages are rather high.
3. Let me see the engine of the car.
4. I didn't like the end of the story.
5. I like these children's pictures.
6. The shop's manager (the manager of the shop) wants to see you.
7. I didn't like the expression of her face.
8. The visitors of the hotel gathered on the ground floor.
9. This is the umbrella of the woman sitting at that table.
10. I liked Carol's and Sue's answers.

**2** -----

1. Do you know the cause of the accident?
2. This girl's new dress is beautiful.
3. Yesterday's newspaper is on the table.
4. Do you know these people's addresses?
5. The Smiths' garden is the most beautiful in the town.
6. The leaves of this tree are yellow.
7. I missed the beginning of the performance.
8. Don't miss tomorrow's lesson.
9. Where are these students' papers?
10. He spoke about last year's failure.
11. A mile's distance is not a very long distance.
12. Ted and Bill's room is cosy.



**UNIT 15****15.1**

- 1** -----
1. these engineers' work
  2. my sisters' clothes
  3. these women's secrets
  4. these countries' economies
  5. my friends' advice
  6. his teachers' questions
  7. these men's wives
  8. my children's toothbrushes
  9. these cities' mayors *or* the mayors of these cities
  10. the wool of these sheep *or* these sheep's wool

- 2** -----
1. these scientists' progress
  2. her pupils' knowledge
  3. these birds' nests *or* the nests of these birds
  4. the tops of the mountains
  5. these sportsmen's coaches
  6. these presidents' aircraft
  7. these farmers' geese
  8. the pages of the books
  9. the smell of cigars
  10. the Lees' cottage

**15.2**

1. the postman's mistake
2. The country's president (the president of the country)
3. the guests' arrival
4. the team's play (the play of the team)
5. The advertisement of the soap.
6. the sound of the piano
7. the students' progress
8. the price of the furniture
9. the smell of the dish
10. children's wear
11. the author's name

**15.3**

1. How many, very few
2. How much, very little
3. How many, very few
4. How many, very few
5. How much, very little
6. How much, very little
7. How many, very few
8. How much, very little
9. How many, very few
10. How many, very few

**15.4**

- 1** -----
1. My mother-in-law has a lot of sisters.
  2. My mother-in-law's sisters live in another town.
  3. The police have a lot of proofs.
  4. Take these skis.
  5. The face of this watch is unusual.
  6. The roofs of these houses are flat.
  7. These are my friends' photos.
  8. Have you got a map of the world?
  9. He has two bad teeth.
  10. I enjoy walking in good weather.

- 2** -----
1. This is those Englishmen's luggage.
  2. I have a lot of news.
  3. I'll get in touch with you in a few days.
  4. Why are your brother's clothes wet? Let him dry them.
  5. All these watches are expensive.
  6. I didn't like these policemen's questions.
  7. Physics is a very difficult subject.
  8. This is easy work.
  9. I don't like these passers-by's faces.
  10. Do you know the results of yesterday's matches?

- 3** -----
1. He gave me much (a lot of) advice but I don't want to take it.
  2. The covers of these books are nice.

3. How much free time does he have?  
— Very little.
4. How many German books do you have?  
— Very few.
5. I don't eat many sweets.
6. I don't understand the meaning of this word.
7. I don't need much information about this firm.
8. I like these girls' jeans.
9. Her children's hair is long and beautiful.
10. It was doctor Brown's mistake.
11. You need a little patience.
12. There are very many flowers in the Smiths' garden.
13. John and Alice's children are very nice.
14. The result of the experiment was satisfactory.
15. I didn't get the idea of this article.

**4** -----

1. I like these children's questions.
2. I don't know these women's names.
3. These are men's gloves.
4. The team had little luck last year.
5. They know few English words.
6. There is little light here. Take a seat at the window.
7. You needn't take many clothes.
8. He says he has few warm clothes.
9. Take the money and give it to Ted.
10. My feet are cold. Let's go home.
11. Bad news makes people unhappy.
12. He doesn't eat much fruit.
13. Knowledge is a strong weapon.
14. The child has never seen sheep before.
15. Mathematics is an exact science.
16. Have you seen today's newspaper?
17. Nick's and Susan's watches are fast.
18. These sportsmen's coach says they are fit.
19. My sons-in-law are very clever.
20. How many sentences have you translated?  
— Very few.

**UNIT 16**

**16.1**

1. She is my girlfriend. I love her.
2. We saw Mark but he didn't see us.
3. I told them to come.
4. They liked the cat and bought it.
5. Why are they on the table? Put them on the shelf.
6. Listen how lovely it is singing.
7. You are late again.
8. We are great friends.
9. I haven't seen them today.
10. They have invited us to the cinema.

**16.2**

1. his
2. ours
3. hers
4. theirs
5. mine.
6. yours

**16.3**

1. your
2. us
3. his
4. you, I
5. my, yours
6. his, mine
7. you, it
8. you, him, us (me)
9. his
10. them, their
11. our, you, us, it
12. his, hers

**16.4**

1. She gave me her umbrella.
2. He opened his eyes and looked at us.
3. Have you told him about it?
4. My bag is black, hers is brown.
5. These are not her keys but his.

6. They are good people. I like them.
7. Look at the cat. Its tail is so beautiful!
8. Their children are students and ours are pupils.
9. I've answered your questions. Why don't you want to answer mine?
10. Give this book to them. It's theirs.

## UNIT 17

### 17.1

1. express himself
2. hurt herself
3. enjoy yourself
4. cut myself
5. introduce yourself
6. dry themselves
7. found ourselves
8. burn oneself
9. behave yourselves

### 17.2

1. himself
2. myself, me
3. -
4. themselves
5. -, -
6. yourself
7. -, myself
8. you
9. herself
10. them
11. itself
12. himself, -

### 17.3

1. Steve himself told me about it.
2. Concentrate and you'll remember everything yourself.
3. Let me introduce myself.
4. Did you enjoy yourself (yourselves) yesterday?

5. Why does the child behave so badly?
6. Jane looked at herself in the mirror.
7. I earn my living myself.
8. They bought the books for themselves.
9. We translated the article ourselves.
10. I'll speak to the manager myself.
11. They saw this information in the newspaper themselves.
12. The president himself expressed his gratitude to them.
13. She herself didn't like the man.
14. Try to relax and not to think about anything.
15. It's good when one feels young long.
16. One must be responsible for oneself.

## UNIT 18

### 18.1

- 1** -----
1. any, some
  2. any, none
  3. any
  4. any, some
  5. no
  6. any, no
  7. any, none
  8. any
  9. some, no
  10. no

- 2** -----
1. any, some
  2. any
  3. some
  4. any, some
  5. any
  6. some, no
  7. none
  8. some
  9. any
  10. some, any

**18.2**

- 1** -----
1. Some people always have their rest at the seaside.
  2. Can I have some paper? — (Unfortunately, I don't have any paper.)
  3. Some of his books are interesting.
  4. I can't give you any advice.
  5. The mother said the girl could choose any toy.
  6. None of them could come.
  7. I don't want any juice. I want some water.
  8. Can any of you drive?
  9. Come any time you like.
  10. I'm sure any boy would like to learn to play football.
  11. There are no chairs here. Bring some chairs please.
  12. He has no proof.
  13. In some classrooms there is no blackboard.

- 2** -----
1. Do any of you know his telephone number?
  2. Do you think any of them will be able to help us?
  3. I don't see any reasons for such behaviour.
  4. He used to have friends but now he has no friends.
  5. You can stay at any hotel in this district.
  6. There are no films better than this one. (There aren't any films...)
  7. Have you ever met any famous people?
  8. Some buildings in this town are very old.
  9. Are there any letters for me?
  10. There is no information for you. (There isn't any information for you)
  11. You can use any of these dictionaries.
  12. Would you like some ice-cream?

**UNIT 19**

**19.1**

- 1** -----
1. everybody
  2. anybody

3. nobody
4. anybody, everybody
5. anybody
6. somebody
7. somebody
8. nobody

- 2** -----
1. everything
  2. anything
  3. anything
  4. everything
  5. something
  6. nothing
  7. something, anything
  8. nothing

- 3** -----
1. everywhere
  2. everywhere
  3. nowhere
  4. anywhere, somewhere
  5. anywhere
  6. nowhere
  7. somewhere
  8. anywhere

**19.2**

1. Is there anybody in the office?  
— Yes, somebody is waiting for you.
2. There was something so strange in his words that I didn't understand anything.
3. To know everything is to know nothing.
4. I couldn't find him anywhere and was getting worried.
5. He says he has been everywhere and knows everything.
6. Everybody agrees with you. We'll do anything you tell us to do.
7. Nobody has heard anything about it.
8. Does anybody know where he lives?  
— He lives somewhere here but I don't know exactly where he lives.
9. You can ask anybody. They will tell you I'm right.

10. He wanted to tell her something special but couldn't think of anything.
11. They may be anywhere. Unfortunately nobody knows where they are.
12. Who told you that you can do anything you like?
13. Nothing seemed important to him.
14. Do you have anything to do?
15. Our city is beautiful. There are flowers everywhere here in summer.

## UNIT 20

### 20.1

#### 1 -----

1. the other
2. another
3. other
4. the others
5. another
6. other
7. another
8. the others
9. other
10. the other

#### 2 -----

1. other
2. each other (one another)
3. each other
4. the others
5. other
6. others
7. others
8. other
9. the others
10. the other
11. another
12. each other (one another)

### 20.2

1. I've read only three of these books but I'll certainly read the others.
2. Please, bring another two chairs.

3. Tom and Robert are angry with each other.
4. I don't have any other (another) explanation.
5. She reads only love stories. Any other books seem boring to her.
6. You've done only two exercises. How about the others?
7. How many other questions is he going to ask?
8. He has published three articles this year. How many others does he want to publish?
9. The room was full of boxes, old clothes, and other unnecessary things.
10. My other relatives live in another city.
11. Some people like to give presents, others don't.
12. Where is the other shoe?
13. The other guests will soon come.
14. Can I have another apple?
15. I don't see any other mistakes here.

## UNIT 21

### 21.1

1. Neither.
2. Both.
3. Both.
4. Either.
5. Neither.
6. Either.

### 21.2

1. Both men are drivers. Both of them are drivers.
2. Neither student is good. Neither of them is good.
3. Both glasses are empty. Both of them are empty.
4. You can rent either flat. You can rent either of them.
5. I don't know either woman. I don't know either of them.
6. You can use either PC. You can use either of them.

**21.3**

1. Neither Fred nor George can drive.
2. Ellen was born either in June or in July.
3. Both he and his friend study law.
4. I forgave neither Steve nor Pete.
5. Either his niece or his nephew lives in Italy.
6. Either Ted or Fred will give you a lift.
7. Neither the pill nor the mixture helps.
8. Both my son and my daughter are clever children.
9. I know both his address and his telephone number.
10. Neither I nor my friend likes detective stories.

**21.4**

1. Neither my brother nor I am married.
2. I like both pictures.
3. Do you need a blue pen or a black pen? – Either will do.
4. He will go there either by train or by plane.
5. I can neither swim nor skate.
6. Do you know her brother or her husband? – Neither.
7. Neither armchair is comfortable.
8. Neither of us smokes.
9. Either of them will show you the way.
10. Either his wife or his parents are selling the car.
11. Both of them are interested in history.
12. Both James and Sam collect stamps.
13. I can find neither your keys nor mine.
14. She didn't buy the dress because it was either expensive or too small for her.
15. I'll see him neither today nor tomorrow.

**UNIT 22**

**22.1**

- 1** -----
1. We asked **them** to stay with us.
  2. This is not my bag. That one is **mine**.
  3. Have you read **any** articles on the problem?

**4. RIGHT**

5. May I have **another** slice of bread? I always eat much bread.
6. Let her put on **her** hat.
7. Can they really do it **themselves**?
8. Go to the bathroom and wash **your** hands and the face.
9. We can cope with the task **ourselves**.
10. I don't have **any** plans for the weekend.

**2** -----

1. **Nobody** can help him in this situation.
2. We keep in touch with one of my cousins but I haven't heard about **the other** one lately.
3. **RIGHT**
4. **RIGHT**
5. **None** of my fellow students failed the exam.
6. Children, behave **yourselves**!
7. Shall I phone Alice or Judy? — **Either**.
8. He studies Literature, History and many **other** subjects.
9. You can ask **any** of us to help.
10. **Ours** is a lonely street.

**3** -----

1. If everybody is here tell **them** to take **their** seats.
2. **RIGHT**
3. I haven't got **any** news yet.
4. Neither his children nor he **wants** to stay there.
5. Why have you come alone? How about **the others**?
6. It was difficult for her to **concentrate** on the text.
7. Everybody **seems** to know him here.
8. Some people believed the article **others** said it was nonsense.
9. **None of them** remembered about my birthday.
10. Would you like the blue or the green blouse? — **Either**.

**4** -----

1. He is arriving **either** on Friday or on Saturday.

2. It's **their** business. Don't interfere.
3. The question is so easy. **Anybody** can answer it.
4. **RIGHT**
5. Steve, are you going to take this book with **you**?
6. Will you invite Steve or Roger? — **Neither**.
7. The child is big enough to dress **himself**.
8. She announced she would stay with us **another** three days.
9. Both his car and mine **are** in the garage.
10. **None of** his teachers are (is) satisfied with his work.
11. He likes to speak about **himself**.
12. They looked at **each other** but said nothing.
13. I don't **feel** well enough to leave the house.
14. **RIGHT**

**22.2**

- 1** -----
1. I had no money, so I had to borrow some.
  2. He felt bad and wanted to stay at home.
  3. I'm afraid anything can happen.
  4. Neither his patents nor he smokes.
  5. Scientists from Germany, Russia, and many other countries attended the conference.
  6. There is nothing strange about it.
  7. Have you read at least one of these books? — None.
  8. I need another week to make a decision.
  9. Would you like to eat something?
  10. Did they paint the house themselves?

- 2** -----
1. They are both on holiday and neither of them will come before Sunday.
  2. Let's play another game.
  3. His computer is very good. Mine is not that good.
  4. I asked two people how to get there but neither of them knew the way.
  5. She got upset over something unimportant.
  6. Some people read newspapers, others listen to news.
  7. Neither my children nor his son likes this teacher.

8. If there are any new words in the text look them up in a dictionary.
9. Any bus will take you there.
10. Other pictures by this painter are not interesting.

- 3** -----
1. There was nobody in the house.
  2. Their house is very big. Ours isn't that big.
  3. Go anywhere you like.
  4. Some men shave every day, other men (others) think it is unnecessary.
  5. Everybody is present, aren't they?
  6. You can invite anybody.
  7. He speaks both Spanish and French well.
  8. I wanted to see three films on Saturday but saw none.
  9. I couldn't make a sandwich. I had no bread.
  10. What did you do yesterday? — Nothing special.

- 4** -----
1. How long have you known each other?
  2. If anybody phones, tell them I'll come in half an hour.
  3. Where is the other glove?
  4. I'll take the suit to the dry cleaner's myself.
  5. Did you meet anybody last week? — Nobody.
  6. Both my friend and I have been learning English for two years but neither of us can speak well yet.
  7. I need another three days to collect all the information.
  8. We'll pay for ourselves.
  9. Neither he nor I am busy. We both can help you.
  10. Where are the others? Shall we wait for them?
  11. How many other dictionaries do you need?
  12. Nothing could stop him.
  13. Has any of you been to Spain?
  14. I painted the house myself.
  15. Either his friends or he himself has (have) seen this film.

## UNIT 23

### 23.1

1. good
2. fast
3. well-dressed
4. bitter
5. hard
6. easily
7. badly-planned
8. pale
9. unexpectedly
10. clear
11. quiet
12. late
13. well
14. perfect
15. badly

### 23.2

1. bad; hardly
2. beautifully; really good
3. fluently; accurate
4. good; impatient
5. wonderful; nice
6. absolutely; real
7. surprisingly; quickly
8. different; well
9. good; hard
10. slow; attentively

### 23.3

1. He is a really famous architect. It's strange that you don't know his name (... that his name is unknown to you.)
2. These flowers smell sweet and heavy. (These flowers have a sweet and heavy smell.) It's impossible to sleep in the room.
3. She is so tired that she can hardly move. In my opinion, she feels very bad. She looks pale.
4. The trip was well organized and we had a good time.
5. It's pleasant to deal with friendly people.

6. She is an unusually good assistant. She works hard and fast.
7. This magazine comes out daily. (This is a daily magazine.) It's always beautifully illustrated.
8. She looked at me happily and said, "It's real luck!"
9. His words "We should act fast but carefully" sounded unexpected.
10. One can hardly say that her English is good. She knows it badly.
11. She often chats with her friends in a lively manner. It seems to me she is always in a good mood.
12. Your son works carelessly, that's why he makes a lot of mistakes.

## UNIT 24

### 24.1

1. nicer — the nicest
2. cheaper — the cheapest
3. more expensive — the most expensive
4. worse — the worst
5. hollower — the hollowest
6. luckier — the luckiest
7. more wonderful — the most wonderful
8. shyer — the shyest
9. crueller — the cruellest
10. more attractive — the most attractive
11. more pleasant — the most pleasant
12. lower — the lowest
13. busier — the busiest
14. less — the least
15. more quiet — the most quiet
16. more interesting — the most interesting
17. lighter — the lightest
18. better — the best
19. more surprising — the most surprising
20. fewer — the fewest
21. more convenient — the most convenient
22. larger — the largest



23. neater — the neatest
24. simpler — the simplest
25. more intelligent — the most intelligent
26. more — the most
27. bitterer — the bitterest
28. smaller — the smallest
29. more boring — the most boring
30. heavier — the heaviest

**24.2**

1. Mark is shorter than Sam.
2. Mark has fewer children than Sam.
3. Sam has a larger flat than Mark.
4. Mark earns less money than Sam.
5. Sam is more handsome than Mark.
6. Sam speaks more languages than Mark.
7. Mark is less practical than Sam.
8. Sam is a better driver than Mark.
9. Mark is more experienced than Sam.

**24.3**

1. You know more than her (... than she does).
2. They are older than him (... than he is).
3. She is a better singer than me (... than I am).
4. He has less spare time than us (... than we have).
5. I read more interesting books than them (... than they do).

**24.4**

1. The plane is much faster than the train.
2. Northern Ireland is far smaller than Australia.
3. Are dogs much cleverer than cats?
4. Diamonds are far more expensive than rubies.
5. Discos are much noisier than cinemas.
6. Is speaking a foreign language much more useful than reading it?
7. The Mediterranean is far warmer than the Baltic Sea.
8. Football is much more dangerous than golf.

9. Are married women much happier than single women?
10. Brazilian shoes are much better than Russian shoes.

**24.5**

1. I believe this composition is as bad as that.
2. I believe this flat is as comfortable as that.
3. I believe this plan is as effective as that.
4. I believe this textbook is as good as that.
5. I believe this dress is as colourful as that.

**24.6**

1. This book isn't as boring as I expected.
2. He isn't as stupid as he can seem.
3. Mary and Charles don't have as many children as Rachel and Steve.
4. His answer at the exam wasn't as good as his friend's.
5. This test isn't as short as that.
6. My brother isn't as young as he looks.
7. Kate's room isn't as large as her sister's.
8. This information isn't as useless as that.
9. She doesn't spend as much time on cooking as her mother.
10. The Mercedes isn't as cheap as the Ford.

**24.7**

1. This is the most exciting book in his collection.
2. This is the highest mountain in the world.
3. He is the noisiest person at the party.
4. She is the best doctor I know.
5. This is the most beautiful park in the city.

**24.8**

1. This is one of the oldest cathedrals in the country.
2. This is one of the worst experiences in my life.
3. He is one of the most successful businessmen in this company.
4. This is one of the most powerful machines at the plant.
5. Monday is always one of the busiest days of the week.

**24.9**

1. The train is faster than the coach but the plane is the fastest.
2. Canada is bigger than the USA but Russia is the biggest.
3. German is more difficult than Spanish but Vietnamese is the most difficult.
4. Oranges are sweeter than mandarins but strawberries are the sweetest.
5. Detective stories are more frightening than biography novels but thrillers are the most frightening.

**24.10**

1. The more responsible you are, the fewer problems you get.
2. The more popular the person is, the less spare time he has.
3. The more cigarettes you smoke, the worse it is for your health.
4. The more modern the car (is), the more expensive it is.
5. The taller the person is, the thinner he usually is.
6. The harder your work is, the more tired you feel.
7. The more nervous you are, the more mistakes you make.
8. The larger the house (is), the more difficult it is to keep it tidy.
9. The longer the flight (is), the hungrier you feel.
10. The better dictionary you use, the better your knowledge is.

**24.11**

- 1** -----
1. She always buys only the most expensive clothes. — But they are also the best, aren't they?
  2. Which way to the beach is shorter: through the forest or through the field? The way through the field takes longer (more time), and besides it's much hotter in the field than in the forest.
  3. The less time I have, the more nervous I get.

4. This is one of the funniest episodes in the film.
5. Today's homework isn't as difficult as yesterday's.
6. This actor is much more talented than his partner.
7. What discovery do you think is the most important and famous in the world?
8. My younger son makes fewer mistakes in dictations than the others. His teacher says he is one of the most hard-working and cleverest pupils in the class.
9. The more work you have, the less time you have for your family.
10. Nick is much lazier than his friend Charles, though he is more gifted.

**2** -----

1. Is this exercise as large as that? — No, it's shorter, but much more difficult.
2. This is one of the oldest and smallest towns in Europe. Streets there are much narrower than in modern cities.
3. There is less information in this newspaper than in that one. It's not as interesting as that one.
4. Is it the worst news or is there any still worse?
5. The longer the report (is), the less interesting it is to listen to it
6. This summer is much hotter than the previous one. — It is, and there are fewer rains than last year.
7. Is Jack as old as Paul? — Yes, he is, but he is taller and seems much stronger than Paul.
8. Which is better: to teach or to study?
9. Are you busier now than in the morning? — No, I don't have as many things to do as in the morning.
10. This is one of the most beautiful songs of this singer. It's my favourite one.

## UNIT 25

### 25.1

#### 1 -----

1. elder
2. further
3. nearer
4. the oldest
5. the nearest; farther (further); the next
6. the latter
7. the next
8. the oldest
9. the latest
10. older

#### 2 -----

1. the last
2. elder
3. the farthest (the furthest); the nearest; farther (further)
4. the eldest
5. later
6. further
7. the latter
8. the latest
9. older
10. the next

### 25.2

#### 1 -----

1. The last question at the exam is often the most difficult.
2. The next stop is yours.
3. Could you call a bit later, please? He is busy now.
4. The nearest cinema is a ten-minute walk from here.
5. My wife has an elder brother. He is much older than her (than she is).
6. His latest article is on the same topic again, isn't it?
7. Is the secretary in the next room? — Yes, she is.

8. I like both Kevin and Phillip. The former is very polite and the latter is very handsome.
9. I don't know which theatre in Moscow is the oldest. And you?
10. He wants to enter another university to get further education.

#### 2 -----

1. The later you come, the worse.
2. William is the eldest of the three brothers.
3. Is there any other hospital nearer to the house than this one? — No, the others are much farther (further).
4. My friend isn't older than me (than I am).
5. This writer's latest play is quite popular with readers.
6. Was it the last time you saw him?
7. The teacher asked the student the question several times but the latter was silent.
8. The next time you come bring your sister.
9. Is your cousin older than you? — Yes, she is three years older than me (than I am).
10. My house is the farthest (the furthest) from the stop.

## UNIT 26

### 26.1

1. the farther
2. more slowly
3. fastest
4. well
5. more impatiently and (more) nervously
6. badly
7. the earlier; the sooner
8. more politely
9. most gently
10. harder

### 26.2

1. well
2. most calmly
3. angrier
4. more delicious

5. the less carefully; the worse
6. safer
7. quickly; easily
8. best
9. more pleasant
10. the most widely-used

**26.3**

1. Those who shout most loudly (of all) are often not the cleverest.
2. She laughs somewhat strangely. — She does, but her brother laughs even more strangely.
3. He writes French as badly as he speaks it.
4. The earlier you get up, the more easily you'll work.
5. I expect it least of all.
6. She doesn't treat people as patiently as I'd like her to.
7. My room is much more beautifully decorated for the holiday than my parents' room.
8. You can't draw as well as Walt. He draws best of all. (He draws better than anyone else.)
9. He usually listens to the teacher more attentively than the others.
10. The harder he works, the worse he sleeps.

**UNIT 27**

**27.1**

- 1** -----
1. This is one of the most interesting *programs* on TV.
  2. The *less* you know, the *better*.
  3. Pat is taller than *me* / than *I am*.
  4. Mike is not as quick as Paul.
  5. He is *three years older* than you.
  6. I tried *hard* but couldn't do anything.
  7. He spoke *more politely* than usual.
  8. Their house is *as modern* as ours.
  9. Let me know if you need *further* help.
  10. Brian is the *eldest* brother.

- 2** -----
1. He knows the lesson *better* than you.
  2. It's *nice* of you!

3. I'm *awfully* sorry!
4. He smiled at me in a *friendly way*.
5. The operation was more painful *than* I expected.
6. She sings *best* of all.
7. Is your sister *older* than you?
8. She receives as *many* letters as him.
9. Is it a *real* sapphire?
10. She looked *nervously* out of the window.
11. Be *quieter!*
12. It's much *farther* than that.
13. The dish smells *nice*.
14. I still feel *bad*.
15. He speaks *good* English.

**27.2**

1. more ... than
2. the
3. as (so) ... as
4. the more ... the
5. much (far) more ... than

**27.3**

1. as warmly as
2. the most frequent
3. incredibly; one of the most popular
4. more brightly
5. more dangerous
6. best; last
7. good; more fluently and clearly than
8. more heavily than; as strong as
9. the most complicated
10. the harder; the more successful
11. worst; the least interesting
12. more pleasant than
13. as indistinctly as
14. the slowest; the longer; the more impatient
15. more happily than; less difficult than

**27.4**

- 1** -----
1. He copes with the work worst of all. He is the laziest student.
  2. This writer is not as well-known as that but his latest work is a great success.

3. This is a really difficult exercise. The others are much easier than this one.
4. The shorter the poem (is), the easier it is to learn it.
5. Which is more useful: to walk or to jog?
6. I feel better now but it's still hard for me to work for a long time.
7. You must speak to people more politely, otherwise they'll think that you are badly brought up.
8. This is one of the stuffiest rooms in the office. I get awfully tired here.
9. Your task is to make as few mistakes as possible, but to finish as quickly as possible.
10. I can hardly catch up with you. Do you always walk so fast?

**2** -----

1. I wonder if there is anyone luckier than you are?
2. Children like singing but often do it badly.
3. Though this flat is smaller than mine, it's more comfortable and besides it's surprisingly cheap.
4. What do you think further events will be?
5. The nearer the office to the house, the less time the way takes.
6. My elder brother has two children. His son is two years older than his daughter.
7. Everybody admires her. Whatever she does, she does it wonderfully / perfectly, best of all (better than anyone else).
8. Both Ann and Kate are beautiful girls. The latter is married.
9. Is he a late-riser? — No, he gets up early, earlier than the rest of the family. He believes it's more practical and convenient.
10. The less advice she gives you, the better. Her advice is as useless as her help.
11. Let's discuss the next question. — Let's do it later. I have a terrible headache.
12. This is the most serious problem. We must discuss it as thoroughly as possible.
13. The fruit salad tastes wonderful / delicious, but it seems to me that it's better to put fewer apples there.

14. If you practise daily, you'll speak more quickly and more correctly.
15. Even if you are in a bad mood, you should treat clients in a friendlier way, you mustn't be so rude.

**UNIT 28****28.1**

1. She eats half a pound of sweets every day.
2. The children are playing ball in the yard.
3. They grow fruits and vegetables in the garden.
4. My friends have a large house in the country.
5. I left my pen in the classroom.
6. He writes a lot of letters every day.
7. They give parties every Friday.

**28.2**

1. Henry and Joy play chess together every other day.
2. Peter made some bad mistakes in his Russian test yesterday.
3. We saw the Turners at the cinema last night.
4. The chairman raised the question at the meeting several times.
5. She listens to the news on the radio every morning.
6. Tom does morning exercises in his room at seven o'clock.
7. Her Dad smokes a lot both at home and at work.

**28.3**

1. We discussed the problem in detail at Nick's place in the evening.
2. She went home unexpectedly after that.
3. He explained it to her carefully during their meeting at lunch.
4. Peter prefers to work alone in his study in the morning.
5. He arrived home safely at the weekend.
6. My mother-in-law works hard in the garden all summer.

7. He wrote something quickly on a piece of paper after their conversation.
8. The children always play noisily behind the house before supper.
9. They came to the party together at about nine o'clock.
10. She left for London secretly at night.

**28.4**

1. He can never do anything in time.
2. Mike is definitely the cleverest student.
3. They always take a walk before going to bed.
4. She doesn't usually behave so impatiently.
5. He sometimes talks nonsense.
6. They are also great friends.
7. You must never say it again.
8. We have seldom got much spare time.
9. We don't often see each other nowadays.
10. I'm probably wrong.
11. She usually gets good marks.
12. My friend can also play the piano.
13. She sometimes does extraordinary things.
14. The weather in England is never the same two days running.
15. Children must always go to bed in time.

**28.5**

1. delicious French strawberry ice-cream
2. a wonderful bright Persian silk carpet
3. a tall slim young girl
4. a beautiful old Indian legend
5. a charming tiny Swiss gold wrist watch
6. an ordinary green school bag
7. an unusual new brown Italian leather belt
8. a good light cold supper
9. a pretty small round tanned face
10. a popular thick old English school dictionary
11. a convenient new black plastic organizer
12. massive light-brown Malaysian wooden chairs
13. a big new white German washing machine
14. a well-known old Russian ballet
15. a fantastic tall ancient dim Italian mirror

**28.6**

**1** -----

1. **RIGHT**
2. He planned *the murder carefully* beforehand.
3. They went *on a picnic with the Smiths* on Sunday.
4. You *must also* know it.
5. **RIGHT**
6. **RIGHT**
7. He is a *handsome tall* young man.
8. They grow aromatic big *yellow garden* flowers.
9. **RIGHT**
10. He knew *nothing then*.

**2** -----

1. She *is sometimes* too talkative.
2. She goes shopping *with pleasure* on Sunday.
3. They met *on board a ship* in summer.
4. She is a sociable *young French* girl.
5. **RIGHT**
6. Tom *is hardly* nervous.
7. **RIGHT**
8. They spend *almost every weekend* in the country.
9. **RIGHT**
10. He learns *English words thoroughly* every day.
11. I'd like to buy *elegant new Italian leather* shoes.
12. He also *plays chess very well*.
13. **RIGHT**
14. The boss had to go *somewhere unexpectedly* after lunch.
15. **RIGHT**

**28.7**

**1** -----

1. I like this soft French flower body lotion very much.
2. She works best in the morning.
3. These flowers smell strong in the evening.

4. Do you always come to work in time?
5. We must buy big new bookshelves.
6. She has a lot of big and small bright soft toys.
7. He usually returns home early.
8. Would you like to go to the cinema with me on Sunday?
9. I like your new red woolen sweater.
10. Exercises are sometimes very difficult, aren't they?
11. They spend weekends in the country in summer.
12. She seldom buys perfume.
13. Our train arrives in St. Petersburg early in the morning.
14. She also spends a lot of time on her studies.
15. He answered very badly at the exam the day before yesterday.

## UNIT 29

### 29.1

1. -----  
1. Does Tom have a large country-house?  
Tom doesn't have a large country-house.
2. Do they usually have lunch at one o'clock?  
They don't usually have lunch at one o'clock.
3. Has Mary got two brothers?  
Mary hasn't got two brothers.
4. Do you have a shower every morning?  
I don't have a shower every morning.
5. Have Helen and John got a three-room flat?  
Helen and John haven't got a three-room flat.
6. Has little Ben got a bicycle?  
Little Ben hasn't got a bicycle.
7. Does Kate always have tea for breakfast?  
Kate doesn't always have tea for breakfast.
8. Does your Mum usually have a holiday in summer?  
My Mum doesn't usually have a holiday in summer.

9. Has the child got coloured pencils?  
The child hasn't got coloured pencils.
10. Does George have a family of his own?  
George doesn't have a family of his own.

### 29.2

1. Does she have ... ? (Has she got ... ?)
2. had
3. doesn't have (hasn't got)
4. do you have
5. won't have
6. have
7. didn't have
8. haven't got (don't have)
9. having
10. don't have (haven't got)
11. will have
12. Does their daughter have ... ? (Has their daughter got ... ?)
13. didn't have
14. has (has got)
15. Did you have ... ?

### 29.3

1. -----  
1. I didn't have any drink at lunch as I have a terrible headache.
2. Have you got a camera? Let me take a picture of you.
3. I won't have my birthday party as I'm leaving.
4. Has Tom got a large family? (Does Tom have a large family?) — Yes, he has (has got) a brother and two sisters.
5. I can't get Kate on the phone. — I had a chat with her only yesterday.
6. Mr. Brown is very busy, he doesn't have (hasn't got) time to speak to you now.
7. Did you have a good walk yesterday?  
— Oh yes, the weather was beautiful.
8. Do you have many classes on Wednesday?  
— Three or four lectures usually.
9. She had no plants at home and I didn't like it.
10. There is no fresh bread in this shop. Let's go to another one.

**2**

1. Have you got (Do you have) a room of your own in your new flat? — Oh, yes I have, and it's quite large.
2. Where can I find Mr. Pitt? — He is out. He is having a business lunch with a client.
3. If we have a party on Saturday, the guests won't leave early. They won't have to get up early on Sunday.
4. Do you have (Have you got) a brother or a sister? — I have an elder brother.
5. I didn't have time even for a cup of coffee this morning. That's why I'm so sleepy.
6. Did you have a good flight? — Yes, thanks.
7. I don't have the slightest idea what you are talking about.
8. What's the matter? You're so excited! — I'm having my first date tonight.
9. Haven't you ever had a toothache?
10. Mark was just having his last cigarette before going to bed when suddenly there was a knock at the door.

**UNIT 30**

**30.1**

1. Are John and Jill married?
2. Would you like to go for a walk?
3. Is Victor sometimes late for classes?
4. Does Alice know the language very well?
5. Do the brothers watch TV every evening?
6. Does Rachel have very many friends in Paris?
7. Is her elder brother a second-year student?
8. Would Jane like to spend a holiday abroad?
9. Do Paul's friends agree with him?
10. Has Irene's husband got an expensive car?

**30.2**

1. Does
2. Do
3. Is
4. Would

5. Are

6. Has

7. Are

8. Does

9. Am

10. Do

**30.3**

1. Yes, I would.
2. Yes, he is.
3. Yes, I am.
4. Yes, she does.
5. Yes, I have.
6. Yes, they do.
7. Yes, he is.
8. Yes, he does.
9. Yes, I would.
10. Yes, they are.

**30.4**

1. No, I'm not.
2. No, she doesn't.
3. No, he isn't.
4. No, I wouldn't.
5. No, they don't.
6. No, I haven't.
7. No, it isn't.
8. No, she doesn't.
9. No, you aren't.
10. No, they wouldn't.

**30.5**

1. Isn't he here yet?
2. Doesn't he know English?
3. Don't they live together?
4. Doesn't he have an elder brother?
5. Aren't you a student now?
6. Hasn't she got any?
7. Don't you know the rules?
8. Aren't they yours?
9. Doesn't he have a headache?
10. Doesn't your wife cook well?



**30.6**

1. No, it isn't.
2. No, I don't.
3. But they are.
4. No, they aren't.
5. Yes, he does. (But he does.)
6. No, she isn't.
7. But I do. (Of course, I do.)
8. Yes, I have.
9. But I am.
10. No, he doesn't.

**30.7**

1. Don't you know the rule? — No, I don't.
2. Have you got this book? — No, I haven't.
3. Don't you like this music? — But I do.
4. Isn't David your friend? — Of course, he is.
5. Do you agree with me? — Yes, I do.
6. Don't you have spare time at all?  
— But I do.
7. Aren't you the manager? — No, I am not.
8. Do you remember this song? — Yes, I do.
9. Doesn't he play the guitar?  
— No, he doesn't.
10. Isn't he at home? — Yes, he is. (But he is.)

**30.8**

1. Does he or his friend have a very interesting book?
2. Are they in Spain or in France now?
3. Does your Dad read newspapers in the evening or in the morning?
4. Does Jane like apple or orange juice?
5. Is the box light or heavy?
6. Have you or has your friend got two children?
7. Are you sometimes or often late for classes?
8. Does John make few or many mistakes in his tests?
9. Is Helen their cousin or their niece?
10. Is Robert or are his friends fond of reading?

**30.9**

- 1** -----
1. Do you work late? — No, I finish at six.
  2. Do you have plans for the future?  
— Yes, I want to be a doctor.

3. Doesn't he live here? — No, he doesn't.
4. Are they happy together? — I think they are.
5. Would you like to come at five or at six? — I'd like to come after six.
6. Hasn't he got a car? — Yes, he has. He is a good driver.
7. Do you go to the country in summer? — Yes, we do.
8. Is your brother married? — Not yet. (No, he isn't.)
9. Do they get up early or late? — Quite early, at seven.
10. Do you play chess? — Yes, I do.

- 2** -----
1. Am I late? — Yes, you are a little.
  2. Would you like to meet my friend? — Don't I know her?
  3. Does your Dad go to work by car or by underground? — By underground.
  4. Does your sister speak Spanish? — No, she learns German.
  5. Doesn't your mother help you? — But she does.
  6. Are you ill? — Yes, I feel unwell (bad).
  7. Does he or do his parents want to move to another city (town)? — His parents do.
  8. Is he present at the lesson? — No, he isn't. He is ill.
  9. Do her relatives have a country-house?  
— As far as I know, they don't.
  10. Isn't he your boss? — Yes, he is.

- 3** -----
1. Is it your or your sister's dress?
  2. Have you got (Do you have) any questions?  
— No, thanks, everything is clear.
  3. Are you hungry? — Yes, I am.
  4. Does he study languages or history?
  5. Am I wrong? — I'm afraid you are.
  6. Do you have tea or coffee for breakfast?  
— I prefer tea.
  7. Are you and Nick friends? — Yes, we are great friends.
  8. Doesn't he have any relatives at all?  
— As far as I know, he doesn't.
  9. Is your brother interested in history?
  10. Do you or does your mother make breakfast? — Usually my Mum does.

## UNIT 31

### 31.1

1. ... were you?
2. ... can't he?
3. ... isn't she?
4. ... do you?
5. ... am I?
6. ... shall we?
7. ... haven't they?
8. ... aren't they?
9. ... did she?
10. ... will you?
11. ... are we?
12. ... do they?
13. ... don't they?
14. ... aren't I?
15. ... can he?
16. ... will you?
17. ... does she?
18. ... don't they?
19. ... don't we?
20. ... was he?
21. ... aren't you?
22. ... don't I?
23. ... doesn't she?
24. ... will you?

### 31.2

1. No, I'm not.
2. Yes, they do.
3. Yes, he is.
4. Yes, they do.
5. No, she doesn't.

### 31.3

1. No, she doesn't.
2. But they can.
3. No, he isn't.
4. Yes, we have.
5. But you are.

### 31.4

1. You can't promise me anything, can you? — No, I can't.
2. The weather is nice today, isn't it? — Yes, it is.

3. Don't be so impatient, will you?
4. They've got a large TV set, haven't they? — Yes, they have.
5. We had a good time yesterday, didn't we?
6. Everybody is pleased, aren't they? — I think they are.
7. He is absent today, isn't he? — No, he isn't. He is present.
8. I'm right, aren't I? — I think you aren't.
9. Let's ask him for advice, shall we?
10. She doesn't cook very well, does she? — Why? But she does.

## UNIT 32

### 32.1

1. How do you make this cake?
2. Why aren't the children in bed yet?
3. Where does Mr. Brown work?
4. How long does this film last?
5. When does the manager have time for a short rest?
6. What have you got in this parcel?
7. Who does the teacher want to answer this question?
8. How many are you in the family?
9. Where is the chemist's?
10. What does this word mean?
11. How often do your children go for a walk in this park?
12. Why does he get so many bad marks?
13. Where would your daughter like to study?
14. What does his son want to be?
15. When do you have lunch?

### 32.2

1. Who does Kate usually have dinner with?
2. Who does Tom never think of?
3. Who must you apologize to?
4. Who is Vera waiting for?
5. What does Nick like to listen to?
6. Who do Mr. and Mrs. Foster often go out with?

7. What does Anna's daughter dream of?
8. What is Robert interested in?
9. Who does she never smile at?
10. What are you looking for?
11. What is this book about?
12. Who does Rachel write letters to?
13. Who is this novel written by?
14. What are you looking forward to?
15. What do you always thank people for?

**32.3**

- 1** -----
1. What does Mr. Smith want?
  2. When do food shops in London close early?
  3. What does George pay much money for?
  4. How does Mr. Bennett get to work?
  5. Where does William want to take his family this summer?
  6. How does Mary always do her work?
  7. How much sugar do you need to make this cake?
  8. Whose book is it?
  9. What / What game do the boys often play in the evening?
  10. When / What time does Mr. Brown usually have lunch?

- 2** -----
1. Where does Robert learn French?
  2. How many children does your sister have?
  3. Who would you like to come to your birthday party?
  4. How long does it usually take you to clean the flat?
  5. Which bag do you like most of all?
  6. Why is he absent from the lesson?
  7. Who do you go out on Sunday with?
  8. Whose exercise-books are these?
  9. How many pages a day does Nick read?
  10. What kind of jam have you got?

**32.4**

- 1** -----
1. Who is that man (gentleman)?
  2. What is he?

- 2** -----
1. What is her husband?
  2. What is he like?
  3. And what does he look like?

**32.5**

1. How long does it take to get by train from Moscow to St. Petersburg?
2. How long does it take to get on foot from your house to the nearest shop?
3. How long does it take to get by plane from Moscow to London?
4. How long does it take to get by car from your country house to Moscow?
5. How long does it take to get by plane from Glasgow to Edinburgh?
6. How long does it take to get by bus from your house to the nearest underground station?
7. How long does it take to get by train from France to England?
8. How long does it take to get by bicycle from your house to the park?
9. How long does it take to get by underground from your house to your friend's place?
10. How long does it take to get by car from your place to the airport?

**32.6**

1. How long does it take you to do your homework? — It takes me about two or three hours to do it.
2. How long does it take to learn to drive? — It takes about three months to learn to drive.
3. How long does it take your mother to do the shopping? — It takes her about an hour and a half to do the shopping.
4. How long does it take your father to read a newspaper? — It takes him about half an hour to read it.
5. How long does it take your friend to get to your place? — It takes her about forty minutes to get to my place.
6. How long does it take your Granny to make a birthday cake? — It takes her about two hours to make it.

7. How long does it take your parents to redecorate their flat? — It takes them about a month to do it.
8. How long does it take to study to be a teacher in your country? — It takes five years to study to be a teacher in my country.
9. How long does it take you to read a hundred pages? — It takes me about an hour to read a hundred pages.
10. How long does it take you to clean your room? — It takes me about twenty minutes to clean my room.

### 32.7

#### 1 -----

1. What is your Dad?
2. How much time does it take you to prepare everything necessary?
3. Where does your niece study?
4. What language would you like to study?
5. Who is this letter from?
6. What are you tired of?
7. How much work have you got today?
8. What does Frank's Mum look like?
9. How do you want to help him?
10. Why is she late?

#### 2 -----

1. Whose children are these?
2. How many are they in the family?
3. Where is your new student from?
4. What is your cousin like?
5. Who is that woman? — This is Mrs. Arnold. She is your new teacher.
6. When is your sister's birthday?
7. How long does it take to get from here to the theatre?
8. Which of your sisters is Tom in love with?
9. Where do they usually go in summer?
10. What do you need his telephone number for?

#### 3 -----

1. What questions have you got (do you have)?
2. What kind of present would you like for your birthday?

3. How much does this computer cost?
4. Where do his parents live?
5. Who does he want to see?
6. What is this building famous for?
7. What does your sister's husband look like?
8. How many brothers and sisters does she have?
9. Who do you always wait here for at this time?
10. What does this word mean?

## UNIT 33

### 33.1

1. Who comes home from school at about four? — The children do.
2. Whose friend is very fond of playing tennis? — My friend is.
3. Which bag is a nice colour? — This bag is.
4. Who has got many friends? — Tom has.
5. Which of you wants to know more about it? — All of us do.
6. What costs £200? — The coat does.
7. Who is a hairdresser? — Kate is.
8. What kind of stories may be very intriguing? — Detective stories may.
9. Who wants him to become a doctor? — His parents do.
10. Which of them is a teacher? — Both of them are.
11. Whose latest book is a great success? — His book is.
12. Who would like to visit Paris? — Sandy would.
13. Who is a stranger here? — I am.

### 33.2

1. Who knows the answer to this question?
2. Whose Mum makes delicious cakes?
3. What would you like to buy?
4. What is in her bag?
5. What kind of job has Nick's cousin got?
6. Whose friends are fond of sports?
7. Which of us is responsible for it?

8. What do you have for me?
9. Who do you often see at the bus stop?
10. Who always does his homework in time?
11. What does Luke always do in time?
12. Who would like you to go on holiday with her?
13. Which bag is more expensive?
14. What is very hard?

**33.3**

1. Who does your friend like?
2. Who likes your friend?
3. Which of these writers is well-known?  
— I think, both are.
4. Whose brother is married to Ann?  
— Maggy's brother is.
5. What do you want (need)?
6. What happened to you yesterday?
7. Which student has an excellent mark?  
— Walter does.
8. Who would you like to invite to your birthday party?
9. Who in your family has breakfast early?  
— My Dad does.
10. Which of them knows you? — These two girls do.

**UNIT 34****34.1**

1. Do you know if (whether) the theatre is far from the underground station?
2. Do you know if Sam has an elder sister?
3. Do you know if they have got a country-house?
4. Do you know if their children go to school yet?
5. Do you know if Frank and Eve are married?

**34.2**

1. I don't know why they are late.
2. Do you know how long it takes to get there?
3. I don't remember when the train arrives.

4. Do you know where Emm is?
5. I don't know what it means.

**34.3**

1. I don't know if they are well-read.
2. I know where George's mother works.
3. I wonder why he doesn't do his work properly.
4. Do you know if Kate has got Nick's address?
5. I don't know how many children the Turners have.
6. Can you tell me when the lesson begins?
7. I don't remember which of them is older.
8. Do you know if he is a professional sportsman?
9. I wonder if they have any problems with their car.
10. I know who he wants to marry.

**34.4**

1. Could you tell me where the library is?
2. Do you remember when the film begins?
3. Do you know why they quarrel so often?
4. I wonder if he remembers about my birthday.
5. Tell me what I must do.
6. I don't know when they begin work.
7. Do you know if he has this book?
8. I wonder how much such a house costs.
9. I don't remember how long it takes to get to Berlin.
10. I don't know if she is really a good doctor.

**UNIT 35****35.1**

1. -----  
1. Do you think they are great friends?
2. Do you think her daughter helps her about the house?
3. Do you think they often go out together?
4. Do you think he is keen on art?

5. Do you think they have got much experience?
6. Do you think I am late?
7. Do you think Mr. Brown has a family of his own?
8. Do you think he would like to see this picture?
9. Do you think the problem is serious?
10. Do you think they need our help?

**2** -----

1. What do you think his sister looks like?
2. How long do you think it takes him to do the home-task?
3. Why do you think the children are so excited?
4. Whose book do you think it is?
5. How much time do you think we've got?
6. Who do you think she would like to ask for help?
7. When do you think her husband returns from work?
8. How many rooms do you think they have in their house?
9. Where do you think the children are?
10. What do you think his wife is?

**35.2**

1. What do you think they are afraid of?
2. Do you think this computer is good?
3. Which of them do you think knows English better?
4. What do you think he is like?
5. Who do you think this woman is?
6. Do you think they are in love with each other?
7. Do you think he has got a car?
8. How long do you think it takes to get to the centre?
9. Where do you think these people are from?
10. Why do you think she is upset?
11. Do you think she plays the piano well?
12. Do you think I'm right?
13. What do you think he is?
14. Whose idea do you think it is?
15. Where do you think they would like to go for their vacation?

**UNIT 36**

**36.1**

1. How long
2. What kind of
3. What
4. Whose
5. What
6. What
7. Where
8. Which
9. Who
10. Who
11. How many
12. When
13. How
14. Why
15. What

**36.2**

1. What are you good at?
2. Don't you remember me?
3. Are Kate and Mary at home?
4. What does Sarah look like?
5. Who is that girl?
6. Do they want to go to the seaside?
7. How old is Robert and Brenda's son?
8. Does she know about it?
9. What's the time?
10. Is it time to go?

**36.3**

1. How much time do you think it takes?
2. When do you think is the next plane to New York?
3. Why do you think she is worried?
4. Which book do you think is his?
5. What do you think shows that something is wrong?
6. How long do you think it can take him to find everything out?
7. Where do you think they are?
8. Who do you think is wrong?
9. What do you think she is?
10. Whose papers do you think these are?

**36.4**

1. I'm older than you, *aren't I?*
2. Do you or *does* your brother help your mother to do the shopping?
3. *Do* you agree with me?
4. *Yes*, he *does*. / *No*, he *doesn't*.
5. What *does* this expression *mean*?
6. How long *does* it *take* to get to Australia?
7. Let's wash the car together, *shall* we?
8. *Does* she still have a cold?
9. Who *takes* you to school?
10. *Do* you *think* she *will like* my present?
11. Tell me where your new friend *lives*.
12. They never get bad marks, *do* they?
13. *Has* he *got* much money?
14. *What* does his wife look like?
15. Buy some bread, *will* you?

**36.5**

1. Could you tell me where Green Street is?
2. I wonder if / whether David knows a foreign language.
3. Do you know how many classes Chris has (got) today?
4. I don't know who can help us.
5. I can't remember if / whether Sam's sister is younger or older than him.

**36.6**

- 1** -----
1. Where do you think he can be?
  2. Is the weather sunny or rainy today?
  3. Don't say it again, will you?
  4. How many families live on this floor? — As far as I know, three do.
  5. Do you know how much this picture costs?
  6. What is your new assistant like? — He is very responsible and attentive.
  7. Don't you know his name? — No, I see him for the first time.
  8. Let's visit him, shall we?
  9. I wonder if he is doing well in his studies.
  10. Whose money is it? Why is it here?

**2** -----

1. How long does it take to read this book?
2. Which of the teachers has the most interesting lesson? — Mrs. Slater does.
3. Ask them what he is.
4. What does the baby want? — He is thirsty.
5. They haven't got any children yet, have they? — No, they haven't.
6. Do you think the underground station is far from here? — No, it's quite near.
7. Who would you like to dance with?
8. What colour is your baby's hair?
9. I wonder which of them is right.
10. Now I'm too thin, aren't I?
11. What makes you laugh so much every time you see him?
12. What do you prefer to eat meat with?
13. What does your new English teacher look like?
14. What do you think she would like to get as a present for her birthday?
15. Who needs help? — We do.

**UNIT 37****37.1**

1. there will be
2. there are
3. there weren't
4. will there be
5. there won't be
6. was there
7. there wasn't
8. will there be
9. were there
10. there are
11. there was
12. will there be, there won't
13. is there, there is
14. were there
15. there was

**37.2**

1. No, they aren't.
2. No, there aren't.
3. Yes, they were.
4. Yes, there were.
5. No, they weren't.
6. No, there weren't.
7. Yes, they are.
8. Yes, there are.

**37.3**

**1** -----

1. There is one new house and a lot of old houses in this street.
2. There were a lot of people at the bus stop. They were waiting for the bus.
3. There was too little money in my purse.
4. There will be an interesting programme on TV on Thursday.
5. Is the traffic in this street always heavy?
6. There was nothing in the box. It was empty.
7. Is there a car park anywhere here?  
— Yes, there is. It is behind that house.
8. How many stamps will there be in your collection if you buy this one?  
— There won't be many.
9. The dictionary is on the shelf. Take it.  
— But there are two dictionaries on the shelf. Which one shall I take?
10. Are there any Italian dishes on the menu?  
— Unfortunately, there aren't.

**2** -----

1. There isn't much information about Brazil in this book.
2. Are there any interesting articles in this newspaper? — Yes, there is a very interesting article on page three.
3. Where is your telephone? — The telephone is in the living-room. You may use it.
4. Why are there so many plates on the table? Are we having any guests to dinner?
5. There wasn't enough paint and I couldn't finish my work.
6. What is there in your room? — There is a bed, a wardrobe and some other furniture there.

7. There isn't enough cloth here to make a long dress.
8. There won't be any further discussion. (There will be no further discussion).
9. How much fuel is there in the tank?  
— There is enough fuel there.
10. Are they tourists? — Yes, they are. There are always a lot of tourists here in May.

**UNIT 38**

**38.1**

**a)** -----

1. so
2. so
3. such
4. so
5. so
6. such
7. so
8. such
9. how
10. how
11. what
12. how
13. what
14. how
15. what
16. what

**b)** -----

1. such
2. such a
3. what a
4. what
5. such a
6. what a
7. what
8. such
9. what
10. such
11. so



12. how
13. how
14. so
15. how
16. so
17. so
18. how
19. so
20. how

**c)** -----

1. what a
2. how
3. such a
4. how
5. such
6. how
7. what
8. such an
9. so
10. how
11. what a
12. how

**38.2**

1. What a bad plan it is!
2. He is so nervous!
3. She has such beautiful hair!
4. How happy they are!
5. He looked so sadly at me!
6. What hot coffee it is!
7. This is such important news!
8. How cheaply he sold the house!
9. The situation is so difficult!
10. What useful advice it is!
11. How easily he coped with the task!
12. This is such important information!

**UNIT 39****39.1**

[lʊks], [ˈdresɪz], [ˈoʊpɪnz], [aːsks], [plænz], [fɪlz],  
[kaʊnts], [siːmz], [ˈfɪnɪʃɪz], [heɪts], [pæks], [ˈkɒpɪz],  
[ˈvɪzɪts], [ˈtiːtʃɪz], [fɪlz], [ˈkləʊzɪz], [faɪndz], [ˈaːnsəz],  
[ˈfetʃɪz], [kraɪz], [ˈluːzɪz]

**39.2**

1. Nick wants to study German.
2. Mary refuses to help us.
3. My child studies hard.
4. This student speaks English fluently.
5. She knows the right answer.
6. My friend always tells the truth.
7. This plane flies from London to Madrid.
8. His father makes a lot of money.
9. This book gives a lot of information.
10. Mr. Brown teaches History.

**39.3**

1. Snow doesn't melt in winter. It melts in spring.
2. Dolphins don't live in forests. They live in seas and oceans.
3. The Sun doesn't go round the Earth. The Earth goes round the Sun.
4. Spring doesn't come after autumn. It comes after winter.
5. The Japanese don't live in the South. They live in the East.

**39.4**

1. — Do you get up early?  
— Yes, I usually (always, often) get up early.  
/ No, I never (seldom) get up early.
2. — Does your friend phone you on his (her) day off?  
— Yes, he (she) sometimes (usually, always, often) phones me on his (her) day off.  
— No, he (she) never (seldom) phones ...
3. — Do you help your mother to do the shopping?

- Yes, I always (often, usually, sometimes) help my mother to do the shopping.  
— No, I seldom (never) help ...
4. — Do your parents go on holiday together?  
— Yes, they often (always, usually) go on holiday together.  
— No, they never (seldom) go ...
5. — Does your father go fishing at the weekend?  
— Yes, he sometimes (often) goes fishing at the weekend.  
— No, he never goes ...
6. — Do you quarrel with your friends?  
— Yes, I sometimes (often) quarrel with my friends.  
— No, I never (seldom) quarrel with my friends.
7. — Do you visit your grandparents?  
— Yes, I sometimes (often) visit my grandparents. / No, I seldom (never) visit ...
8. — Does your mother cook delicious dinners?  
— Yes, she often (usually, sometimes, always) cooks delicious dinners.  
— No, she never (seldom) cooks...
9. — Does your friend help you with your homework?  
— Yes, he often (sometimes, usually, always) helps me with my homework.  
— No, he never (seldom) helps ...
10. — Do you have nightmares?  
— Yes, I sometimes (often) have nightmares.  
— No, I never (seldom) have nightmares.

## UNIT 40

### 40.1

1. isn't studying; is listening
2. aren't working; are walking
3. isn't giving; is watching
4. am not driving; am lying
5. isn't writing; are having

### 40.2

1. I am not waiting for a bus.
2. I am practising English grammar.
3. My teacher is (isn't) listening to me.
4. Leaves are (aren't) falling from trees.
5. I am not watching TV.
6. I am sitting on a chair.
7. I am thinking hard.
8. My classmates are doing this exercise too. / My classmates aren't doing this exercise.
9. It is (isn't) raining heavily.
10. I am not having tea with my friends.

### 40.3

1. are you wearing; am going
2. are sleeping
3. am preparing
4. are always coming
5. is returning ... , isn't she?
6. isn't looking
7. are they working at; are making
8. am moving; aren't doing
9. is spending; is he staying?
10. are you leaving?; is still considering

## UNIT 41

### 41.1

1. are you waiting; are going
2. don't understand; listen; say; aren't listening
3. are you doing; am waiting; don't you know; doesn't work
4. are looking; belongs; are just exhibiting
5. is constantly throwing; puts
6. do you see; does it say
7. is still thinking
8. are smoking; don't you know; smoke
9. are tasting; tastes
10. is having; returns
11. need; has; is hardly breathing
12. is coming; do you know; calls
13. are you putting; look; match

14. are reading; don't believe; see
15. are having; are talking

**41.2**

1. What are you doing tonight? — Nothing special. Why? — Look, I'm going to a concert and I have a spare ticket. Would you like to come? — With pleasure!
2. You are always closing windows! How can you work in such a stuffy room? — But I feel cold!
3. What are you cooking? It smells so delicious! — It's a secret. I'm trying a new recipe.
4. What do you think this man needs? — I don't (can't) understand. He is making gestures but he isn't saying a word.
5. Why are you looking through the book? Are you looking for anything? — I'm not looking it through, I'm reading it. — Do you always read so fast (quickly)?
6. I usually work on Friday but this Friday is a holiday, that's why I'm walking in the park.
7. You are wet all over! Is it still raining? — It is, and it's getting colder and colder.
8. I'm seeing my editor tomorrow. — Are you working at a new book? — Yes, I am, and he wants me to sign a new contract.
9. I wonder if it ever snows in Brazil.
10. I love this song! But this is some new version. Who is singing?
11. Do you believe me now? — No, I don't. It still seems to me that you are lying to me.
12. Are you going to the theatre again? — What do you mean by "again"? I really go to the theatre quite often but why does it surprise you?
13. Why are you having dinner so early? It's only six o'clock!

**UNIT 42****42.1**

1. won't refuse
2. will celebrate
3. will he show

4. will be
5. will never forget
6. will there be

**42.2**

1. will agree; knows
2. won't recognize; wear
3. will be; see
4. apologize; will feel
5. will recover
6. will lay; dress
7. will be
8. won't continue; calm down
9. will return; finish
10. have
11. see; will be
12. will be; comes
13. will catch; leaves
14. will try; will publish
15. is; will call

**42.3**

1. He won't pass the exam unless you help him to prepare for it.
2. As soon as the guests are here, we'll tell them the news.
3. When will you know the results? — When the teacher checks our papers.
4. I wonder if John will join us when we tell him about the trip.
5. Before the child goes to sleep, his Mum will bathe him.
6. In case he isn't at home, I'll call on him later.
7. I have no idea when the next meeting will take place.
8. After the film is over we'll go for a walk.
9. If the weather is good, we'll go to the beach.
10. I hope that while I am asleep (am sleeping) the temperature will fall down.
11. Please, find out if they will go to the theatre with us.
12. I won't buy anything until I save a little money.
13. He says that when he returns from his holiday he will give a party.

14. I'll let you know as soon as everything is ready.
15. While it rains (is raining) I'll read or watch TV.
16. I'll wait until you return.
17. I'm not sure if he will write to me but if he writes, I'll certainly answer.
18. It seems to me that if we go on holiday together we'll have a good time.

## UNIT 43

### 43.1

1. 2
2. 1
3. 3
4. 2
5. 2
6. 1
7. 1
8. 3
9. 2
10. 3
11. 1
12. 3
13. 2
14. 3

### 43.2

1. I'm afraid they won't believe us. — Let them do what they want. I'm not going to prove them anything.
2. I think I'll buy this book as a present for my friend. I'm going to her birthday party tomorrow.
3. When does the film start? — At 5. — I won't be able to go then. My classes finish only at 6.
4. They are leaving by the 8 o'clock train. Then they'll be at the seaside already in the afternoon.
5. In summer days will become longer and nights will become shorter.

6. Don't forget your umbrella. It's going to rain.
7. Mary is bringing her new boy-friend to the party. — Really? Do you think he will like our company?

## UNIT 44

### 44.1

[krí'eitid], [mist], [ˈstʌdid ], [fild], [lʊkt], [feintid], [wɒt], [ˈa:nsəd], [fəʊnd], [ˈvɪzɪtɪd], [ˈsi:md], [ˈkləʊzd], [ˈəʊpənd ], [ˈheitid ], [laikt], [dɪˈvaɪdɪd], [ˈfɪtɪd], [ɪksˈpleɪnd], [kraɪd], [tʌtʃ], [steɪd]

### 44.2

1. I had (didn't have) classes till three yesterday.
2. My mother went (didn't go) shopping after work yesterday.
3. My friend phoned (didn't phone) me last night.
4. I got up (didn't get up) early yesterday morning.
5. It was (wasn't) my day off.
6. I saw (didn't see) a film at the cinema yesterday.
7. My mother made (didn't make) a delicious dinner yesterday.
8. My friend invited (didn't invite) me to a party yesterday.
9. There was an interesting show on TV yesterday. / There wasn't any interesting show on TV yesterday.
10. My parents planned their holiday yesterday.

### 44.3

1. How many times did Lucy call you last week?
2. When was he born?
3. Who did you write a letter in the morning?
4. Who broke that cup the other day?
5. Where did they go for the weekend?
6. What was the weather like on Sunday?
7. How long did it take you to read that article in yesterday's newspaper?

## UNIT 45

8. What was there in the criminal's bag?
9. Did you speak to Mr. Nickson on Tuesday?
10. Who did Nelly dance with at the party?

### 44.4

1. We met (got acquainted) five years ago.
2. When did he leave?
3. How many rooms were there in your old flat?
4. It was my friend's birthday the other day and she gave a wonderful party.
5. Why didn't you tell me the truth at once?
6. I didn't see him yesterday. — He wasn't at work the day before yesterday either.
7. Nick, you were absent last time. Were you ill? — Yes, I didn't feel well. (Yes, I felt bad.)
8. I used to read this book in English. I remember it was quite interesting.
9. When were you in the country last? — It was very long ago.

## UNIT 45

### 45.1

#### 1

1. This is the most difficult exam I've ever taken.
2. This is the most wonderful present I've ever got.
3. This is the funniest joke I've ever heard.
4. This is the most hard-working person I've ever met.
5. This is the best friend I've ever had.

#### 2

1. — Have you ever tried speaking Chinese?  
— No, I've never tried speaking Chinese.
2. — Have you ever driven a car?  
— Yes, I've driven a car several times.
3. — Have you ever broken your arm?  
— Yes, I have once broken my arm.
4. — Have you ever got letters from abroad?  
— No, I've never got letters from abroad.
5. — Have you ever learnt poems by heart?  
— Yes, I have learnt poems by heart many times.

#### 3

1. — Have you ever been to the Historic Museum? — Yes, I have been to the Historic Museum once.
2. — Have you ever been to Australia?  
— No, I've never been to Australia.
3. — Have you ever been to the Zoo?  
— Yes, I've been to the Zoo three times.
4. — Have you ever been to a birthday party?  
— Yes, I've been to birthday parties many times.
5. — Have you ever been to the Bolshoy Theatre? — No, I've never been to the Bolshoy Theatre.

#### 4

1. It's the second time I've consulted this doctor.
2. It's not the first time you've made this mistake.
3. Is it the first time she has lied to you?
4. It's the third time the child has fallen ill this year.
5. Is it the first time they have helped you?

### 45.2

1. No, I haven't learnt all of them yet.
2. Yes, I've already done lots of them.
3. Yes, I've already answered them.
4. No, I haven't learnt everything so far.
5. Yes, I've just finished it.

### 45.3

1. My mother has done the shopping today. / My mother hasn't done any shopping today.
2. I've read an exciting book this summer. / I haven't read any exciting book this summer.
3. My friend has / hasn't caught cold this month.
4. I've / haven't visited my grandparents this week.
5. I've made some progress in English this year. / I haven't made any progress in English this year.

## 45.4

## 1 -----

1. Have you ever been
2. have argued
3. have heard; haven't read
4. have already finished
5. have you been; have been
6. have ever had
7. have been; haven't even watched
8. hasn't woken up
9. have never seen
10. have just heard

## 2 -----

1. have spoken
2. haven't eaten
3. Have you been; have been
4. have sold
5. has left
6. haven't you got
7. have bought
8. have already told
9. haven't cleared up
10. have you had

## 3 -----

1. have you ever been
2. has happened; have lost
3. has got; has never been
4. have taken
5. have just explained
6. have drunk
7. Has your Dad returned
8. has ever had
9. has grown
10. Have you prepared

## 45.5

1. Have you ever been *to* the Tretyakov Gallery?
2. Have you done your homework *yet*?
3. This is the fourth time you've *asked* me the same question.

4. I've just *taken* this book from the library.
5. I've *met* him only once.
6. He *has* never got a bad mark.
7. Has Mary written the letter *yet*?
8. I'm very tired today.
9. I've *had* a hard day today.
10. How many times have you *seen* this film?

## 45.6

## 1 -----

1. I've never been to this shop before.
2. This is the most beautiful melody I've ever heard.
3. Have you had breakfast yet? — No, I'm just going to do it. I've just got up.
4. Why haven't they repaired the car yet?
5. I've called him twice, but he is out (he isn't at home).
6. Have you read papers today? — No, not yet.
7. They've already moved but I haven't visited them yet.
8. Here is your shirt. I've washed it.
9. This is the fifth pair of shoes she has bought this month. — Why does she need so many?
10. How many times have you checked this document? There are very many misprints in it.

## 2 -----

1. Have you ever hitchhiked? — No, I haven't. Have you?
2. Is it the first time you've planted these flowers?
3. I haven't had any rest this summer.
4. You've come at last! Where have you been?
5. This is the hardest work I've ever had to do.
6. What has happened? (What's the matter?) You are so pale!
7. It's not the first time the cat has torn my curtains! — Have you tried punishing it?
8. Why haven't you ever (Why have you never) told me about it?
9. Have you ever been to the north of the country? — Yes, I've been on excursions there several times.
10. It's very late and the children haven't come back (returned) so far. I'm very worried.

**UNIT 46****46.1**

1. I have (haven't) been very busy lately.
2. My Dad has (hasn't) had problems at work recently.
3. My friend has (hasn't) made progress in English lately.
4. My Granny has (hasn't) been ill lately.
5. I have learnt useful things recently. / I haven't learnt any useful things recently.

**46.2**

1. How long has he had a cold?
2. How long has she been in love with him?
3. How long have you known it?
4. How long have they had it?
5. How long has he been on holiday?
6. How long has he been your boss?
7. How long have you heard them?
8. How long have you seen it?
9. How long has she had it?
10. How long has he been at home?

**46.3**

1. I haven't been to the cinema for several months.
2. I haven't travelled by plane since last summer.
3. I haven't seen my classmates since I left school.
4. I haven't written letters for many years.
5. I haven't spoken to Mary since we quarrelled.
6. I haven't given parties for a month.
7. I haven't heard from Tom for the last few days.
8. I haven't gone for a walk since last weekend.
9. I haven't bought flowers for ages.
10. I haven't phoned my friend since Monday.

**46.4**

1. She hasn't taken her temperature since morning.
2. I haven't ridden a bicycle for about ten years.
3. Pete hasn't visited us since May.
4. She has been in London since Saturday.
5. Rachel and Simon have been married for five years.
6. I haven't consulted the doctor for three weeks.
7. We haven't got letters from Tom since autumn.
8. We haven't been to the seaside for two years.
9. We haven't had English classes since our teacher fell ill.
10. He has been in prison since 1980.

**46.5**

1. since
2. for
3. for
4. since
5. for
6. since
7. since
8. for
9. since
10. for
11. for
12. since
13. since
14. since
15. for

**46.6**

1. I *have known* Ben since my childhood.
2. Since when *have you started* to work?
3. George has been the best student since he *entered* the University.
4. The children have changed a lot *lately*.
5. Mr. Brown hasn't been at work *since* last week.

6. Mr. Brown hasn't been at work *for* the last week.
7. How long *have* you *owned* this flat?
8. I *have taken* part in some competitions recently.
9. Alice has been our secretary *for the last several* years.
10. They've been *in* Paris since Tuesday.

## 46.7

- 1** -----
1. I've known Richard for a long time. We've been neighbours for five years already.
  2. I haven't seen you for ages! How are you?
  3. We haven't met since 1986. I'm afraid I won't recognize her.
  4. What countries have you visited lately?
  5. Mrs. Dent is badly ill. She's been in hospital for two weeks already.
  6. I've been very busy in the last few days but now I can have a rest.
  7. I haven't gone to the country since I started working here.
  8. How long have you been friends with Helen? — Oh, since our childhood.
  9. We've been in London for several days already. We've already seen lots of things!
  10. He left in winter and I haven't seen him since.

- 2** -----
1. He has behaved in a very strange way lately. I wonder what has happened.
  2. How long have you had this picture? I haven't seen it before.
  3. Mum has been very nervous since she learnt the news.
  4. This man has been here for half an hour already. Is he waiting for somebody?
  5. Why have you bought so many books lately?
  6. Since when have you lived here?
  7. I haven't asked her for help since we quarrelled.
  8. On Monday the weather got worse and my Grandpa hasn't been out ever since.

9. How many times has he written to you since he left?
10. Frank keeps fit. He hasn't fallen ill for many years.

## UNIT 47

## 47.1

1. They have been arguing and quarrelling for at least an hour.
2. She has been suffering from a headache all day.
3. The children have been playing here for the last two hours.
4. Yes, I've been dieting lately.
5. I've been doing the housework since morning.
6. Not yet, but I've been thinking about the problem since you told me about it.
7. Oh, I'm not sure, I've been listening to it for half an hour ...

## 47.2

1. How long has she been waiting for me?
2. How long have they been watching TV?
3. How long have they been walking there?
4. How long has she been cleaning it?
5. How long has he been doing it?
6. How long has he been having dinner?
7. How long have they been talking?

## 47.3

1. They have been discussing some question for an hour already. Is it really so important?
2. Where is Sam? — He is in the room. He has been doing his homework since he returned from school.
3. Mary has been practising the piano a lot lately. She is having a concert tomorrow.
4. How long have you been learning this poem?
5. The child has been crying since his mother left for work. I don't know what to do.



6. This flower (plant) hasn't grown since the weather changed.
  7. What have you been doing lately?
  8. My brother is in Australia now. He has been travelling for a whole month.
  9. Have you been waiting for me long?  
— No, for about five minutes.
  10. Our neighbours have been shouting at each other all morning. I wonder what the matter is.
  11. Since when have you been working here?
  12. I haven't used this dictionary lately.
  13. Who has been using my dictionary? Why isn't it in its place?
  14. Why have you been making this salad so long? — There are very many ingredients in it.
  15. My sister has been lying in the sun too long, that's why her skin looks so red.
3. — I'm very pleased with our new baby-sitter. — How long has she been working for you?
  4. I've known my neighbours for ages. They are nice people.
  5. Alice has been very absent-minded lately. Do you know what has happened to her?
  6. We haven't spoken to each other since we quarrelled.
  7. Nick has been saving (money) for a new player since he saw the advertisement, but he hasn't saved enough so far.
  8. I've wanted to buy a new computer for a very long time.
  9. Have you taken part in any competitions lately?
  10. My brother has been listening to loud music all day! — And what have you been doing all this time?
  11. He has had this disease since his childhood but he has been getting worse in the last few days.
  12. How many classes have you missed this month?
  13. We've raised this question many times but we haven't discussed it lately.
  14. She has been buying lots of new things since she got married. Her husband is rich.
  15. It seems to me, Dick has been smoking more than usual lately. He has already smoked ten cigarettes since morning.

## UNIT 48

### 48.1

1. has been eating; has she eaten
2. have you been doing; have been revising; have you revised
3. have heard
4. have been painting
5. have cooked
6. have been reading; have read
7. has been having a rest
8. have been walking
9. has made; has been working
10. have known
11. has been; has been raining
12. has your sister been thinking; has she decided

### 48.2

1. This elderly lady has been choosing a present so long! — Hasn't she chosen anything yet?
2. I've been waiting for Frank's call since 3 o'clock but he hasn't called so far.

## UNIT 49

### 49.1

1. -----
  1. hasn't spoken; returned
  2. didn't speak; returned
  3. has been cooking
  4. cooked; had; left
  5. have already bought
  6. already bought
  7. have known
  8. knew

9. did you send
10. have you sent
11. have read
12. read
13. did you stay
14. have you been staying

**2** -----

1. did you sleep; had
2. did you take
3. has spent; refused
4. saw
5. has travelled; got
6. have just passed; did you prepare
7. did he take part
8. did you get; have been looking
9. was
10. got up

**3** -----

1. were
2. have you walked; took; did you walk
3. did your first family party go; was; have improved
4. studied; gave; left; has heard
5. has been telling
6. did she tell
7. composed
8. have you been; Have you been eavesdropping?
9. haven't met
10. did you spend

**49.2**

**1** -----

1. ... and he *didn't tell* me anything about it.
2. I *found* this coin in our garden.
3. It's the first time I've *seen* him.
4. **RIGHT**
5. I *haven't been married* so far.
6. *Did you hear* the bell ringing?
7. **RIGHT**
8. They divorced *long ago*.
9. **RIGHT**
10. **RIGHT**

**2** -----

1. I already *heard* this legend when I was on an excursion in Italy.
2. I've already *been to* this theatre.
3. *Have you had* lunch so far?
4. **RIGHT**
5. He *has been* very friendly since we helped him.
6. It's a week since she *made* a new dress.
7. He *left* by the first train this morning.
8. **RIGHT**
9. **RIGHT**
10. Since when *have you been* his assistant?

**3** -----

1. I've *done* (I've *been doing*) nothing for the last two days.
2. He *won* ten gold medals.
3. **RIGHT**
4. I've *heard* this joke several times.
5. He *has been concealing* the truth from us all this time!
6. How long *have you been growing* flowers?
7. **RIGHT**
8. Why *did you say* it?
9. I *haven't seen* Tom for two years.
10. Everybody *enjoyed* it.

**49.3**

**1** -----

1. I've consulted another doctor today.  
— And what did he advise you?
2. I already was on this excursion two years ago.
3. Who invented the computer?
4. I returned home not long ago.  
— Have you had dinner yet?
5. What did you write about in the composition?
6. There have been no other news about this accident in the last few days.
7. We've been friends for a long time.  
— When did you meet? (When did you get acquainted?)
8. Have you ever been abroad?  
— Yes, I've been there many times. Last year my husband and I went to Italy.

9. Do you know how many battles Napoleon won?
10. How long have you been working here?

**2** -----

1. How long ago did you start working here?
2. How many guests have you invited? — Fifteen. But perhaps not everybody will be able to come.
3. Since my parents left I've been missing them badly.
4. Have you ever heard about this singer? — Yes, I have. She is very famous. I have once heard her concert on the radio. — What did she sing?
5. This is the third bad mark that you've got in English. What's the matter? What did you get it for?
6. How long did you sleep today? — About six hours.
7. It's twelve years since she graduated from the University.
8. It's the most incredible story that has happened to me.
9. They have been arguing for a long time.
10. They quarrelled long ago. — Haven't they made it up yet?

**3** -----

1. Mr. Spark has left. — Where did he go?
2. He thought something over for about half an hour then he dressed quickly and left.
3. How much did you pay for this picture?
4. She has been on holiday since Monday. — What did she take a holiday in autumn for?
5. He used to travel a lot and he has been writing books about various countries since then.
6. Was it the Canadians who invented hockey? (Did the Canadians invent hockey?)
7. I've tried to see this film twice, but each time I fell asleep in the first half an hour. I can't understand why it got the first prize at the contest.
8. Did you come long ago? How long have you been waiting for me?
9. Pete hasn't called me since we met at Kate's birthday party. — But he has been in hospital for more than a month! — Why? What has happened?

10. I've been here for fifteen minutes already. You haven't been late before! — I'm sorry but it's not my fault. I got stuck in a traffic jam.

**UNIT 50****50.1**

1. At this time yesterday I was / wasn't walking in the park.
2. At 8 yesterday my Mother was / wasn't making breakfast.
3. At 1 o'clock yesterday my friends were / weren't having classes at school (at the Institute).
4. At 9 o'clock last night my Dad was / wasn't watching the news program on TV.
5. From 3 till 5 on Sunday I was / wasn't preparing my homework.
6. From 10 till 11 on Saturday my Mum and I were / weren't cleaning the flat.
7. At this time on Tuesday I was / wasn't playing with my younger brother (sister).

**50.2**

1. were driving
2. were talking
3. was always chewing
4. was the music playing
5. was blowing; was drizzling
6. was doing; were sleeping
7. was really enjoying
8. was running; was burning
9. was going
10. was constantly biting
11. was listening; was saying
12. was she wearing
13. Weren't you waiting
14. was playing
15. was leaving

**50.3**

1. Mr. Dowly was coming two days later. The whole family were carefully preparing for his arrival.
2. I woke up at 8 o'clock. Mum was having breakfast at that time and Dad was leaving for work.

3. Where were you at 4 o'clock? — I was walking my dog.
4. It was impossible to talk with him. He was constantly repeating the same thing in different words!
5. The Detective wants to know what we were doing from 8 till 10 last night. — As far as I remember, you were doing crossword puzzles and I was knitting.
6. At this time just two days ago I was skiing in the country!

## UNIT 51

### 51.1

1. hurt; fell
2. saw; was enjoying; sat smiling
3. didn't you open; didn't hear
4. broke; was doing
5. was having; didn't get; did you want; was calling; was coming
6. found; was looking
7. looked; made
8. discussed
9. was always fidgeting; told; stuck
10. were working; had; called
11. knew; was happening
12. didn't mean; was just speaking
13. arrived; was; was playing; were dancing; noticed
14. asked; didn't answer; was tasting
15. did you do; found; called

### 51.2

1. Didn't anybody notice anything? — No, everybody was watching TV and heard nothing suspicious (didn't hear anything suspicious).
2. When the alarm-clock rang he turned it off and got up.
3. All morning he lay in bed doing nothing.
4. I was thinking over our plan when I had a wonderful idea.
5. When we were listening to the news we didn't know yet what it meant.

6. I didn't understand a word. They were talking (speaking) very quickly.
7. While he was speaking everybody was listening to him attentively.
8. It was very noisy in the hall. Our neighbours were celebrating something.
9. When he returned we discussed the plan in detail.
10. He spoke on the phone about three minutes then gave the receiver to me.
11. She was constantly looking in the mirror! It was getting on my nerves more and more!
12. It was getting cold and we returned to town.
13. It doesn't matter what exactly I was doing at 5 o'clock. — But still? — I was having a date.
14. She cried / was crying all night. — And what were you doing at that time? — I sat thinking how to help her.
15. I was so tired that I slept for 10 hours!
16. I saw him at the railway station last. He was looking for something in his bag and was obviously very nervous as he couldn't find what he needed at that moment. — Do you remember what he was wearing?
17. On Saturday the Browns were moving to a new flat and we called to say Good-bye to them.
18. The children were looking forward to the beginning of the party. Everybody was discussing the presents they wanted to get.

## UNIT 52

### 52.1

1. They had studied all the necessary material by the end of the term.
2. By the time he was thirty-five he had visited 12 countries.
3. They had been married for 10 years.
4. The train had already left when I arrived.
5. We hadn't seen each other since 1990.

### 52.2

1. had never been
2. had brought

# UNIT 53

3. hadn't announced
4. had tried
5. had broken
6. had done
7. had been
8. had lied
9. had been
10. had discussed
11. had bought
12. had already escaped
13. had ever got
14. hadn't spoken
15. had achieved
16. had got
17. had just returned
18. had smoked

## 52.3

1. By the end of the month they had spent all their money.
2. By the time she was 28 she had made a wonderful career.
3. When Mike's parents returned his friends had already left.
4. Everything was very interesting for the child. He had never been to the Zoo before.
5. I didn't expect him to come in time. He had been late twice already.
6. It was just the present I had wanted to get for a long time.
7. By the time the rain started (By the time it started raining) they had already repaired the car.
8. He arrived at the station, bought a ticket and called his wife as he had promised.
9. They didn't know what to tell each other. They hadn't met since they divorced.
10. Everything was new for Alice. It was the first time she had been out of town.

# UNIT 53

## 53.1

1. -----
  1. didn't learn; got
  2. got; hadn't learnt

3. had known; got
4. knew; got
5. gave; opened
6. had hardly exchanged; arrived
7. arrived; had already given; were opening; were; was
8. walked
9. saw; was walking
10. had walked; was going; saw

2. -----
  1. had done; was listening
  2. was; was; could
  3. was; had got; could
  4. was; left; was getting
  5. left; had got; saw
  6. made; needed; looked; hadn't forgotten / had made; needed; was looking; hadn't forgotten
  7. forgot; was making; didn't buy; needed
  8. spoke; apologized
  9. apologized; had spoken
  10. met; had come; was asking; recognized; came

3. -----
  1. met; invited
  2. had she shut; rang
  3. called; was buying
  4. met; was; had
  5. had written; was
  6. had the children begun; quarrelled
  7. entered; dropped; had taken
  8. caught; had; had stolen
  9. moved; lived
  10. hurt; was getting; didn't break

4. -----
  1. had scarcely crossed; changed
  2. was; listened; left
  3. did Joan look; had quarrelled
  4. had; went
  5. was; was; knew; had read; had
  6. agreed; had asked; found; had refused
  7. had; were looking; had seen
  8. was; had drunk; came

9. needed; called; called; answered; were you; was sleeping; didn't wake; had taken
10. had spent; was suffering; wanted; went; walked; didn't help; was; had she started; rang; got

### 53.2

- 1** -----
1. It was the first time they *had travelled* by ship.
  2. Hardly *had I turned* around when ...
  3. Though the sun *had come out* it was still snowing.
  4. **RIGHT**
  5. She burnt her tongue when she *was tasting* the soup.
  6. By the time the doctor came the patient *was already dead*.
  7. He *had finished* his book by December last year.
  8. **RIGHT**
  9. When Sue came into the room the baby *had been awake* for a quarter of an hour.
  10. Alice *stayed* with her grandmother for a fortnight and returned home.

- 2** -----
1. **RIGHT**
  2. Charles *was leaving* on Saturday so we came to say good-bye to him.
  3. By the time she *cleaned* the flat she was very tired.
  4. How long *did you stay* in London?
  5. We already *wanted* to call the police when Mr. Thompson brought our children home.
  6. She *forgot* her friend's address and couldn't find the house.
  7. **RIGHT**
  8. Sam *had taken* a shower and was unpacking his things when somebody knocked at the door.
  9. **RIGHT**
  10. What *did you do* when you woke up?

### 53.3

- 1** -----
1. When Kate came we were discussing the news.

2. When we were discussing the news Kate came.
3. When Kate was leaving we were still discussing the news.
4. When Kate left we discussed the news for some more time.
5. When Kate came we discussed the news.
6. By the time Kate came we had already discussed the news.
7. When Kate came we already knew the news.
8. When Kate came we had known that news for a long time.
9. When Kate came we discussed the news and had tea.
10. When Kate came we discussed the news having tea.
11. When Kate came we had already discussed the news and were having tea.
12. Hardly had we discussed the news when Kate came.
13. When Kate came she told us what she had heard about that news.
14. What did you discuss when Kate came?
15. What were you discussing when Kate came?
16. Had you discussed anything by the time Kate came?
17. Did you know anything by the time Kate came?

- 2** -----
1. Hardly had we had dinner when the hostess offered us tea.
  2. By the time she was 30 she had danced all the classical parts and was already a famous ballet dancer.
  3. When she woke up it was already light, morning had come.
  4. The children were very excited. Everybody had read the book and was discussing it.
  5. He felt that somebody was following him but he didn't turn around.
  6. We watched the film for about half an hour. — And then? — Then we turned off the TV set because the film was boring.

## UNIT 54

7. By 5 o'clock she had prepared everything and (had) laid the table.
8. Everything was ready and she was waiting for the guests.
9. It stopped raining and we went for a walk.
10. It hadn't stopped raining when we went for a walk.

### 3

1. She was having a real rest. She hadn't even read a newspaper since her holidays started.
2. He was very happy as he had won first prize in the competition.
3. I was late. The teacher was already explaining a new rule.
4. I was late. The teacher had already explained a new rule and everybody was doing an exercise.
5. When we asked him for help the problem had existed (we had had the problem) for a long time.
6. No sooner had we entered the hall than the light went out and the film started.
7. I had known Maggie for about five years when I met her brother.
8. We were already leaving when he caught up with us and asked us to stay.
9. Was she still working in the garden at that time? — I don't know. I didn't see her.
10. I had warned Dick many times before I finally punished him.

## UNIT 54

### 54.1

1. We had been driving for two hours when the accident happened.
2. After the baby had been crying for almost an hour he finally fell asleep.
3. The man who had been walking in front of me all the way suddenly fell down.
4. Ann had been taking the medicine for several weeks before she really felt better.
5. There was a sweet smell in the room because she had been cooking biscuits all morning.

### 54.2

1. had been watching
2. had the Smallwoods been looking
3. hadn't decided; had been discussing
4. had been working
5. had called
6. had been asking; had asked
7. had been following
8. hadn't eaten
9. had been hiding
10. had put on

### 54.3

1. When Kate came we'd been discussing the news for half an hour already.
2. Was the car waiting for you when the train arrived? — Oh yes, but the driver was very nervous because the train was late and he had been waiting for me for a long time.
3. The children looked cheerful. They had been skiing all morning.
4. She was tired because she had been studying hard since morning. She had learnt half of the necessary material.
5. We had been rehearsing the play for about a month when Jack fell ill. — And how long did you look for another actor? — Just a few days.
6. By the time the firemen arrived, the house had smelt of smoke for a long time.
7. They painted the house for two hours.
8. They had been painting the house for two hours when it suddenly began raining.
9. They painted the house for two hours, but then the rain began and spoilt everything.
10. When they were painting the house, it suddenly began raining.
11. When they had painted the house, it suddenly began raining.
12. They had already painted the house twice when it suddenly began raining.
13. They had painted the house and were having dinner when it suddenly began raining.
14. The house they had been painting so long was burnt down at night.

## UNIT 55

### 55.1

<b>1</b> -----	<b>2</b> -----	<b>3</b> -----
1. 1	1. 2	1. 3
2. 3	2. 1	2. 2
3. 2	3. 2	3. 2
4. 3	4. 2	4. 3
5. 1	5. 3	5. 1
6. 1	6. 3	6. 1
7. 2	7. 1	7. 2
8. 3	8. 2	8. 1
9. 3	9. 1	9. 3
10. 1	10. 1	10. 3

### 55.2

**1** -----  
have been studying; don't know; say; are; know; puzzle; are; don't know; was thinking; read; had died; was; was; knew; interested; gave.

**2** -----  
was waiting; put; knelt; began; were burning; have you been; gave; gave; gave; have you been; is

**3** -----  
had finished; arrived; met; was; hadn't seen; kissed; took; are; smiled; have been; have lost

**4** -----  
have you left; want; looked; didn't understand; looked; are; made; Have you ever painted?; wanted; was; made; said; began; have been going; went; were playing; didn't you tell; preferred; have come; will do; starts; begin; was

**5** -----  
had been; was walking; have never shown; turned; followed; cost; took; were; did Betty have; cried; found; cost; paid; were leaving; cast; had vanished

### 55.3

- 1** -----
1. I used to see him here quite often.
  2. Have you seen him here before? — Yes, I have. — When was he here last?
  3. By the time she was to return the book to the library she hadn't finished it yet. — And what did she do?

4. She watched TV looking through a magazine.
5. Did everybody like the performance?
6. It was the first time she had listened to that opera. — Where did she get the tickets?
7. She had been using that medicine for a month but she didn't feel better.
8. Hardly had they got married when they divorced.
9. Have you ever been to a disco? — Yes, I have. I was there many times when I was a teenager.
10. She had got a letter and was reading it.

- 2** -----
1. Have you been on holiday long?
  2. Were you in hospital long? (Did you stay in hospital long?)
  3. Did you recognize each other at once? — Sure, we had met many times.
  4. Why are you smelling the flower again? — It smells so nice!
  5. She got a terrible headache while she was listening to the lecture.
  6. How long has it been raining? — Since about 12 o'clock.
  7. Tom thinks that even if he brings all of us home, his Mum won't get angry.
  8. Does the program begin at 7 o'clock in the evening?
  9. By the time he was 30 he already had two professions and had changed several jobs.
  10. I haven't gone out since I broke my leg.

- 3** -----
1. They have been discussing this problem for a long time.
  2. They discussed this problem long ago.
  3. This house was ours for 5 years.
  4. This house has been ours for 5 years.
  5. Our neighbours were having a very noisy party and we called the police.
  6. You are always speaking at the top of your voice!
  7. She looked at her watch. It was already late and her son hadn't come back yet.
  8. I haven't been very busy lately and that's why I've been reading a lot.
  9. Until I repair the car we won't go anywhere.
  10. She had a rest for a fortnight and returned to work.



**4** -----

1. The children had done their homework and were playing. They had been playing for about two hours.
2. By the end of the week the police had stopped the investigation though they hadn't found the criminal.
3. She combed her hair and looked in the mirror.
4. We've been looking for our kitten ever since it got lost.
5. Call me in case you have problems.
6. When I was approaching the stop, the passengers were already getting on the bus.
7. I have no idea what my wife was doing at that time. She was out. (She wasn't at home.)
8. Kate planted a flower and put it on the window sill. The next day it died as she had forgotten to water it.
9. The clients wonder when they will get an answer to their question.
10. He used to be the worst student in the group. But now everything has changed.

**5** -----

1. She had read a lot of articles before she found a suitable one.
2. She read a lot of articles and found a suitable one.
3. Mrs. Grace has put on a lot of weight as she has been eating too much in the last few days.
4. I learnt fantastic news the other day.
5. I needed a present for Helen as I was going to her birthday party at the weekend.
6. How did the children behave?
7. I've been thinking over their offer for several days but I haven't made up my mind to accept it yet.
8. You are making this bad mistake again! Why haven't you learnt the rule so far?
9. I was going to tell them about my new job but they already knew everything and were just discussing it when I came. — Who had told them?
10. This is the most difficult decision I've ever made.

**UNIT 56****56.1****1** -----

1. My brother says that I'm always spending hours in the bathroom.
2. Brian says that he has never been to England but he'd like to go there.
3. Rachel tells Tim that he must help her with the shopping today.
4. The teacher tells the student that he (she) wasn't attentive enough.
5. My friends say that they were waiting for me at the cinema at 5 o'clock.

**2** -----

1. I ask my sister if / whether she got bad marks at school.
2. Mary asks her parents if / whether they are going to the country on Saturday.
3. Little Sam wonders if / whether I have brought a new toy for him.
4. Dad asks Lucy if / whether she understands everything in this subject.
5. My friend asks if / whether my brother can really play the violin.

**3** -----

1. Nick's parents wonder how he met Helen.
2. The teacher asks which of the pupils can translate this sentence. (The teacher asks the pupils which of them can translate this sentence.)
3. I ask Ned what Alice's elder brother looks like.
4. Mum asks me where I have been all this time.
5. The man asks the boy why he is crying.

**4** -----

1. Mum advises to call the doctor at once.
2. My husband tells me never to touch this button.
3. The teacher asks the children not to make so much noise.
4. The sick child asks Mum to give him something tasty.
5. I tell my child not to speak to people in such a way.

**56.2**

- 1** -----
1. My doctor advises not to take this medicine.
  2. David says that he has seen this film but he didn't like it.
  3. They wonder what else Mr. Brown said.
  4. Mum asks me to clean my room once a week.
  5. Kate asks if the others know about the changes in the plan.
  6. Mr. Black says that he was going home at that time and saw everything.
  7. My little sister says that she will be a doctor.
  8. The teacher always asks why we are late.
  9. I wonder who is responsible for this work.
  10. Susan asks when your brother was born.

- 2** -----
1. My parents often remind me not to ask strangers for anything.
  2. Mrs. Setliff asks if you are thirsty.
  3. My son says that he needs a computer.
  4. The speaker says that he knows what he is speaking about.
  5. This woman wonders where you used to live.
  6. Our neighbours say that if we don't come to their party they will be hurt.
  7. My brother asks me not to be angry with him.
  8. When we meet he always asks how I am.
  9. My Mum always wonders who I went to the cinema with.
  10. Nick asks if we are free on Saturday night.

**UNIT 57**

**57.1**

- 1** -----
1. She exclaimed that it was a wonderful view.
  2. Ann wondered if I agreed that clothes make the man.
  3. Dick said that his sister starred in the new play.
  4. Mrs. Crow said that her neighbours were vegetarians.
  5. My friend asked what my new house was like.

- 2** -----
1. Mrs. Pitt announced that her daughter was going to have a baby.
  2. I asked why he was looking for a new job.
  3. Pete said that he was taking his final exams the following month.
  4. The old man wondered if I was doing it on purpose.
  5. The teacher asked who was making that awful noise.

- 3** -----
1. The examiner asked how long I had been learning English.
  2. She said that her Mum had never travelled by plane.
  3. Jane complained that she hadn't seen Patsy for ages.
  4. My coach admitted that I had been working really hard lately.
  5. Raymond asked if I had heard the news.

- 4** -----
1. Laura said that it had been a wonderful party.
  2. Mr. Dent said that his son had graduated from Oxford University three years before.
  3. John asked if I had enjoyed my holiday the previous year.
  4. Jane asked where I had been the day before and added that she hadn't been able to find me.
  5. The book said that Einstein invented the theory of relativity.

- 5** -----
1. The boy asked what I (we) had been laughing at when he entered.
  2. The woman said that she hadn't heard anything because the music had been playing quite loudly.
  3. Mrs. Gray said that her daughter had been still sleeping at that time.
  4. Dad asked if I had been playing tennis at 5 as usual.
  5. The taxi driver said that the man had been leaving for St. Petersburg and asked to take him to the station.

- 6** -----
1. Mary promised that she would call me the following day. (Mary promised to call ...)

2. She said that if anything happened to her I would have to look after her children.
3. The lawyer said that he wouldn't help me until I told him all the truth.
4. She complained that they wouldn't have that subject the following year.
5. My Mum wondered if I would stay there long.

**7**

1. The woman insisted that I wouldn't make the child obey if I shouted at him.
2. Mary said that she was so sleepy that she couldn't think clearly then.
3. The police inspector asked me how many times I had got letters from Lady Fox.
4. My mother-in-law asked me who had given me the recipe and added that it was very good.
5. The pupil answered that Paris is the capital of France.
6. Dad told me not to show the dog that I was afraid.
7. Nick asked what I was doing the next day and suggested going for a walk. I said that I could go right away and that I would be ready in five minutes.
8. Mum asked who would stay with the baby while I worked.
9. The girl admitted that she hadn't had such a good time since she fell ill.
10. My brother asked why I had had to get up so early that day.
11. The woman argued that she hadn't been going to steal the pen at all and that she had just been looking at it.
12. The teacher said that Peter I won the war with the Swedes.
13. I asked my boss what he meant because I hadn't quite got him.
14. Joan said that she had been surprised and hadn't known what to say.
15. The teacher complained that I had been wasting time again and hadn't done anything.
16. Mr. Smiley advised me to speak to that young man. He thought that he knew more than he was saying.
17. Diana wondered what I would do if I failed my exam.

18. The principal said angrily to tell him at once whose fault it was.
19. Fred was sorry he hadn't stopped to speak to me the day before. He explained that he had been in a great hurry.
20. Jerry said proudly that his sister was a journalist and had interviewed many famous people.
21. I asked Ann if Tim was her brother or her cousin.
22. Brian wondered what would come of our plan.
23. The lecturer said that Jupiter is the largest planet in the Solar system.
24. Mrs. Barney said that she had paid attention to the boy's behaviour long before and added that she thought it was strange.
25. Our servant said that my sister was sleeping in her room and added that she had asked not to disturb her.

**57.2**

1. The man asked, "What are you doing here so late?"
2. The doctor said, "Don't worry. Your child will be all right."
3. Nick said to his sister, "Turn down the volume of the music. I have a bad headache."
4. Mary said, "I saw Max yesterday."
5. Meeting me in the park my Dad wondered, "How long have you been walking here?"
6. The teacher said, "Charles, if you don't tell me the truth, I'll have to call your parents."
7. My friend wondered, "How do you get on with your mother-in-law?"
8. My Granny said, "Though I have seen these photos hundreds of times, it's a pleasure for me to look them through again."
9. The tennis coach said, "Your brother is too young. He'll be able to join the sports club only next year."
10. Mother asked Kate, "Is this the boy you got acquainted with last year?"

**57.3**

1. say
2. told
3. said
4. have just said

5. tell
6. to tell
7. does he say
8. didn't tell
9. am saying
10. says; say

**57.4**

**1** -----

1. I wondered why there were always so many flowers in her house.
2. Frank asked what I preferred: opera or ballet, and if I often went to the theatre.
3. The secretary answered that Mr. Clark would return only an hour later and advised me not to wait for him.
4. The policemen asked how long Mr. Smithers had been renting the room in our house and what we thought about him.
5. Ned said that he had never spoken to me as it was the first time he had seen me.
6. My friend said that he had returned two days before but he hadn't had time to call before.
7. The guide explained to us that we would be able to get into the museum only after the restoration was over.
8. Mother asked at once what was going on there.
9. The teacher pointed at the map and said that Everest is the highest mountain in the world.
10. The young man explained that he had been working abroad for the last two years.

**2** -----

1. Mother said that she had been sleeping when the telephone rang and she hadn't managed to answer it.
2. I apologized and said that I couldn't speak at that moment (then) and asked to call back later.
3. Mary said that she had been to Italy a year before but if she had a chance she would certainly go there once again.
4. The child said that he was hungry and asked when we would have lunch.
5. He recommended not to follow Mr. Gray's advice as it was not always useful.
6. I wondered if Helen and Pete had been travelling so much and they said they had.

7. Charlie explained what all those questions meant.
8. He said that he was leaving but he promised to come the following week.
9. We asked when the results of the experiment would be known.
10. He was sorry he was late and said that the traffic was heavy and he had got stuck in a traffic jam.
11. She said that she didn't know how it had happened and couldn't say anything.
12. My friends wondered whose child it was and why he was at my place.
13. The pupils answered all together that five times five is twenty-five.
14. Bob warned me not to tell Harold about it even if he threatened me.
15. I asked my brother if he knew how long Jess and Caroline had been married but he answered that he didn't.

**UNIT 58**

**58.1**

**1** -----

1. was; had expected; gave up; found; had made
2. had I entered; came; was; was; had seen; didn't know; was still asking; telling
3. had; would lead; decided
4. was; hadn't warned; had wasted
5. was surprised; rang; had already arrived; wasn't expecting
6. turned out; had been making; had been
7. was looking; had made; was; wanted; had
8. realized; was; didn't use; would regret
9. had; had done; was; had planned
10. hoped; would take; had read; is

**2** -----

1. turned off; had been listening; went; thought; was; turned out; had dialled
2. was; couldn't; was crying
3. liked; had read; seemed; thought; wouldn't like; would remain
4. was enjoying; sounded; had heard; was; didn't know; was

5. was wearing; suited; looked; hadn't seen
6. was having; had been working; rang; changed; didn't want; had hoped; would disturb
7. pointed out; is getting
8. doubted; would do; wanted
9. didn't trust; was; would show; would see; was
10. had; was going on; didn't notice; weren't paying
11. read; built
12. had found; looked; realized; could; didn't throw
13. looked; had expected; was; had imagined; reminded; can
14. began; saw; had always been looking after; were
15. threw away; would come in; was; had been storing

**58.2**

**1** -----  
was; had chosen; chose; seemed; stood

**2** -----  
had given; was supervising; turned on; reduced; sat; knew; enjoyed; came; had; thought; decided; was; could; had made; began; began; was; reminded; progressed; tried; dimmed; sat; tried

**3** -----  
came; went; worked; had; had had; was speaking; had chosen; swung; shook; turned; reduced

**4** -----  
came; turned off; went; came; was; took; changed; joined; had just turned on; announced; left; went; was; was; wandered; listened; was; stopped; said; added; slammed; began; Did you hear; was eating; said; was still going on

**58.3**

1. He understood that if his wife found out what he had done she would never forgive him.
2. Rick had been concealing the truth for so many years that it was difficult for him to confess now. He himself already didn't remember why he hadn't done it at once.
3. He didn't go to the party because he avoided meeting Megan. He didn't want her

- to see how ashamed he was for the fact that he had been rude to her.
4. By the expression of my secretary's face I guessed who was calling her. She was speaking in a low voice so that nobody would understand what she was talking about.
5. Obviously the man didn't understand that everybody was laughing at him as he went on behaving as before.
6. There was something mysterious in the newcomer's name because though it seemed simple to everybody nobody remembered it.
7. The policemen wondered how the criminal had managed to escape from prison and where he had been hiding so long. They were sure that somebody was helping him.
8. The child was crying and Liz couldn't calm him down. It wasn't clear to her what the matter was and she was afraid that she had done something wrong.
9. The only thing everybody was talking about was the accident that had happened (had taken place) the day before. People discussed the details trying to guess what the consequences would be.
10. Mr. Deal was sure that when people read his book he would certainly become famous and popular.
11. Chris was surprised that nobody was meeting him as he had informed about the day of his arrival long before.
12. Everybody realized what Mrs. Cartright meant but pretended that everything was all right and nothing strange was happening (was going on).
13. The programme was quite interesting. I learnt, for example, that in 1666 the Great Fire destroyed two thirds of London.
14. Rachel wrote to us about everything she had found out and now we had an idea who had been doing what before her arrival and also what was going on in the house at that time.
15. It was impossible to believe that such a quiet and friendly man was in fact a rascal because of whom so many people had died.

## UNIT 59

### 59.1

1. Nick *says* that it's time to go.
2. Michael wondered what my brother *looked* like.
3. My Dad says that he *will* help me.
4. The children said that *they* were ready for the competition.
5. The man said that he *had seen* the accident.
6. The teacher said that if we *didn't* study hard we would have problems at the exam.
7. Myra asked why *I had* lied to her.
8. Laura said *to me (told me)* that her brother was coming to see her.
9. Mother told Maude *to clean* her room.
10. My little son was very surprised when he read that the cuckoo *lays* its eggs in other birds' nests.
11. It turned out that everybody had learnt about it long *before*.
12. I asked who was looking after his garden while he *was* in hospital.
13. He said his neighbours would return *the* next week.
14. Roger asked me *not to touch* that picture.
15. My parents wondered why I hadn't called *the day before*.

### 59.2

**1** -----  
 have taken; Did you have; was; did you say; asked; said; had been; is; was; told; had got; asked; stayed; was; left; was going; don't have; got on; had come; bought; got out; took; was driving; loved; had been saving; was; told; had fixed; repaired; was; stopped; go; offered; went; stopped; was; said; had taken; was doing; was; had; moved on; don't know; didn't want; washed; got; came up; were; worked.

**2** -----  
 did; would stop; thought; would make; are; knew; would break down; stuck; saw; were all lunching; was; noticed; was drinking; was shaking; was; came; made; thought; pretended; was; had ever tasted; was; got; would never have; took; offered; told; would have; told; was expecting;

fancied; didn't have; took; had made up; found; hadn't touched; would make; is; swear; got; saw; knew; had been; had gone; was actually panting; finished; is; imagined; had happened; said.

### 59.3

**1** -----  
 One day Jimmy ran away from home when his father and step-mother had beaten him again. He didn't know where he was going. Finally he found himself in a street he had never been to before. He got frightened and started to cry. He sat in the street for quite a long time. It was already getting dark when two boys came up to him and asked what had happened and why he was crying. At first Jimmy was afraid of them as it was the first time he had seen them. But then he told them his story. They felt sorry for Jimmy. They realized that the boy wouldn't survive if they left him alone. The boys told Jimmy not to cry and promised to help him.

**2** -----  
 It turned out that Mr. Hopkins was a robber and he had been using Jimmy for his crimes all that time. Jimmy had been thinking what to do since he realized it. He remembered that a friend in need is a friend indeed and went to Rip. Rip was afraid that when Jimmy came to the police policemen would arrest him as he had taken part in many robberies by that time and policemen knew that somebody helped Hopkins. The boys sat thinking what to do when Rip's master came and asked what they were doing there so late.

**3** -----  
 Mrs. Winkship and her niece Martha couldn't help crying when Jimmy was telling them how he had been living and what he had been doing all that time. They decided that the boy would stay with them until they found a way out.

Several days passed and Martha remembered that Uncle Belcher had said once that he needed an assistant. She didn't know for sure what he did but she thought that Jimmy who had gone through so much would cope with any job.

At first Uncle Belcher didn't want to take Jimmy. He said the boy was too big but the women persuaded him to take Jimmy. They couldn't even imagine where they were really sending the boy and what would happen to him there.

**UNIT 60****60.1**

- 1** -----
1. This dish is loved by everybody.
  2. Has all the necessary information been collected?
  3. Such an ugly picture will never be bought.
  4. This criminal was caught a year ago.
  5. A patient was being examined when I came.
  6. The children were frightened by the noise.
  7. All the money had been spent by the end of our vacation.
  8. Will prices be raised again?
  9. New flowers are being grown by our neighbours this year.
  10. This word is used in several meanings.

- 2** -----
1. What was said about the exam?
  2. No way out has been found yet.
  3. Why was the truth concealed?
  4. My brother's car is still being repaired.
  5. It turned out that a new show had been organized by Mary.
  6. Such important documents won't be left at the office.
  7. How many times has the mincer been used since it was bought?
  8. Did you know that you were being watched?
  9. Something is broken every time the dishes are washed by my daughter.
  10. The children weren't made to help her in the garden.

**60.2**

- 1** -----
1. The new theatre hasn't been built yet, has it?
  2. When will your book be published?
  3. Such cards are usually sent on birthdays.
  4. The same melody was being played when I returned from work.
  5. Were your things packed in time?  
— Yes, they were, thank you.
  6. The house was in perfect order. Everything had been put in its place, the floor had been cleaned and the curtains had been washed.

7. Whose report is being discussed now?
8. Nick hasn't been seen for quite a long time.
9. Fruit is eaten before meals.
10. We got to the theatre as the tickets had been booked long before.

- 2** -----
1. Be quiet! Important news is being reported.
  2. How long has this flat been redecorated?
  3. It was said specially for you.
  4. He won't be cured if he doesn't go to hospital.
  5. This cake is cooked easily.
  6. It didn't seem to me! — But were you really being followed?
  7. Not a minute was wasted. All the necessary preparations were made.
  8. The car isn't being painted. It's already being dried.
  9. Had the name been chosen by the time the child was born?
  10. I was afraid that the mistake would be noticed all the same.

**UNIT 61****61.1**

- 1** -----
1. The ring was sold to some lady yesterday.
  2. Our new English teacher was introduced to us by the principal.
  3. Haven't all the most important details been agreed on yet?
  4. We'll certainly be shown her new picture. Her new picture will certainly be shown to us.
  5. It is reported that a dangerous criminal is missing.
  6. Was anything new explained to you by the teacher at the lesson?
  7. Even a birthday card wasn't sent to me by her! I wasn't even sent a birthday card by her!
  8. By 5 o'clock the winner hadn't been announced by the committee yet.

9. These recommendations are always given to students by Professor Brand. Students are always given these recommendations by Professor Brand.
10. His jokes are never laughed at because they aren't funny.

**2** -----

1. Don't disturb him. A very important letter is being dictated by him to his secretary.
2. The accident was being described by her to passers-by when the police arrived.
3. I have been waited for for a quarter of an hour already.
4. What is being looked for?
5. I was offered help by a stranger when I fell down in the street. Help was offered to me by a stranger when I fell down in the street.
6. When was this book written?
7. He speaks in such a low voice that he is never listened to.
8. A new car is being bought by Mr. Brown.
9. Every woman is pleased when she is paid a compliment. Every woman is pleased when a compliment is paid to her.
10. Nothing new has been bought lately.

**61.2**

**1** -----

1. Just an extract from his new novel was read to me but I got interested at once.
2. His reports are always listened to with great attention.
3. Was it explained to you how to get to the theatre?
4. Has the telegram been sent to him yet? Has he been sent a telegram yet?
5. Why had this fact been mentioned twice by the end of the conversation?
6. Our tests are being looked through now. — And when will the marks be announced?
7. I was promised that my suggestion would be thought over.
8. The task was repeated to the pupils several times but some of them still didn't understand it.
9. What film was shown to the children yesterday? What film were the children shown yesterday?
10. It's reported that the visit will be paid at the beginning of the month.

**2** -----

1. When I came my favourite song was being sung on the radio.
2. Are you sure that you were told all the truth? Are you sure that all the truth was told to you?
3. Is this the musical that is being so much spoken about now?
4. How did you like the party you had been invited to by the Smiths?
5. Who was this doctor recommended to you by?
6. What is this book devoted to?
7. Neither advantages nor disadvantages of this method were explained to us.
8. Do you know what has been laughed at so long?
9. The news was reported to the president at once.
10. Where was he being waited for at that time?

**UNIT 62**

**62.1**

**1** -----

1. It is *being* tuned now.
2. When *will the picture be* finished?
3. **RIGHT**
4. The plan we agreed on looked perfect.
5. It was recommended to them to call the police.
6. The documents are being looked through.
7. **RIGHT**
8. **RIGHT**
9. Who was the book written *by*?
10. The message was written *with* a pencil.

**2** -----

1. The question *has been discussed* for two hours already.
2. What *was being explained* to you when the principal entered?
3. He was seen *to leave* the building at 8 o'clock.
4. **RIGHT**
5. She *was told* to go home at once.



6. This event has been much *spoken about* lately.
7. **RIGHT**
8. **RIGHT**
9. *New shoes were bought for the child* yesterday.
10. *A good-night tale is always read to the children* by their Granny.

**62.2**

- 1** -----
1. is being redecorated
  2. isn't finished
  3. hadn't been solved; had been discussed
  4. Why hasn't this information been ever used?
  5. aren't worn
  6. won't be paid any attention to
  7. was being listened to
  8. wasn't introduced
  9. are given
  10. was devoted; had been killed

- 2** -----
1. has been offered
  2. hadn't been considered; would be informed
  3. is being rehearsed; have been invited
  4. had been made fun of
  5. had been mentioned
  6. were checked; would be found
  7. have been kept
  8. has been studied; is being done
  9. has been talked about
  10. would be looked after; had been promised

**62.3**

- 1** -----
1. If we are taught another foreign language next year, I'll choose English. It is spoken in many countries.
  2. Who told you that he had been robbed? He was badly beaten but nothing was stolen.
  3. I switched on the TV set. Some old film was being shown.
  4. It turned out that he hadn't been invited to the party, as his telephone number hadn't been found.

5. What was given to you as a birthday present? — Nothing. I haven't been congratulated so far.
6. It was explained to us that this sad event was never discussed in the family and that's why our questions wouldn't be answered.
7. Your dress is being ironed. Will you wait a minute, please?
8. It seems to me this is a trifle incident. Why do you think it will be spoken about?
9. Instructions were just dictated to me. — Wasn't it explained to you what it was all for?
10. Nick wondered what day the meeting had been put off and why he hadn't been told about it.

- 2** -----
1. When will the next speaker be listened to? — I don't know. He hasn't come yet. He is being waited for by everybody.
  2. I've never been offered anything like this before. I don't know what to do.
  3. Nobody will believe you. You'll be just laughed at.
  4. Nothing is repeated twice at her lessons. Pupils understand her explanations very well.
  5. Why have the documents been looked through so long? Is anything wrong?
  6. Why can't you understand such a simple thing? How many times has it been explained to you?
  7. If she is promised defence by the police she'll say who the crime was committed by.
  8. What was recommended to you by the doctor?
  9. By that time five patients had been operated on.
  10. The letter was written in a hurry, that's why it was difficult to read it.

- 3** -----
1. You'll be told when your car will be sold. You'll be sent a letter.
  2. Though Mr. Smith had been described to me I couldn't recognize him until we were introduced to each other.
  3. Has our flight been announced yet?

4. It was clear that such a beautiful thing would be bought very soon. Any money would be paid for it.
5. I didn't get whose name was being mentioned. I just guessed that somebody was being sent for.
6. Our help was received with gratitude but actually it wasn't needed.
7. He should be given time to think. Such decisions can't be taken at once.
8. Everything had been arranged long before the meeting. Why was the plan suddenly changed?
9. If the injection isn't made within an hour, the patient may die.
10. Don't enter! A rehearsal is being held.

## UNIT 63

### 63.1

1. wouldn't behave
2. came
3. would join
4. wouldn't fall
5. could
6. were
7. would feel
8. didn't have
9. didn't interrupt
10. wouldn't sell

### 63.2

1. wouldn't have quarrelled
2. hadn't thrown away
3. hadn't had
4. wouldn't have lost
5. would have helped
6. had met
7. had called
8. wouldn't have refused
9. would have explained
10. had asked

### 63.3

1. If he loved her she wouldn't be unhappy.
2. If he hadn't told her he loved her she wouldn't have been so happy.

3. If the weather hadn't been so bad Glen wouldn't have stayed at home.
4. If Molly knew him well she would trust him.
5. If he had known the subject well he would have argued.
6. If the coffee had been tasty I would have drunk it.
7. The child wouldn't have learned the poem quickly if it hadn't been so easy.
8. I wouldn't read much if I didn't want to know much.
9. I wouldn't have taken the cat home if it hadn't looked unhappy.
10. I would watch TV if I had much time.

### 63.4

1. If I were you I would have gone there.
2. If I were you I wouldn't have eaten much.
3. If I were you I would learn English.
4. If I were you I wouldn't always trust people.
5. If I were you I wouldn't have told him the truth.
6. If I were you I would have bought that bag.
7. If I were you I wouldn't smoke much.
8. If I were you I would eat a lot of fruit.
9. If I were you I would have had a holiday last year.
10. If I were you I wouldn't be angry with him.

### 63.5

- 1** -----
1. If Richard weren't nervous he wouldn't have shouted at his child.
2. If Bill weren't economical he wouldn't have saved so much money.
3. If Bess weren't bad-tempered she wouldn't have quarrelled with her husband.
4. If my chief weren't loyal he wouldn't have given me a day off.
5. If my mother weren't kind she wouldn't have forgiven me.
- 2** -----
1. If Steve had saved enough money he would be able to go on holiday.
2. If Katherine had cleaned her coat she would be able to put it on.

3. If Adam had taken the umbrella he wouldn't be wet through now.
4. If this man hadn't broken into a house he wouldn't be in prison now.
5. If I had bought a bottle of water I wouldn't be thirsty now.

**63.6****1** -----

1. If you had taken the pills you wouldn't feel bad now.
2. If I had cleaned the room yesterday I wouldn't have to do it now.
3. If the film weren't interesting I wouldn't have seen it twice.
4. If he weren't a good lawyer he wouldn't have earned so much money.
5. If he had given up smoking he wouldn't feel bad.
6. If Tom had eaten something he wouldn't be hungry.
7. If you had taken a taxi you wouldn't be late.
8. If I weren't afraid of flying I would have gone there by plane.
9. If my radio-set worked I would have listened to the 7 o'clock news.
10. If the bag weren't cheap I wouldn't have bought it.

**2** -----

1. But for the frost we would go skating.
2. But for the map I wouldn't have found the place.
3. But for his advice I wouldn't know what to do.
4. But for the price I would have bought the car.
5. But for the alarm-clock I wouldn't have woken up.
6. But for his words I wouldn't be upset.

**63.7**

1. If you were late we would leave without you. It's good you came in time.
2. I would have finished the work long ago if he had helped me.
3. I would treat him better if he hadn't told me a lie.

4. But for the fog the flight wouldn't have been delayed.
5. If I were you I would discuss this question with everybody.
6. If Steve were an honest man he would have told us the truth long ago.
7. If he were a more experienced driver there would have been no accident.
8. If I were you I would have phoned him long ago.
9. If I had money I would lend you the necessary sum.
10. If he had felt like staying with us last week he would have stayed.
11. I would visit Jane today if I hadn't fallen ill.
12. But for him I wouldn't know what is going on.
13. If I were you I wouldn't make the child learn this poem by heart.
14. If the book weren't so expensive I would have bought it yesterday.
15. What would you do if you missed the train?
16. He said that if his leg didn't hurt he would play with us.
17. I didn't apologize. What would you have done if you were me?
18. If you had bought a ticket you wouldn't have been fined.
19. Your child wouldn't have got a bad mark if you paid more attention to him.
20. Molly said that if she were Tim she would wear a hat.
21. If you had bought those shoes you could put them on now.
22. If I were her I would try to do it again.
23. The child said that if Mother had bought him that toy he would be happy.
24. I would go for a swim if it weren't so cold.
25. If I were you I wouldn't allow the child cross the street alone.
26. I wouldn't have been late yesterday if I hadn't been caught in a traffic jam.
27. But for the heat the flowers wouldn't have faded.
28. If I were you I would have given up smoking long ago and jogged in the morning.

29. Mr. Cain would have given you promotion long ago if you were more responsible.
30. I wouldn't be in a rush if they weren't waiting for me.
31. If you hadn't missed the lecture you wouldn't be asking me about it now.
32. She said she would sit for little Chris if she weren't ill.
33. What would you do if you had a million dollars?
34. But for his arrival I would meet you today.

## UNIT 64

### 64.1

1. He wishes I weren't often late for work.
2. I wish it were ( was) my car.
3. I wish the day weren't (wasn't) gloomy.
4. I wish I had a house of my own.
5. Paul wishes his wife were a good cook.
6. He wishes he spoke German better.

### 64.2

1. I wish I hadn't bought it.
2. I wish he hadn't got married.
3. I wish I had heard him singing.
4. I wish she had been pleased with my work.
5. I wish I hadn't eaten too much for dinner.
6. He wishes he had spelt it correctly.

### 64.3

1. I wish I had left it open.
2. I wish I went on holiday.
3. I wish he had told me the truth.
4. I wish it were cheaper.
5. I wish it had been a sunny day.
6. I wish I had let it grow.
7. I wish I had drunk coffee.
8. I wish the train was fast.
9. I wish we were friends.
10. I wish I had been active.

### 64.4

1. I wish my friend and I didn't quarrel so often.
2. I wish he hadn't changed that much.

3. I wish I knew his address.
4. I wish the police had caught the criminals.
5. I wish you didn't spend so much money. / I wish you wouldn't spend so much money.
6. I wish I could drive.
7. I wish somebody had met him at the airport.
8. I wish the car hadn't broken down. We could go there by car.
9. I wish he wouldn't change his plans so often. / I wish he didn't change his plans so often.
10. I wish you had revised this rule.

## UNIT 65

### 65.1

1. If I had a talent for writing I would write a book.
2. If I had more money I would buy a new car.
3. If I were in love I would get married.
4. If I saw a hat (that) I like I would buy it.
5. If my friend were in trouble I would help him.

### 65.2

1. If they had asked me to stay I would have left all the same.
2. If yesterday had been my birthday I would have given a party.
3. If he had asked me to dinner last week I would have gone.
4. If he had told me a lie yesterday I would have believed him.
5. If they had arrived on Tuesday I would have met them.

### 65.3

1. If I had found treasure I wouldn't have handed it over to the authorities.
2. If I had inherited a large sum of money I wouldn't have bought a house.
3. If I were Mrs. Brown I wouldn't always tell people what to do.
4. If I had gone to the seaside I would have swum in the sea.
5. If I were you I would go in for sports.

6. If I had written a novel I wouldn't have burnt it.
7. If I were him I wouldn't miss lectures often.
8. If I had bought a picture I wouldn't have sold it.
9. If I were him I would try to understand the problem.
10. If I were him I wouldn't smoke much.

**65.4****1** -----

1. I wish I had more friends.
2. I wish I could afford a new TV-set.
3. I wish she took better care of it.
4. I wish I could take pictures.
5. I wish I were a model.

**2** -----

1. I wish I had gone to another restaurant.
2. I wish I hadn't ridden so fast.
3. I wish I hadn't switched on the TV-set.
4. I wish I had chosen another colour.
5. I wish I had learnt the rules better.
6. I wish I had washed it yesterday.

**65.5**

1. But for the rain I would go for a walk.
2. If I had an umbrella I wouldn't be wet.
3. If I were rich I would have stopped at the Ritz.
4. I wish I knew something about gardening.
5. I wish it weren't noisy.
6. I wish the bus wasn't overcrowded.
7. But for the mistake the team would have won.
8. If he hadn't failed the exam he wouldn't be upset.
9. If it hadn't been slippery he wouldn't have broken his leg.
10. I wish I had won the first prize.
11. But for the headache I wouldn't have left the party early.
12. I wish I trusted him.
13. If it were dark we wouldn't find the way.
14. But for the heavy snowfall the flight wouldn't have been cancelled.
15. If he learned all rules he wouldn't make mistakes.

**65.6**

1. I wish I knew his name.
2. If I were hungry I would eat something.
3. You wouldn't feel so bad now if you hadn't eaten so much for dinner.
4. If you had been more careful yesterday you wouldn't be in trouble today.
5. I wish it weren't winter.
6. If I knew where he is I would tell you.
7. But for him she wouldn't have found a job.
8. I would play tennis if I liked it.
9. If I were you I would try to understand him.
10. I wish I could swim.
11. If he read more he would know more.
12. He said that if he knew this song he would sing it now.
13. But for your help I would be in trouble.
14. I wish he weren't (wasn't) so lazy.
15. If she liked dogs she would have bought one long ago.
16. If you didn't smoke here I wouldn't have a headache.
17. If I were you I would have bought that tie.
18. I wish they hadn't lost the game.
19. If he didn't know French he wouldn't have translated this story.
20. She said that if it were easy she would do it.
21. I wish you hadn't thrown away the letter.
22. I wish she had read this book.
23. If he lived not far from me I would have visited him long ago.
24. I wish you hadn't been angry with me.
25. But for his help I would be late.
26. If he weren't bad-tempered today, he wouldn't be so rude.
27. I wish you revised all the rules for the exam.
28. I wish I didn't have to wake up so early every day.
29. I wish you had asked him to join the excursion.
30. But for his advice I wouldn't have known what to do.
31. But for the strong frost we could go skiing.
32. I would have met him yesterday if I hadn't been held up at work.

33. Where would you have gone last summer if you had had a chance?
34. What would you do if you were the headmaster?
35. If I were him I wouldn't have considered the question yesterday.
36. If you had bought a present last week, you wouldn't be nervous now.
37. She would have asked you yesterday if she weren't so shy.
38. I wish you hadn't missed so many classes. Your answer would have been better.
39. I wish he were more persistent. He would have had his way long ago.
40. What would you do if you had more time?

## UNIT 66

### 66.1

1. Can (could) you close the window
2. You can't park here
3. I could ride a bicycle
4. She can't swim
5. couldn't phone him
6. can't trust
7. couldn't wait for us
8. Can you understand him

### 66.2

1. can't, will be able to (I'll be able to)
2. couldn't, can
3. been able to
4. couldn't, will be able to (I'll be able to)
5. be able to
6. can
7. will you be able to
8. Could you

### 66.3

1. I didn't manage to pass the exam because I wasn't prepared well enough.
2. The children couldn't break the vase. They weren't at home.
3. I couldn't argue with her.
4. I tried not to argue with her but didn't manage to.

5. Could you do it without my help?
6. How did you manage to do it without my help?
7. The children didn't manage to repeat the word because it was difficult.
8. I could repeat everything again but I didn't want to.

### 66.4

1. Can (could) I ask you a question?
2. I won't be able to come in time.
3. Ted wasn't able to read (didn't manage to read) the word.
4. I couldn't believe it.
5. The child must be able to eat himself.
6. She hasn't been able to work well lately.
7. I will be able to buy (can buy) something for supper.
8. She can't ride.
9. Who will be able to answer (can answer) the question?
10. I have never been able to argue with him.
11. How long have you been able to swim?
12. How did you manage to fix the radio?

## UNIT 67

### 67.1

1. Can she have done the work yet?
2. Can he have said it yesterday?
3. Can they be at home?
4. Can you have read it yet?
5. Can they have been living here long?
6. Can she have typed it yet?
7. Can he be sleeping now?
8. Can he know it?
9. Can he have been watching TV all this time?
10. Can he be walking now?
11. Can he have failed to learn the poem?
12. Can she have failed to give you a present for your birthday?

### 67.2

1. They can't have bought this house.
2. He can't have failed you last week.

## UNIT 68

3. He can't be a good student.
4. She can't have gone by plane last year.
5. He can't be telling a lie now.
6. It can't have rained half an hour ago.
7. They can't be playing football now.
8. She can't have been working the whole day.
9. They can't have been swimming all this time.
10. He can't be washing his car.
11. He can't have failed to give up smoking.
12. She can't have failed to understand you.

### 67.3

1. Can he be talking on the phone?
2. She can't have failed to come yesterday.
3. The child can't be hungry.
4. Can she have been making dinner for three hours already?
5. Can he have failed to tell you about it?
6. The Swifts can't have failed to send a letter.
7. Can he have been playing the piano since morning?
8. They can't have been deciding the question since morning.
9. Can they still be taking exams?
10. Can Steve have been riding his bicycle since morning?
11. Caroline can't have lost the match.
12. He can't have failed to help you.
13. Can Sharon still be washing the windows?
14. Mr. Clark can't have missed the meeting.
15. Don and Kate can't have failed to get married.

## UNIT 68

### 68.1

1. must
2. had to
3. must
4. will have to
5. had to
6. must

7. had to
8. will have to
9. had to
10. will have to

### 68.2

1. was to
2. must
3. must
4. had to
5. are to
6. was to
7. had to
8. mustn't
9. had to
10. didn't have to
11. was
12. am I to
13. had to
14. mustn't
15. will have to

### 68.3

1. He is to come in ten minutes.
2. I think you must do all the work yourself.
3. I'll have to meet him again.
4. She insisted and I had to agree.
5. As we had agreed he was to call for me in the evening.
6. You mustn't pay attention to his remarks. He is an impolite person.
7. He looked unhappy and Deborah had to forgive him.
8. What am I to do when the guests come?
9. He phoned us and we had to invite him.
10. This is a wonderful story. You must publish it.
11. Now he is to be in California and in a week in Colorado.
12. You mustn't laugh at what he is saying. It's sensible.
13. "Where am I to put the suitcase?" the taxi driver asked Miss Cain.
14. Will you have to go there again?
15. You mustn't wash this sweater in hot water.

## UNIT 69

### 69.1

1. She must have looked ill.
2. He must be tired.
3. She must have been riding a bicycle for two hours.
4. Barbara must be talking on the phone.
5. He must have been studying malaria for ten years.
6. He must have failed to do his homework yesterday.
7. They must be watching TV.
8. They must be in love.
9. She must be making dinner.
10. She must have been working in the garden since morning.

### 69.2

#### 1 -----

1. We had to take a taxi.
2. He must have taken a taxi.
3. He must have told them the truth.
4. He had to tell them the truth.
5. He had to sell his car.
6. He must have sold his car.
7. He is unlikely to come to the party.
8. They are unlikely to win tomorrow.
9. He is likely to write to you.
10. The weather is likely to change.
11. They are likely to go on holiday one of these days.
12. She is unlikely to invite Steve.

#### 2 -----

1. He must have never been here before.
2. She must have asked him for help.
3. We must have been waiting for a bus for half an hour.
4. They are unlikely to buy such an expensive house.
5. You must be very lazy.
6. He must have failed to buy her a present.
7. They have quarrelled. She must be crying somewhere.

8. He must have missed the train.
9. He must have failed to see this film.
10. The children must be having dinner now.
11. I had to make a speech.
12. They are likely to go to Africa.
13. They must have been quarrelling for an hour already.
14. She must have failed to make a good dinner.
15. Steve must be writing exercises.

## UNIT 70

### 70.1

1. May I have a day off?
2. May I speak to the pilot?
3. May I use the telephone?
4. May I have your car?
5. May I have another room?

### 70.2

1. You may not take dogs to the restaurant.
2. Children under 7 may not enter unless they are with an adult.
3. Alcoholic drinks may not be sold to people under 18.
4. Students may not smoke in the classrooms.
5. You may not enter wearing a hat.

### 70.3

1. She might have bought something for supper.
2. He might be more polite.
3. They might have painted the fence.
4. He might have helped them.
5. She might be in time.

### 70.4

1. May I ask you a question?
2. If you are on holiday you may go to Australia.
3. You might have bought flowers yesterday.
4. You might get up earlier.
5. You may leave your luggage here.
6. You may not speak loudly here.



7. May I wait for Nick at the office?
8. You may keep the book till Tuesday.
9. You might have warned me beforehand.
10. You might do it more quickly.
11. You may stay with us when you come to London.
12. You might ask us to come in.

## UNIT 71

### 71.1

1. She may have quarrelled with her boyfriend.
2. He may be busy.
3. He may have been waiting for you all this time.
4. She may have missed the train.
5. He may have been staying with his friends all this time.
6. He may not have had dinner.
7. They may be dancing now.
8. Tom may have invited them.
9. He may be having a rest now.
10. She may have been working in the library since morning.

### 71.2

1. She may be angry.
2. Can he be washing his car?
3. Can he have returned?
4. He may be playing tennis.
5. He may have been working in the garden all this time.
6. Can she have been wearing these shoes for five years?
7. He may have misunderstood you.
8. Can he have lost his job?
9. Can she be badly ill?
10. They may have been discussing the plan since morning.

### 71.3

1. He may have bought a new watch.
2. She may have been doing the shopping all this time.
3. She may have found a new job.

4. Can they have moved?
5. The children may be bathing.
6. He may have lost his wallet.
7. She may not want to see you.
8. He may not know where to go.
9. Can anything have happened?
10. The teacher may be looking through the papers now.
11. He may not have explained to her what to do.
12. Can he have failed to explain to her what to do?

## UNIT 72

### 72.1

- 1** -----
1. You needn't worry.
  2. You needn't repeat anything.
  3. You needn't remember it.
  4. He needn't take pills.
  5. You needn't wash it.

- 2** -----
1. You needn't have translated it.
  2. You needn't have gone by taxi.
  3. You needn't have booked a room at this hotel.
  4. You needn't have bought one.
  5. You needn't have phoned him.

### 72.2

1. You needn't ask him for help. I'll help you.
2. She needn't pay the bill. Her husband has paid it.
3. The weather is wonderful. You needn't have taken the umbrella.
4. I didn't have to meet with him because Ann had agreed to do it for me.
5. The child needn't put on his hat. It's warm.
6. I'll have to wake up early tomorrow. I'm to meet him at 7.
7. You needn't have bought a bicycle. I could give you mine.
8. I didn't have to explain anything to him. He knew everything himself.

9. You needn't have looked for a taxi. I've called a taxi.
10. I'll have to take the tourists to the hotel.
11. David said that I needn't have brought those books. He has them.
12. You needn't do the shopping. I've bought everything.
13. Shall we write any exercises? — No, you needn't. Learn the words.
14. She will have to wait.
15. Shall I lock the door? — No, you needn't. Father will come soon.
16. You needn't have taken so many warm clothes. It's warm here in October.
17. I didn't have to take a lot of warm clothes because I knew it was warm there in October.

## UNIT 73

### 73.1

1. should help
2. should revise
3. shouldn't believe
4. shouldn't miss
5. should paint
6. shouldn't return
7. shouldn't use
8. should forgive

### 73.2

1. should have taken
2. shouldn't have read
3. should have gone
4. shouldn't have listened
5. should have got married
6. shouldn't have eaten
7. should have come
8. should have seen

### 73.3

1. You shouldn't have bought these shoes.
2. You should have waited for him.

3. We should be more attentive to him.
4. You shouldn't have been late.
5. You shouldn't ask them for money.
6. You shouldn't have left so early.
7. We should have chosen another present.
8. I didn't have to go to the meeting because it had been cancelled.
9. You needn't have come. The meeting has been cancelled.
10. You shouldn't have come. Nobody expected you.
11. You shouldn't have kept them waiting.
12. You should have explained everything to him.
13. You shouldn't argue with him.
14. You should work more.
15. You shouldn't laugh at him.

## UNIT 74

### 74.1

1. -----
1. was to
  2. had to
  3. must
  4. Will you be able
  5. Will have to
  6. mustn't
  7. have to
  8. may
  9. shouldn't
  10. needn't
  11. didn't manage to
  12. could
  13. shouldn't
  14. needn't
  15. shouldn't
  16. needn't
  17. may not
  18. needn't
  19. were to
  20. had to

**2** -----

1. must have had
2. can't have gone
3. can have forgotten
4. may be on holiday, may be skiing
5. must have melted
6. might have decided
7. can't be staying
8. can he be studying
9. should have painted
10. needn't have bothered
11. may have got acquainted
12. can't have quarrelled
13. must have arrived
14. must have got hurt
15. had to make
16. needn't have come
17. didn't have to make
18. shouldn't have left
19. can't have left
20. shouldn't have quarrelled

**74.2****1** -----

1. I think I should go to bed early.
2. Paris is a beautiful city. You must see it.
3. You must water the plants twice a week.
4. You shouldn't be so talkative.
5. You must be a very romantic man.
6. He can't be serious about it.
7. You should have been more friendly.
8. Can he have many friends?
9. She may be unemployed.
10. You might get on better with him.

**2** -----

1. You might have come home earlier.
2. They may be on holiday.
3. Can they have been in love all this time?
4. He must have been taking a shower for half an hour.
5. It may have been raining since morning there.
6. He can't have changed so much.
7. Can he have been looking for a job all this time?

8. He can't be skiing now.
9. You must be joking.
10. She may be taking a bath.

**3** -----

1. Can he have been playing football all this time?
2. You'll have to take a bus.
3. I have to wear glasses.
4. May I introduce my wife to you?
5. Can I help you?
6. You are to translate 20 pages by the evening.
7. You must obey the police.
8. He was to play against Swift.
9. I needn't take much luggage.
10. He must have been working on the farm since childhood.

**4** -----

1. He must have failed to warn her.
2. He won't be able to climb the tree.
3. You will have to bring a ladder.
4. You should forget about it.
5. You can't leave him now.
6. You may not enter without knocking.
7. They can't have failed to warn him.
8. I'm afraid I won't be able to help you.
9. May I use this box?
10. Shall I give you a lift? — No, you needn't.

**5** -----

1. I would like to be able to cook as well as you do.
2. Will you help me, please.
3. He may have tried to get in touch with you but didn't manage to.
4. He must have been hurt by your words.
5. He must have been doing his best all this time to achieve success.
6. You are unlikely to talk to him in the near future.
7. He can't have failed to attend the conference.
8. Can he have been involved in this robbery?
9. He may be playing computer games.
10. They can't have been talking all this time.

## UNIT 75

### 75.1

1. Sleeping on the floor is so uncomfortable.
2. Meeting old friends is great.
3. Speaking in a loud voice is impolite.
4. Thinking is always useful.
5. Cleaning the flat is boring.
6. Teaching is interesting.
7. Travelling to other countries is exciting.
8. Giving advice is simple.
9. Taking other people's advice is not always clever.
10. Having much luggage is inconvenient.
11. Following the man wasn't easy.
12. Speaking before a large audience made him nervous.

### 75.2

1. I avoid being visited by strangers.
2. I remember being asked for help.
3. He was tired of being asked questions.
4. I'm looking forward to being shown the place.
5. The manager objects to the work being done now.
6. They insist on being let in.
7. I avoid being asked for help.
8. Do you mind being told how to do it?
9. Why are you afraid of being asked questions?
10. Why do you object to being shown the letter?
11. I don't mind being left alone.
12. He objected to being forced to do it.

### 75.3

1. We don't mind her coming later.
2. I don't mind helping him.
3. I don't mind their visiting me.
4. I don't mind your turning on the volume.
5. Do you mind my turning on the TV-set?
6. Do you mind switching off the light?
7. Do you mind her talking to him?

8. Do you mind my telling them about the plan?
9. I don't mind her taking the papers.
10. I don't mind their playing together.

## UNIT 76

### 76.1

1. I am fond of swimming in cold water.
2. It's no use speaking to him.
3. He has a habit of interrupting people.
4. He denies seeing Jack on Friday.
5. I can't imagine living without music.
6. He keeps talking.
7. Imagine living in a big house.
8. The man denies stealing anything.
9. She keeps repeating the same thing.
10. It's no use phoning him.
11. I enjoy playing tennis on Sunday.
12. I avoid meeting him.
13. There are many ways of learning a foreign language.
14. He is in the habit of listening to loud music.

### 76.2

1. On saying that she turned red.
2. Read the instruction before opening the box.
3. On coming to London I decided to call on my friend.
4. After taking a decision he felt better.
5. On entering the room he greeted everybody.
6. Read the book before seeing the film.
7. On leaving the house he took a taxi.
8. After doing his morning exercises he took a shower.
9. On arriving at the airport he checked in.
10. On buying a ticket he got on the train.

### 76.3

1. ... she couldn't help shouting.
2. ... I couldn't help being angry.

3. ... I can't help telling him the truth.
4. ... she couldn't help smiling.
5. ... she couldn't help tearing it.
6. ... couldn't help putting it on at once.
7. ... couldn't help buying it.

**76.4**

1. It needs repairing
2. It needs discussing.
3. It needs dry cleaning.
4. They need drying.
5. It needs doing.
6. It needs finishing.

**76.5**

1. The book is worth reading.
2. The film is worth seeing.
3. The question is worth discussing.
4. The subject is worth studying.
5. The country is worth visiting.

**76.6**

1. He left without saying anything.
2. She entered without greeting anybody.
3. He sat down without asking permission.
4. She spoke without turning her head.
5. He listened carefully without interrupting me.
6. The man sat down without taking off his hat.
7. It's difficult to sit for a long time without moving.
8. The child played with his toys without paying attention to what was going on.

**76.7**

1. Steve dreams of having a house in the country.
2. I insist on phoning him at once.
3. What's the use of going there?
4. I'm fond of eating at restaurants.
5. We are looking forward to meeting him.
6. Mark is incapable of hurting the child.
7. I've given up riding my bike in the park.
8. I don't object to going by plane.

9. Susan is tired of staying here.
10. Barbara is fond of playing tennis.

**76.8**

1. He went on translating the text.
2. He went on driving.
3. He went on speaking.
4. I wouldn't like to go on arguing.
5. He went on swimming.

**76.9**

1. He is used to reading in bed.
2. They are used to eating late.
3. Jack is used to entering the room without knocking.
4. He is used to looking up all words in a dictionary.
5. Winifred is used to telling lies.

**76.10****1** -----

1. Being happy is very good.
2. I don't mind (I don't object to) being criticized.
3. He is busy talking on the phone.
4. She avoids meeting me.
5. The child is looking forward to going to the Zoo.
6. Why do you insist on her returning?
7. He went on writing without looking at us.
8. I'm fond of playing tennis.
9. This information needs checking.
10. There are different ways of explaining to him that he is wrong.

**2** -----

1. I don't feel like going out.
2. On coming home he rang his parents at once.
3. Unfortunately he is incapable of remembering so many words at once.
4. Can she have given up dancing?
5. He took these papers without asking permission.
6. Speaking to him is very interesting.

7. I object to being spoken to like this.
8. What's the use of discussing it now?
9. I'm looking forward to being introduced to this man.
10. This programme is worth seeing.

**3** -----

1. I'm not used to being told what to do.
2. His manner of eating annoys everybody.
3. I don't mind (don't object to) his phoning me.
4. I'm tired of her being displeased with everything.
5. He denies going there.
6. He left the hall without waiting for the performance to end.
7. He has achieved a lot by working hard.
8. I'm fond of listening to music.
9. He has given up looking for a job in this town.
10. The grass needs cutting.

**4** -----

1. Are you interested in getting this job?
2. Before using this fan read the instruction.
3. The burglars got into the house by breaking the window.
4. I'm used to living in a big city.
5. I'm afraid of her doing it in any case.
6. Do you mind (object to) our joining you?
7. She insisted on paying for the purchases.
8. Do you feel like moving to another place?
9. It's no use worrying now.
10. It's not worth taking a taxi.

**UNIT 77**

**77.1**

**1** -----

1. She seems to have completed the work.
2. They appear to know nothing.
3. She claims to have seen him yesterday.
4. The child pretends to be sleeping.

5. Jack pretends to have understood the task very well.
6. He appears to be very clever.
7. He claims to be able to speak English.
8. You seem to have had your hair cut.
9. She claims to have lost the papers.
10. They seem to be listening to music.

**2** -----

1. He pretends to be working hard.
2. She seems to be a good manager.
3. It appeared to be a funny story.
4. He seems to be telling the truth.
5. She claims to have sold it for fifty pounds.
6. The letters seem to have been signed.
7. Everybody appeared to be ready.
8. The boy pretended to be crying.
9. The book seems to be translated into almost all languages.
10. They claim not to understand anything.

**77.2**

**1** -----

1. to stay
2. to do
3. spend
4. to skate
5. go
6. to help
7. go
8. to visit
9. to come
10. have a look

**2** -----

1. to smoke
2. help
3. clean
4. to get
5. go
6. to learn
7. to work
8. to visit
9. not to answer
10. to pay

## UNIT 78

### 78.1

1. There are a lot of things for you to wash.
2. This is an interesting film for a child to see.
3. This is an interesting subject to study.
4. They had a lot of things to discuss.
5. Judy was the last to learn about it.
6. There are other facts to prove this theory.
7. There is some news for you to know.
8. Frank was the first to tell his father the pleasant news.
9. He has a friend to ask for advice.
10. There are some papers to type.
11. I have some money to invest.
12. This is the material to revise.
13. He was the second to get to the finishing line.
14. These are the things for him to repair.

### 78.2

1. The weather is too bad for us to go to the country.
2. The article is too difficult for him to translate.
3. The day is too hot to stay in town.
4. The dress is too expensive to wear every day.
5. The mountain is too high for you to climb.

### 78.3

1. The rule was difficult enough for the child to understand.
2. The car is expensive enough for me to buy.
3. The house is small enough for such a big family to live in.
4. The shoes are tight enough for the child to wear.
5. The passage is difficult enough to learn by heart.

### 78.4

1. I must have my watch (clock) repaired (fixed).
2. She must have her overcoat cleaned.

3. He was the first to arrive.
4. She was the last to do the work.
5. She has had a new dress made.
6. He must have this article translated but he doesn't know any German.
7. It was the third question for us to decide.
8. I must have my boots polished.
9. Have you had your hair cut?
10. Has she had her jacket cleaned?
11. When did the Smiths have their house redecorated?
12. Have you had a new dress made yet?

## UNIT 79

### 79.1

1. to do
2. to living
3. to explain
4. shouting
5. to talk
6. having
7. to send
8. to drinking
9. to speak
10. speaking
11. to show
12. to read
13. to open
14. chewing
15. to drive

### 79.2

1. asking
2. to pick up
3. talking
4. to meet
5. taking
6. to go
7. to pay attention
8. ignoring
9. punishing

10. working
11. to wait
12. to tell
13. to explain
14. to eat
15. staying in bed

### 79.3

1. I used to drink a lot of coffee but now I don't.
2. Don't forget to switch off the light when you are leaving.
3. I remember paying this bill.
4. I tried to get him on the phone yesterday but I failed. Try doing it in the evening.
5. I'm used to reading newspapers in the morning.
6. You won't regret having a rest there.
7. The lecturer doesn't allow missing classes.
8. The teacher doesn't allow the children to miss classes.
9. He stopped to read the announcement.
10. Stop whispering.

## UNIT 80

### 80.1

1. The man sitting at the window is waiting for you.
2. Being a rich man he could buy the car.
3. Being ill she had to stay at home.
4. Being proud of her son she often spoke about him.
5. What is the name of the man talking to Jack?
6. Being late he took a taxi.
7. The crying child looked unhappy.
8. At last I found the missing page.
9. Being interested in the subject he read a lot of books about it.

### 80.2

1. He took the broken camera and threw it away.
2. He was looking at the pictures drawn by the child.

3. The forgotten thing was fresh in her memory.
4. They are looking for some hidden treasure.
5. The lit lanterns showed them the way.
6. The shot bird fell down.
7. He likes to wear worn-out clothes.
8. He saw a note written in a hurry.
9. He looked through the composition written by the child.

### 80.3

1. Having left the luggage at the airport I went to the restaurant.
2. Not having found the necessary papers he felt angry.
3. Not having read the book he couldn't discuss it.
4. Not having taken a decision they turned to him for help.
5. Having made dinner she decided to have a rest.
6. Not having bought tickets he couldn't join them.
7. Having broken his car he had to go by bus.
8. Having finished the article he went to bed.
9. Having given up smoking he felt better.

### 80.4

1. Not having been introduced to the other guests he felt a stranger.
2. Being looked at she felt confused.
3. Having been taught good manners he was admired by everybody.
4. The clothes sold here are expensive.
5. The broken cup was of no use.
6. Not having been asked to come in he felt hurt.
7. Having been kept without water for a long time the flowers faded.
8. Being reconstructed the house was empty.
9. Not having been told the truth he didn't know how to act.



## UNIT 81

### 81.1

1. you to open
2. him to do the shopping
3. them to arrive
4. her to smile
5. him to behave

### 81.2

1. him come in
2. him tell the truth
3. me read
4. him learn
5. her translate

### 81.3

1. him jogging
2. them playing
3. her shivering
4. them laughing
5. her leaving

### 81.4

1. him enter
2. him say
3. her take
4. him throw
5. something fall down

### 81.5

1. I heard him playing the piano.
2. Have you ever heard how he plays the violin?
3. I hear James has passed his last exam.
4. Have you ever seen how she holds a pen?
5. I saw her writing something.
6. The mother saw that there was something wrong with her son.
7. I saw him take something from the table.
8. We heard him shout something to us.

## UNIT 82

### 82.1

- 1** -----
1. I'm looking forward to going to the theatre.
  2. Jane saw Paul buy some flowers.
  3. I don't mind waiting for you.
  4. I remember turning off the light when I was leaving.
  5. I'm capable of earning my own living.
  6. I saw him crossing the street at the red light.
  7. I forgot to remind him of the meeting.
  8. I enjoy having dinners in a restaurant.
  9. Try to avoid making him angry.
  10. Did you hear the child reading well?

- 2** -----
1. You can't make an omelette without breaking eggs.
  2. Imagine staying at an expensive hotel.
  3. I heard him open the door and come into the room.
  4. I know it to be a nice place to have a rest.
  5. The play is worth seeing.
  6. I don't feel like going to the disco.
  7. Make him answer the question.
  8. It's no use advising him anything.
  9. I couldn't help overhearing what you said.
  10. I noticed her pick up something and put it into her pocket.
  11. I advised him to apply for the job.
  12. I've arranged for you to meet the president.
  13. He doesn't seem to have recovered after the illness.
  14. Do you remember locking the door?
  15. I heard the bell ringing.

### 82.2

- 1** -----
1. to come
  2. to leave
  3. to take
  4. **RIGHT**

5. to park
6. **RIGHT**
7. to receive
8. to show, to do
9. to pay, to pay
10. working

**2** -----

1. **RIGHT**
2. keeping
3. go
4. **RIGHT**
5. beating
6. walking, go
7. to go
8. being robbed
9. have
10. **RIGHT**

**3** -----

1. spending, living
2. arguing, of seeing
3. **RIGHT**
4. remembering
5. working
6. to come, **RIGHT**
7. to call, to do
8. arriving, to find
9. cleaning, take
10. paying

**82.3**

**1** -----

1. I want you to wait for me after classes.
2. I didn't expect him to forget about your birthday.
3. He refused to have a smoke because he had given up smoking.
4. The baby-sitter had told the children to play in the yard and sat watching them playing.
5. I saw the sun rising.
6. Stop shouting. I forbid you to shout.
7. I heard them speaking English.

8. I hear you speak English.
9. I couldn't help asking him to stay.
10. The teacher made the boy do the exercise again.

**2** -----

1. He felt the doctor touch the injured leg.
2. I watched Mike trying to teach the child to skate.
3. She wants the guests to come in time.
4. I heard a car pass.
5. I saw that he didn't feel well.
6. I don't allow smoking here. I'm tired of reminding you about it.
7. I saw how you looked at him.
8. He made me get up early.
9. At last she has given up telling me what to do.
10. I don't let the child walk alone.

**3** -----

1. He seems to be a good specialist. I advise you to hire him.
2. I'm used to living alone.
3. Everybody knew him to be a good doctor.
4. The car needs washing. Don't forget to do it.
5. I expect him to understand our problems.
6. She can't afford to stay here long.
7. The children were looking forward to going to the seaside.
8. I noticed Jack hit Bill.
9. He likes laughing at other people.
10. I didn't like George's manner of speaking to the client.
11. There are different ways of making a child be polite.
12. We saw her leave the room.
13. Stop worrying. I've arranged for you to see a good doctor.
14. I heard him asking this question.
15. I insist on your refusing their idea.

## UNIT 83

### 83.1

1. They are still sitting at the table.
2. They are still discussing it.
3. He hasn't gone to bed yet.
4. He hasn't caught any fish yet.
5. He is still playing computer games.
6. He hasn't sold it yet.

### 83.2

1. She has already gone for a walk.
2. He is still collecting information.
3. They have already left.
4. She has already done the washing up.
5. He isn't still thinking.
6. He has already fallen down.

### 83.3

1. Have they bought a new house yet? They haven't bought a new house yet.
2. Have the children built a house yet? They haven't built a house yet.
3. Has the painter finished the picture yet? He hasn't finished the picture yet.
4. Has the baby fallen asleep yet? The baby hasn't fallen asleep yet.
5. Has winter begun yet? Winter hasn't begun yet.

### 83.4

1. already
2. yet, still
3. yet, still
4. yet, yet
5. still, already
6. yet, still
7. already, yet
8. still, already

### 83.5

1. She hasn't washed (her face) yet.
2. Michael isn't a pupil yet. He still goes to a kindergarten.

3. The boy is still writing the translation. He hasn't written it yet.
4. Are they still waiting for him? Hasn't he come yet?
5. They have already made it up. They aren't quarrelling any longer.
6. Are you ready already?! — Yes, I'm ready.
7. Have you painted the house yet? — Not yet. We are still painting it.
8. Is he at home yet? — No, he is still working.
9. He is still unemployed. He hasn't found a job yet.
10. He has already written the test but he is still doing the checking up.

## UNIT 84

### 84.1

- a)** -----
1. Margaret can also drive a car.
  2. They also live in a new house.
  3. They are also very nice people.
  4. Steve has also spent a lot of money.
  5. There are also some letters for him.

- b)** -----
1. They aren't friends either.
  2. I don't like pop music either.
  3. The Bones haven't moved to a new flat either.
  4. You shouldn't ask him about it either.
  5. I didn't plant any trees last year either.

### 84.2

1. also
2. either
3. too
4. either
5. also
6. too
7. either
8. either

**84.3**

1. Neither will Kate.
2. So is Mrs. Black's child.
3. So does Clare.
4. Neither have his friends.
5. So did the Wests.
6. Neither am I.
7. So has my husband.
8. So will he.
9. Neither can David.
10. Neither did we.
11. So were we.
12. Neither can I.

**84.4**

1. We don't know the truth either.
2. I don't know this man. Neither does my friend.
3. They will also be glad. (They will be glad too.)
4. I have to get up early. — So do we.
5. This bag is expensive. — So is that one.
6. My child also finished school last year. (My child finished school last year too.)
7. I was born in Moscow. — So were my parents.
8. I've been here since morning. — So has she.
9. Diana has never met him either.
10. My parents weren't at home at 5 o'clock yesterday. — Neither were mine.
11. We didn't ask him for help either.
12. I can't understand this sentence. — Neither can my sister.

## ПРИЛОЖЕНИЕ

Infinitive	Past Simple	Participle II	
be	was, were	been	быть
bear	bore	born	выносить ( <i>трудности</i> )
beat	beat	beaten	бить
become	became	become	становиться
begin	began	begun	начинать
bite	bit	bitten	кусать
blow	blew	blown	дуть
break	broke	broken	ломать
bring	brought	brought	приносить
build	built	built	строить
burn	burnt	burnt	гореть
burst	burst	burst	взрываться
buy	bought	bought	покупать
can	could		мочь
catch	caught	caught	ловить
choose	chose	chosen	выбирать
come	came	come	приходить
cost	cost	cost	стоить
cut	cut	cut	резать
deal	dealt	dealt	иметь дело
dig	dug	dug	копать
do	did	done	делать
draw	drew	drawn	рисовать
dream	dreamt (dreamed)	dreamt (dreamed)	мечтать, видеть сон
drink	drank	drunk	пить
drive	drove	driven	водить машину
eat	ate	eaten	есть
fall	fell	fallen	падать
feed	fed	fed	кормить
feel	felt	felt	чувствовать
fight	fought	fought	драться
find	found	found	находить

Infinitive	Past Simple	Participle II	
fly	flew	flown	летать
forbid	forbade	forbidden	запрещать
forget	forgot	forgotten	забывать
forgive	forgave	forgiven	прощать
freeze	froze	frozen	замерзать
get	got	got	доставать, получать
give	gave	given	давать
go	went	gone	идти
grow	grew	grown	расти
hang	hung	hung	висеть, вешать
have	had	had	иметь
hear	heard	heard	слышать
hide	hid	hidden	прятать
hit	hit	hit	ударить
hold	held	held	держать
hurt	hurt	hurt	обидеть
keep	kept	kept	хранить
know	knew	known	знать
lay	laid	laid	положить
lead	led	led	вести
learn	learnt (learned)	learnt (learned)	выучить, узнать
leave	left	left	оставить
lend	lent	lent	одолжить
let	let	let	разрешать
lie	lay	lain	лежать
light	lit	lit	зажигать
lose	lost	lost	терять
make	made	made	делать
mean	meant	meant	значить
meet	met	met	встречать
pay	paid	paid	платить
put	put	put	положить

Infinitive	Past Simple	Participle II	
read	read	read	читать
ride	rode	ridden	ехать на лошади
ring	rang	rung	звонить
rise	rose	risen	вставать
run	ran	run	бегать
say	said	said	сказать
see	saw	seen	видеть
seek	sought	sought	искать
sell	sold	sold	продавать
send	sent	sent	посылать
sew	sewed	sewn	шить
shake	shook	shaken	трясти
shine	shone	shone	сиять
shoot	shot	shot	стрелять
show	showed	shown	показывать
shut	shut	shut	закрывать
sing	sang	sung	петь
sit	sat	sat	сидеть
sleep	slept	slept	спать
smell	smelt (smelled)	smelt (smelled)	пахнуть
speak	spoke	spoken	разговаривать
spell	spelt spelled	spelt spelled	произносить по буквам
spend	spent	spent	тратить
spill	spilt	spilt	проливать
split	split	split	расщеплять
spoil	spoilt (spoiled)	spoilt (spoiled)	испортить
spread	spread	spread	распространить(ся)
spring	sprang	sprung	прыгать
stand	stood	stood	стоять
steal	stole	stolen	украсть
stick	stuck	stuck	застрять

Infinitive	Past Simple	Participle II	
sting	stung	stung	ужалить
strike	struck	struck	ударить
swear	swore	sworn	клясться
sweep	swept	swept	подметать
swim	swam	swum	плавать
take	took	taken	взять
teach	taught	taught	обучать
tear	tore	torn	рвать
tell	told	told	сказать
think	thought	thought	думать
throw	threw	thrown	бросать
understand	understood	understood	понимать
wake	woke	woken	будить
wear	wore	worn	носить одежду
win	won	won	выигрывать
write	wrote	written	писать



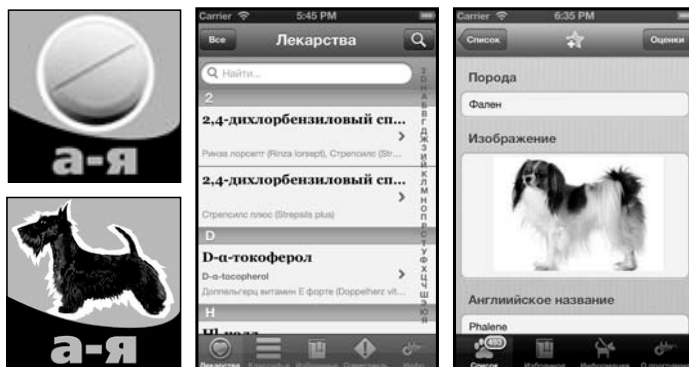


www.bhv.ru

# Приложения от издательства BHV-St.Petersburg для iPhone / iPad

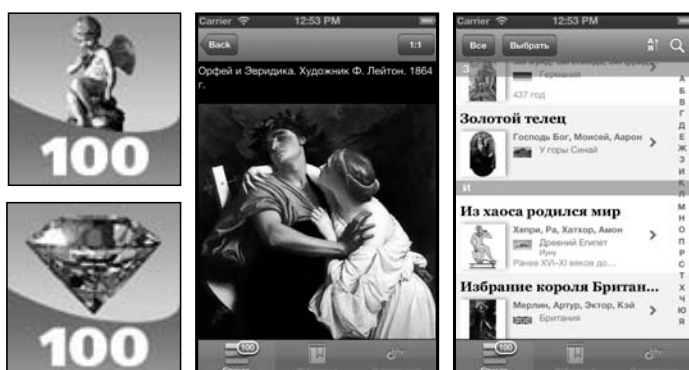
## • Энциклопедии от А до Я

- \* Лекарства
- \* Собаки
- \* Кактусы
- \* Грибы
- \* Динозавры
- \* и др.



## • 100 великих

- \* сокровищ и реликвий
- \* тайн России
- \* чудес света
- \* загадок истории
- \* любовных историй
- \* и др.



## • Путеводители

- \* Париж в кармане
- \* Финляндия в кармане
- \* Финляндия за рулем
- \* и др.



Подробности на сайте  
<http://bhv.ru/apps/>

